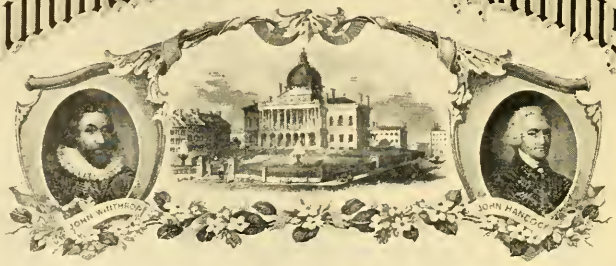
R09015 74213

Commonwealth of Massachusetts



To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting:

Know Ye, that We, by Our Governor, with the advice and consent of Our Council, confiding in the ability, discretion and integrity of

L. VERNON BRIGGS OF BOSTON

do hereby under the provisions of section two of chapter five hundred and four of Our Legislative Acts of the year nineteen hundred and nine, constitute and appoint him to be a member of the STATE BOARD OF INSANITY; to hold said trust for the term of Five Years from the date hereof, and until his successor shall have been appointed and qualified, unless sooner removed therefrom.

Eugene N. Foss

And we do Authorize and Enjoin him, the said

L. VERNON BRIGGS

to execute and perform all the Duties, and he is invested with all the powers and responsibilities, which, by Our Constitution and Laws, do or may pertain to the said office, so long as he shall hold the same by virtue of these Presents.

Witness, His Excellency, — EUGENE N. FOSS — *Our Governor, and Our Great Seal hereunto affixed, at Boston, this* twelfth *day of* March — — *, in the year of Our Lord one thousand nine hundred and* sixteen *, and of the Independence of the United States of America, the one hundred and thirty-seventh.*

By His Excellency the Governor with the advice and consent of the Council.

Frank J. Donahue

Secretary of the Commonwealth.

A VICTORY

FOR

PROGRESS IN MENTAL MEDICINE

DEFEAT OF REACTIONARIES
THE HISTORY OF AN INTRIGUE

PRIVATELY PRINTED

L. VERNON BRIGGS, M.D.

Member of The American Psychiatric Association, The Massachusetts Psychiatric Society, The New England Society of Psychiatry, The National Committee for Mental Hygiene, The Massachusetts Society for Mental Hygiene, Société Médico-Psychologique of France, Société Clinique de Mentale Medicin of Paris, France, The Medico-Psychological Association of Great Britain and Ireland, etc., etc.

BOSTON
WRIGHT & POTTER PRINTING COMPANY
32 DERNE STREET
1924

INTRODUCTION

Early in my professional life I became interested in the care and treatment of the mentally ill. Studying into the history of their care and comparing it with the conditions that I found, I was impressed with the small progress that had been made in many years; in fact, it seemed as if we had, in some ways, gone backward, and were reverting to the treatment accorded to this class in mediæval times. I found that the private hospitals needed attention quite as much as the public ones, many of them being conducted solely for financial profit and with almost no therapeutic treatment. They were nothing more nor less than large boarding houses, the only difference being that the boarders in these "private hospitals" could not leave, but had to submit to the treatment accorded them and to the food given to them. They were prisoners.

I set to work to improve conditions, but found that the proprietors of several of the private institutions of Massachusetts and the Massachusetts State Board of Insanity, which had supervision of the private and State hospitals, resented any suggestions from the outside, and, while giving out plans and propositions for modern care, they were not acting in accordance with what enlightened psychiatrists of the day considered proper and humane treatment. After vainly trying to induce them not merely to talk, but to act, I resorted to the Legislature, and was instrumental in having laws passed bringing both the Board and the private hospitals under control, and compelling them to observe certain

regulations for the more humane care and intelligent treatment of this large class of our citizens who were themselves helpless to correct the evils of abuse and neglect to which they were subject, and whose voices could not legally be heard because they had no legal standing.

The result of the laws passed up to 1913, for which I was responsible, can be found more in detail in two books which I have previously published, viz., "The History of the Boston Psychopathic Hospital" and "Occupation versus Restraint, the History of the Passage of Three Bills through the Massachusetts Legislature." On account of the progress thus made, Governor Eugene N. Foss insisted that I should allow him to appoint me as a member of the State Board of Insanity, and he accordingly sent my name to his Council for confirmation in place of a member whose term had expired and whom he had decided not to reappoint. This man was at the time also chairman of the Republican State Committee. Governor Foss failed to obtain the co-operation of his Council, and so, later, in place of my name, he sent that of Judge Mason, whose appointment was confirmed. Soon after this, the term of the chairman of the Board, Dr. Herbert B. Howard, expired, and Governor Foss again sent my name to his Council, this time to succeed Dr. Howard; but the Council still hesitated to co-operate, and rumors of a derogatory nature concerning me began to be circulated. For a long time I did not know who the men were who were trying to blacken my character. I knew some of the proprietors of private institutions, led by Dr. Walter Channing and his cousin, Dr. Henry R. Stedman, had

tried to prevent the legislation which I had been instrumental in having placed on the statute books to relieve the intolerable condition of our mentally ill. When they failed in their opposition and the laws were passed, leaving the two doctors on record as apparently preferring the intolerable conditions of the past to continue, they were very much angered. I knew that they were opposing my confirmation, but I could not believe that they and their coterie would resort to such despicable methods as they did to eliminate me, until finally one of their number, becoming disgusted and incensed at their "underworld" methods, made a clean breast of all their activities and of his part in them.

I then learned for the first time that they were organized and conspiring against me, and I determined to prove to my own satisfaction the truth of what this member of the coterie had told me, and to use him, not as they had done, to spread lies and false propaganda, but to get at the truth. When they were having secret meetings, working under cover, planning, inventing false stories and spreading them in the most insidious way to bring about my ruin and the disgrace of my family, the least I felt that I could do was to take a personal part, and, unbeknown to them, listen to their vile insinuations. Later, I had the cynical satisfaction of receiving their brazen denials of the very words I had heard them utter with their own lips.

It was a noble act on the part of these men, labeled by the community as "gentlemen," to endeavor to blacken the character of a man who was devoting his life to a humane and just cause! They evidently thought only of their own desires and purposes, and, failing to find any skeleton in my cupboard or anything

in my life that they could use against me, some of these "cultivated minds" thought out and resorted to schemes of the highest persecutory refinement, invented and circulated stories of the lowest order, while others, who lacked the courage or were not quite so brazen, resorted to innuendoes — darts almost as poisonous when used with the skill which education and which an established position in the community make possible.

From mouth to mouth, and to the ears of the Governor's Council, there traveled false insinuations detrimental to my character and of such a serious nature that, if believed, they could not fail to prejudice any man against me. These men even went so far as to employ a young lawyer as a detective in an effort to obtain damaging reports against my reputation and character. This I learned directly from my friends whom the detective interviewed, and who kept me informed of his activities, which brought not one bit of satisfaction to those who sought to bring about my ruin. When confronted with the stories which they had circulated regarding me, they retreated and denied any knowledge of them whatsoever, though I had in my possession absolute proof of their vicious scheme.

When it appeared that Dr. Howard could not secure his reappointment and that Governor Foss was about to nominate a physician as distasteful to them as I, but for different reasons, they began to urge the appointment of Dr. George Tuttle of McLean Asylum. And as a part of this plan, they conceived a plot which appeared to them very clever and might have been successful had I not been aware of its formation. It was to invite me to become a member of the newly organized Mental Hygiene Society, of which Dr.

Tuttle was also a member, after which, if I accepted the invitation, the Society was to pass a unanimous vote favoring Dr. Tuttle for the vacancy on the Board, and I would be forced to join in the vote or it would "look bad" for me. They also plotted to remove me from the Boston Dispensary where I was President of the Medical Staff.

That they failed in their purpose to discredit me was not due to a change in their methods or because their consciences troubled them, but because they were caught at their game and because the methods they used disgusted the very men in the Governor's Council whom they sought to influence.

To further his designs against me Dr. Walter Channing, with the assistance of his cousin Dr. Stedman, had built up the organization of selfishly interested doctors. He gave evidence of his part in the conspiracy in many ways.

The following letter is one in which he acknowledges he attended meetings held for the purpose of appointing a new member on the Board of Insanity (Tuttle or some other man, in order to prevent my confirmation):

WALTER CHANNING, M.D.
COR. BOYLSTON STREET AND CHESTNUT HILL AVENUE

BROOKLINE, MASS., January 14, 1913.

CHAS. H. W. FOSTER, Esq., *40 State Street, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR MR. FOSTER: — I take the liberty of writing you this letter at the request of Mr. Simon Swig, who desires an introduction to you as a Trustee of the Massachusetts General Hospital. I have met him recently at meetings held to forward the appointment of a new member of the State Board of Insanity. He was much interested in that matter and worked independently and efficiently.

Yours very truly,

WALTER CHANNING.

This letter also shows Dr. Channing's cordial relations with Simon Swig at this time and his desire to reward Mr. Swig.

One of Dr. Channing's patients, who was also a patient of mine and a relative of Dr. John W. Bartol, a woman who had known Dr. Channing for years and who had been a resident patient at his sanatorium for months at a time, in a letter to me speaks of Dr. Channing as follows:

> The custom of being Supreme *for years* has allowed Dr. Channing to lose sight of the natural wish of *others* to *be* something and to be *acknowledged* so to be. Of course, as to the harsh and hasty things he says, they are *purely* temper, which seems to become ungovernable at times. . . To keep a self-respecting man with him he must change his attitude. . . . When his temper gets in the ascendant he must suffer from it. . . .

Many of the letters in this volume I have not given in full. Some contained references to medical or professional cases. These patients' names and their affairs I have not included and I have left out parts of letters not pertinent.

In some of the letters the reader will see that the authors speak of their letters as confidential or not for publication. These references, made at a time when the newspapers were anxious to give to their readers every word said or written on the subject then engrossing public attention, were not intended to apply to private use such as I now make of them in this privately printed document; and it is no breach of confidence, but rather in justice to the writers, that I have published the entire correspondence.

While underscorings were used by many of the writers of letters and documents in this volume, much of the italicizing is mine, used where I wished to bring

to the attention of the reader certain facts or statements; as, for example, in Dr. Adolf Meyer's report, where he calls the attention of the authorities to the disadvantage of enlarging mental hospitals to even 2,000, and again states that economy should not have full sway without any outlook toward radical improvement in the early care of the patient and the determination of facts which make these persons a burden to the State — in other words, more individualized study and treatment.

One important reason why this book is now privately published is because those in our community, whose habit of thought or mode of life is such that they do not trouble themselves to sift the false from the true, are still willing to believe the false. So it was with my father-in-law, Louis Cabot, and his brother-in-law, Augustus Hemenway, my wife's uncle. Both accepted these manufactured stories as true, and allowed the innuendoes to influence them. Neither sought to learn the truth. The propaganda was used by relatives of my wife to thwart the real purpose of her mother and her father, which was to maintain as sacred the family tradition in leaving their property equally divided between their two children, Mrs. Briggs and Mrs. Bartol. The result of their efforts was to thwart this purpose, with the result that six-sevenths of the inheritance passed to the Bartol family.

Some members of the medical cabal are dead. I am sorry to have to bring out the records of men who are dead, but I waited, year after year, for them to do justice — to publicly refute their false statements and make amends. They did not; and before any more pass on, or I too depart and leave as a heritage the

mysterious insinuations still afloat in certain circles, I feel it only right to my posterity as well as to my loyal friends to clear away while I can the haze, and to bring out the truth in such form as will make a permanent record that may be pointed to or consulted, should insinuations ever be made hereafter to embarrass those I love or those who have had faith and confidence in me, — my wife, my son and his descendants, and my host of friends.

It was Dr. Charles W. Page who wrote to me, under date of December 18, 1912:

> Danvers Hospital management was not popular with the . . . ring for years, and the reason was plain to those who knew the inside history. While I could maintain my self-respect as the superintendent, I continued my work regardless, but the pressure was not agreeable; so when my son broke down in health I gave up the work.
>
> Some of these active ring managers are yet struggling with the conditions and their hopes, but I do not see how they could have become prejudiced against you. . . . Better put the facts in writing as they develop. The story may be of great interest to us some day.

About a year later, after my confirmation, my wife wrote:

> We want to be put right with the people who are our friends and relatives, and also with the friends and relatives of these conspiring doctors. It is not enough that the general public sees the rights of the matter. They are rather against this set of doctors now. I want the people who are now prejudiced against Dr. Briggs to realize that he has been dishonorably treated, that he can wreak his vengeance on the conspirators, and that he is acting magnanimously.

CONTENTS

Chapter PAGE

I. Laws passed by the Massachusetts Legislature. Correspondence with Dr. Adolf Meyer prior to his Investigation. Dr. Meyer's Address before the Governor and Council of Massachusetts, the State Board of Insanity and the Superintendents of the State Institutions for the Insane 1

II. Governor Foss and the State Board of Insanity. — Attendance at Democratic Convention, Baltimore, when Woodrow Wilson was nominated. — Governor Foss sends Dr. Briggs' Name to the Council October 18, 1911. — Letters on his Appointment. — Activities of the Opposition increase. — Petition for Henry P. Field. — Dr. John W. Bartol joins in Opposition. — Confirmation refused November 29, 1911. — The Medical Coterie give up their Fight for H. P. Field as hopeless 46

III. Governor Foss re-elected to Office. — The Governor's Council. — Dr. Fernald's Friendship. — Correspondence. — Extract from Paper on Auto-Intoxication . 76

IV. Governor Foss' Message of March 1, 1912, and Dr. Meyer's Comments on it. — Hearing on the Message March 2, 1912. — Governor Foss sends a Second Message March 27, 1912. — Dr. Southard's Suggestions . 90

V. Legislative Committee of the Massachusetts Medical Society. — Dr. W. N. Bullard on Hospital Superintendents. — Résumé of the Winter's Events as Contained in a Letter to Dr. Meyer. — Contest over Second Appointment. — Petitions to Governor Foss from Physicians, Citizens and Labor Organizations endorsing L. Vernon Briggs. — Interview with Dr. Howard 101

VI. Newspaper Comments. — Governor Foss, November 13, 1912, again sent my Name to the Council, this Time to succeed Dr. Herbert B. Howard 139

Chapter PAGE

VII. Simon Swig becomes an Associate of Drs. Channing, Stedman, Howard, Bradford, Hawes, Hugh Cabot and Others of the Medical Cabal, and is invited to the Meetings held at Dr. Stedman's Office. — He becomes disgusted at the Methods employed by these Men, the Lies Circulated by Some of them and the Deceit used to persuade him to spread Untruths to discredit Dr. Briggs. — On November 27, 1912, the Council, 6 to 2, again voted not to confirm Governor Foss' Appointment of Dr. Briggs. — Newspaper Comments and Letters . . 144

VIII. Lawyer in Rôle of Detective employed by the Medical Cabal to investigate Dr. Briggs in Hancock, N. H. — Dr. Hugh Cabot and Dr. J. W. Bartol confer with Simon Swig. — Judge Mason appointed December 4, 1912, and later confirmed to succeed Henry P. Field. — Labor endorses Dr. Briggs. — The Cabal meet regularly at Dr. Stedman's Office. Simon Swig invited and attends. — Dr. H. R. Stedman and Dr. E. H. Bradford confide in Simon Swig and urge him to work against Dr. Briggs. — Notes taken at the Meeting of the Cabal on December 18, 1912 158

IX. Action of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology. — More Meetings of the Cabal at Dr. Stedman's Office. — Dr. Stedman proposes to use the Massachusetts Mental Hygiene Society to help discredit Dr. Briggs 172

X. Dr. Briggs appointed on the Staff of the Boston Dispensary, 1900. — Establishes Social Service in the Mental Department. — Election of Dr. Briggs unanimous as President of the Medical Staff of the Boston Dispensary in 1913 191

XI. Dinner given to Dr. Briggs at the Copley Plaza Hotel. — Members of the Council present. — Governor Foss sends Dr. Briggs's Name to the Council for the Third Time on March 12, 1913, and the Council unanimously confirm it under a Suspension of Rules the Same Day. — Newspaper Comments and Congratulatory Letters. 210

Chapter PAGE

XII. Confusion of the Medical Cabal following Dr. Briggs' Confirmation. — Dr. W. C. Bailey sent as Emissary to Dr. Briggs from the Managers of the Boston Dispensary. — Dr. Briggs refers the Board to the Medical Staff which elected him. — The Managers acknowledge Defeat by voting Dr. Briggs should serve out his Term of Office as President and Member of the Staff . 221

XIII. Hon. Sherman L. Whipple acts as Counsel for Dr. Briggs. — Dr. Bradford acknowledges being consulted by Boston Dispensary Managers and that he circulated Stories he did not believe 230

XIV. Dr. Howard "astonished." — Dr. Stedman excited and worried and wants to "fix things up." — Contemplates leaving the State to avoid testifying. — Herbert Parker appears as his Counsel. — Dr. Stedman admits in his Testimony at Hearing at the State House that he paid Money and attended Meetings to prevent Dr. Briggs' Appointment 245

XV. Dr. J. B. Blake denies his Statements as heard over the Telephone. — A Southard Episode. — Dr. Fred C. Shattuck's Activities. — He acknowledges contributing Money for a Detective to find Something against the Character of Dr. Briggs. — Detective failed to find Anything. — Dr. Shattuck gets nothing for Money contributed 257

XVI. Dr. John W. Bartol called upon to assist in clearing up False Stories to avoid Resort to Courts of Law. He not only does not help, but denies his Part in the Activity of the Cabal. — Resorts to Failure of Memory. — Dr. Hugh Cabot acknowledges his Activities in Opposition to Dr. Briggs. — Dr. Briggs' Early Relations with Dr. Channing and as Physician to his Family. — Association with Dr. Channing. — Relations broken. — Dr. Channing's Strange Behavior followed by his Active Persecution of Dr. Briggs. — Drs. Bowditch and Goldthwait fail to persuade Dr. Channing to state his Reasons for persecuting Dr. Briggs. — Dr. Channing admits the Secret Meetings of the Cabal to prevent Dr. Briggs' Confirmation and the Employment of a Detective or Agent to gain their Ends . . 263

Chapter PAGE

XVII. Dr. William Sturgis Bigelow a Friend of Dr. Briggs. — Dr. John B. Hawes, 2d, apologizes to Dr. Briggs. — Suits against the Cabal dropped by Dr. Briggs at the Urgent Request of his Friends. — After a Complete Investigation of the Stories circulated by the Cabal, Hon. John Chipman Gray, Dean of Harvard Law School makes his Report 288

APPENDIX. Martin M. Lomasney a Friend of the Mentally Ill. — A Hancock Incident. — Massachusetts Insane. — Report of a Visit to a Private Sanitarium. — Voluntary (?) Patients. — An Example of Restraint used in One Case. — A Physician on a Board of Trustees . 297

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Commission — Governor Foss' Appointment of Dr. Briggs to the State Board of Insanity . . . . . *Frontispiece*

FACING PAGE

Portrait of Gov. Eugene N. Foss 50

Commendatory Letter addressed to Dr. Briggs by Dr. Geo. W. Gay as Secretary of the Massachusetts Medical Society . 60

Cartoon of Lieutenant Governor Frothingham and Senator Lodge by Norman that appeared in the "Boston Post" . . 72

Cards used for Endorsement of Dr. Briggs by 1,700 Physicians and for Dr. Howard by less than 500 Physicians . . . 128

Endorsement of Dr. Briggs by the Boston Typographical Union No. 13 130

Endorsement of Dr. Briggs by the Boston Central Labor Union 136

Endorsement of Dr. Briggs by the Massachusetts Branch of the American Federation of Labor representing 200,000 Members 142

Letter to Dr. Briggs from Simon Swig which shows at the Heading Mr. Swig's Associate Trustees 148

Letter to Dr. Briggs from Dr. Wm. Sturgis Bigelow . . . 154

Letter from Dr. Geo. B. Shattuck to Simon Swig 164

Memorandum written by Dr. Henry R. Stedman which he gave to Simon Swig 166

Letter from Dr. Phillips Combs Knapp to Simon Swig . . . 172

Copy of Vote of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology in Dr. Knapp's Handwriting which he sent to Simon Swig . 174

Appointment of Dr. Briggs as Commissioner of the Alien Insane 188

Letter of Congratulation addressed to Dr. Briggs by Lieut. Gov. David I. Walsh 218

FACING PAGE

Memorandum handed Hon. John N. Cole at a Hearing at the State House April 7, 1914, when he was presiding over a Meeting of the Board of Economy and Efficiency sitting jointly with the Ways and Means Committee and Public Institutions Committee 254

Letter from Dr. Fred C. Shattuck acknowledging his Part in the Opposition to Dr. Briggs 260

Last Letter received by Dr. Briggs from Dr. Walter Channing 280

Letter of Apology addressed to Dr. Briggs by Dr. John B. Hawes, 2d 292

Letter written to Mrs. Lloyd Vernon Briggs by Hon. John C. Gray, Dean of the Harvard University Law School . . . 294

CHAPTER I

Laws passed by the Massachusetts Legislature. — Correspondence with Dr. Adolf Meyer prior to his Investigation. — Dr. Meyer's Address before the Governor and Council of Massachusetts, the State Board of Insanity and the Superintendents of the State Institutions for the Insane

In 1911 the Massachusetts Legislature passed three laws regulating the treatment of the mentally ill in this State. The first provided that persons becoming mentally ill, who would formerly have been taken to jails or other prisons pending their medical examination and commitment, should be sent directly to mental hospitals. The object of the second law was to prevent the abuse of seclusion and restraint in both public and private hospitals and to insure their use only as medical measures, holding the superintendent responsible in each case of their application. The third law required that instruction be given in occupational therapy to interest patients in the State hospitals, to the end that such occupation should, in a great measure, replace restraint and seclusion.

In the passage of these laws I took an active part, incurring the opposition of those who were satisfied with mediæval conditions, and the increased enmity of the men who had opposed these progressive measures through interested motives.

In the latter category was Dr. Walter Channing,[1] the owner of a private institution near Boston, with whom I had once been associated, but who had lately, through jealousy or some unavowed motive, been endeavoring to discredit me. My success in having the three laws passed seemed to add vigor to his efforts, and gave him an opportunity to increase his band of conspirators by enlisting new recruits among those who were directly or indirectly affected by the laws. Stories with no foundation in fact, and which some of these men later acknowledged they had never believed, were industriously circulated.

The investigations which I made during and before the passage of these bills through the Legislature convinced me that the mental hospitals of Massachusetts were, for the most part, as Mr. Barron had said at one of the hearings at the State House, lamentably behind other countries in the care and treatment of patients. It was evident we had been building up our reputation largely on glowing descriptions in the reports and plans as to what we were going to do rather than on demonstrations of actual achievement.

No one realized the true state of affairs better than Dr. Adolf Meyer, himself formerly a member of the staff of the Worcester State Hospital, who had later also held positions in other states, where his scientific work, his medical skill and his vision, had brought him into prominence in the scientific world, so that no one was more admired or more generally accepted in this country as the undisputed authority on questions relating to the mentally ill. Knowing of Dr. Meyer's eminence in this field, it was little wonder that Gov-

[1] See "Occupation *versus* Restraint."

ernor Eugene N. Foss, perplexed by opposing factions, turned to him for advice and urged him to come to Massachusetts, make a study of conditions in our hospitals and report what he found, with recommendations for the future conduct of affairs, so that Massachusetts should lead in the care of the mentally ill, not on paper merely, but in fact.

I was in daily conference with Governor Foss, and in frequent communication by correspondence with Dr. Meyer. His letters were, at the time, confidential, and were treated as such, because of possible political misuse which might be made of them. But the time is now past when any political or personal consideration makes it necessary longer to keep these letters private, and I feel that, on account of their value to psychiatrists and to the history of psychiatry in Massachusetts, they should be made available.

The first letter I now find from Dr. Meyer bearing on his proposed investigation was received in June, 1911. It shows his determination not to do anything which might tend to stir up unkind feeling or be interpreted as in any way unfair.

1012 North Calvert Street,
Baltimore, Maryland.

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — I am getting letters urging me "not to make any report without investigation," and with all kinds of warnings against misjudging the Massachusetts hospitals. Dr. Southard's and Dr. Howard's worry seems to be that I am doing the hospitals great harm. I am writing to Dr. Southard that I have not promised any report, but that these suspicions concerning my judgment and my sincere desire to see the right things develop are very unfair. As things stand, I am in a very unpleasant situation, and would almost wish for a chance to go over the ground, but only if the State Board asks me. There might be a chance to break the deadlock and bring the hospitals into the necessary frame of mind. That is absolutely necessary for the sake of the patients and effective medical work. But it must come from the State Board and with a spirit of collaboration on the part of the hospitals,

if we do not want to make the situation and the patients suffer. I replied to Southard that, if the State Board asks me, I shall make a report to them, and naturally also to the Governor, *because such a report would be public property.* Without being asked by the State Board and the hospital organization, a report would put me under an undesirable taboo.

I wish this to be kept absolutely confidentially. Any move which would not come from the State Board and the hospitals at this juncture would be impossible for me to respond to because of the feeling they have cultivated in Baltimore and among the psychiatrists who write to me. It would not have the good results that are needed and would only be used for forcing the deadlock into a worse state. These men cannot be cleaned out; they *can* be set aright to quite an extent, if confronted with a straightforward report.

If they will enter upon it, much will be won; if not, I feel as if I had done all in my power. I only hope that Governor Foss will not take offence at this policy. You must see that, to a large extent, it is a question of professional collaboration and professional etiquette; and I know I could really do a great deal of good *if* I can have the goodwill of both the hospitals and the Governor. That it will make for the best in all directions I can vouch for. The best thing too, will be to let it be the Board's own choice, without any outside suggestion. If they fail to ask me, they should be urged to make a special report themselves. The main thing is to bring the deadlock to an end.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

WARD'S ISLAND, NEW YORK, N. Y.,
June 18, 1911.

Ten days later came the following letter:

STATE OF NEW YORK, STATE COMMISSION IN LUNACY
PSYCHIATRIC INSTITUTE, WARD'S ISLAND

NEW YORK, June 28, 1911.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Many thanks for your letter. Inasmuch as I have not heard from Dr. Southard or Dr. Howard, I am writing to the latter to-day to bring a plan of study of some conditions to a practical climax. I am asking for the privilege of studying groups of records and patients:

1. Ten consecutive admissions of acute cases, with a view to studying the care pending commitment, transportation, distribution in the hospital, time of examination and the form of treatment and record of medical attentions, and the method of presentation of the facts to the controlling medical officers.

2. Ten consecutive cases that have come to autopsy.

3. A group of specially difficult cases (including a group of restraint cases).

4. The character and fate of recommendations made by the hospital authorities for the improvement of the medical effectiveness.

A further point might possibly be a review of some cases in which complaints have been made. It may, however, be best to omit this latter rather touchy ground.

I am not by any means certain that my request will be accepted. If it is, I shall give it the greater part of the month of August.

Your kind invitation is much appreciated and will not be forgotten if there is any opportunity to be in Massachusetts during August.

Please keep the above confidential. Whatever may come from it I feel must, in the first place, be an encouragement of progress, and that presumes a friendly feeling on the part of those who have to collaborate.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

Dr. Meyer again wrote from New York on July 10:

I expect to leave here on July 28, and give the month of August to this most difficult task. I hope it will be thoroughly worth while, and am sure that it will be most instructive to me and helpful in a constructive policy of progress.

On August 2 he wrote from Worcester, Mass.:

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Your letter was given me on my arrival at the hospital to-day. I shall look into the matters mentioned as far as I can. I had a long talk with Dr. G. He feels keenly that his Board accepted Copp's suggestion concerning Scribner, and equally keenly that the construction of the ward for the excited cases was held up by the Governor. I do not know how much can be done with Dr. Woodward and the other trustees. I shall try to see Dr. W.

The job I have undertaken is not easy, but really interesting. I hope to prove that it takes a closer contact between superintendent and medical work, and not the reverse. The case records give very good openings for discussions. To-morrow I shall spend most of the time on the wards.

Sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

30 CHESTNUT STREET, WORCESTER, MASS.

Continuing his investigation at Worcester, he wrote again on August 7:

I shall probably leave for the Westborough State Hospital to-morrow afternoon and stay about two days, and then go to Dr. Frost's. The Governor

and Council will be here to-morrow, and I prefer not to be put in a position where I might judge matters before having seen the system elsewhere.

The visiting is rather tiring, and, in the main, discouraging. It will be hard to influence a set opinion of men like Dr. Howard and others with their simple scheme of merely enlarging the existing institutions to 2,000 and over. But I shall do what I can, and make them feel that *I shall not conceal my views and my facts, in the right place and at the right time.*

Going on with his study, in spite of discouragements, he next wrote from the Danvers State Hospital:

HATHORNE, MASS.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — When you sent me your kind invitation for Sunday, I had just decided to accept Dr. Frost's offer to take me to Danvers Saturday afternoon. I shall explain to you why I preferred to stick to my decision after I had waived the Wood's Hole visit. Dr. Frost and I had just gone over the Fallon case, and the correspondence with you on that case. I am grateful to you for the letters and statements you sent me. While I have looked into them without direct examination of the persons involved, they sharpened my attention for other observations.

So far, the Boston State Hospital has made the best impression; the Westborough reception ward possibly even more, but its "rosy" side was set off by their "disturbed" wards. Gardner made a very good impression. Worcester needs new blood, and that fundamentally.

I expect to be in Taunton Tuesday and to go to Wood's Hole for a half day, and then to go back to Dr. Frost and to the Waverley institutions. Will you be in town Thursday? I should like to get a preliminary glimpse, and look forward to a quiet Sunday with you, if it is possible and acceptable to you. A message to Taunton for Tuesday will reach me.

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

AUGUST 13, 1911.

In September, having understood that Dr. Meyer's report had been sent to the State Board of Insanity, I suggested to the Governor's secretary that he ask them for a copy of Dr. Meyer's report, and the following astounding reply was received:

STATE BOARD OF INSANITY, September 15, 1911.

Mr. DUDLEY M. HOLMAN, *Secretary to the Governor.*

DEAR SIR: — In yours of September 13 you say: "I am directed by the Governor to say that at the request of your Board, Prof. Adolf Meyer of

Baltimore, Director of Phipps Laboratory, has been engaged in making an examination of the conditions in the institutions under the supervision of your Board within this Commonwealth. The Governor understands that this report is now complete and is at the disposal of your Board, and he respectfully asks that at your earliest convenience you will kindly forward to him a copy of Dr. Meyer's report."

I would say that the Board has not requested or engaged Dr. Meyer for any work, in connection with some paper which he is writing. No report has been made to this office, nor do we expect it until the paper is read before the society for which he is writing it.

Respectfully,
HERBERT B. HOWARD,
Chairman of the Board.

Dr. Meyer's explanation at the end of the following letter was that he had made a request to the Board, the Board had not made the request of him; but Dr. Howard's letter was, nevertheless, evasive.

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, October 2, 1911.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — After a delightful outing in Canada, we have at last come back to work, and your letter of September 26 came into my hands this morning. I can appreciate your impatience, but I am sure you will also appreciate my own situation. It seems to me that it ought not to be so very difficult to handle the problem, after all. Having seen and heard the views on both sides, I would formulate my own views as follows:

There is no way of getting around the fact that the Governor is not in a position to interfere directly with the activity and decisions of the State Board and the boards of trustees of hospitals. The approval or non-approval of salaries is the only issue put in his hands, and the rest is merely the right to ask for reports and to make recommendations. To use the salary issue to hold up issues of policy may already have gone beyond the Governor's province. Notwithstanding this, the Governor has a good opportunity to make himself heard, and his criticisms and suggestions will be influential.

The Governor can define his position without compromising himself. He is confronted with a system which can easily be the best, but owing to the dread of interference by the State Board on the part of the hospitals, and dread of interference from the Governor's Council and the General Court on the part of the State Board and the hospitals, the system is encumbered with many policies which limit the collaboration between hospitals, State Board and the higher authorities.

The Governor evidently took up his office with the conviction that numerous complaints and demands which reached him must have a certain foundation. From what you told me, he asked for explanations of the charges, and he failed to get an adequate reply. Under the circumstances, if I had been Governor, I should have put together the complaints and should have communicated them to the State Board with a request to give a report of the results of the investigation. This refers to complaints concerning patients, concerning policies in the administration of the hospitals, and actions of the Board itself. The Board *must* be acknowledged to be a body of citizens who will collaborate to the best of their capacity, whenever a demand is put upon them in the regular course of business. The next thing to do is to take the report and to formulate additional questions if necessary, and then to submit the material with a digest and recommendations to the body which has the authority to decide on policies and appropriations. How much of this was done I cannot say, but anything that is to be done now must necessarily be based on what has actually been done, or then it must be offered with a frank statement of what *was* done and with what result. It certainly is absolutely necessary to define the reasons of the general holdup of appropriations. Governor Foss said, I think, he merely wanted to get a more convincing explanation with a number of the requests, because he failed to see a clear expression of any policy, and doubted the wisdom of going ahead in the old way. Some of the requests may have been in direct contradiction with the policy published some time ago and in the annual reports. If that could be shown, it would be easy to show how much of that program is and remains dead letter, and how much the policy of the Board has changed and is open to attack.

On this point, *the decision that all institutions should be enlarged to 2,000 patients would be open to attack,* in connection with the Worcester plan. The Governor will have on his side Dr. Quinby, himself, and many alienists, and the simple reasoning that if such accidents occur and the supervision is difficult now, it will be even more so if the responsibility gets more diluted. *Moreover, it becomes questionable whether the mere claim of economy should be allowed to have full sway, without any outlook towards a radical improvement of the early care of the patients, and, when possible, prevention.* The Governor might well point to the great need of provisions in the centers of population, besides the provisions in the larger hospitals in the country, and to the persistent use of jails and sheriffs. The Taunton physicians did not know that the new law was to apply outside of Boston. To take up the investigation of individual cases should be left to the State Board, but if their way of investigation should be insufficient, they would be open to criticism.

If you could advise the Governor to limit himself to declarations along the above lines, it certainly would go a long way towards disarming the general criticism, and towards putting the State Board and the hospitals in their proper light. He had, I think, best abstain from too specific recommendations as to the future. A statement that the present policy might retard developments, and that in his appointments and in his recommendations he would stand for progress and a liberal attitude, ought to be absolutely sufficient without involving him in premature statements.

I am very sorry, indeed, that Dr. Howard should have been given the opportunity to point out an error on the part of Mr. Holman, as long as it was *plainly understood that I visited the institutions at my own request*, although every possible facility was put at my disposal by the State Board and the hospitals. This, no doubt, accounts for the fact that when I saw Dr. Howard for a moment the other day he avoided any mention of my visit, which I can easily understand in case that he should have drawn the inference that I might myself have claimed that the visits to the hospitals were undertaken at the request of the State Board.

I had hoped that the above sketch of what I would do in the place of Governor Foss will meet your needs and those of the Governor. If I had taken an opportunity to look into the actual correspondence between the Governor and the State Board and into the complaints made to the Governor, I might be able to be more specific; but it is, I think, of the greatest importance that as little as possible should be drawn into the political campaign. The less the Governor will be able to get along with, the better it will be for the cause of the insane.

A wholesale vote of distrust towards the hospital authorities is, I think, unwarranted, and even if it were more or less founded, it would be unwise; therefore my advice to be more specific and to limit the discussion to the above course.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

Please excuse this hurried dictation. If you think I should consider other points as well, let me know. My notes and material will be sent on from New York shortly, but I would not like to expose any one to the temptation to draw my further conclusions into campaign discussions.

It seemed to me at the time, and still seems to me, incomprehensible that the State Board should have allowed so important a study as Dr. Meyer's, and from such an eminent authority, to go unnoticed.

Dr. Quinby was expected to resign from the Worcester State Hospital, and Dr. Scribner was suggested for his place, but the Trustees, disagreeing with the Board of Insanity, did not approve of Dr. Scribner's having so much responsibility, and their views proved to be correct later, when Worcester was investigated under Dr. Scribner's administration. The condition becoming rather acute, I wrote Dr. Meyer the following letter:

Boston, October 3, 1911.

Dr. Adolf Meyer, *Phipps Laboratory, Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore, Md.*

My Dear Dr. Meyer: — I hear nothing from you and am afraid that my last letter did not reach you. The situation concerning our insane is coming to a head pretty rapidly. It is not because it is election time, as you might suppose, but because of delay on the part of the Governor and others, which seems to be unavoidable so far as I am concerned.

The Worcester situation, as I wrote before, is acute. The Governor has not accepted Quinby's resignation because he does not want Scribner to go in. Tom Russell, one of the Trustees, called on him the other day, and when he could not see him, sent word to him that if he did not accept Dr. Quinby's resignation, the Trustees would, which would deprive Dr. Quinby of $1,500 a year pension, after thirty-eight years of service, and that Governor Foss would have to take the consequences. That was rather a peremptory statement, and not the way to approach Governor Foss.

At my suggestion, Governor Foss sent for Dr. Quinby to come to the State House, and he had a talk with him, after which Mr. Holman had a long talk with him and suggested that he ask the Trustees for a month's leave of absence, which would relieve the situation, and, at the same time, save his pension. The Governor does not intend to be forced. Dr. Quinby frankly told the Governor that he did not believe in the arrangement which was about to be made, and that he did not consider it wise for Dr. Scribner to take charge of all the institutions at Worcester. In the course of the conversation he further quoted you to Mr. Holman as saying that you believed in sending the insane back into the almshouses and to county care, which Mr. Holman took exception to, and asked me if I ever understood you to say that that was your idea. I told him that I did not understand it so.

You see that things are getting more or less mixed and complicated, and I think it is due to all parties interested that you should make a statement before things go any farther. You have looked into the question; the Governor depends upon you implicitly for advice. He has asked you, written you and telegraphed you at different times for advice, and now when he most needs it he is powerless to know how to act so as to keep in line with your ideas.

I do not mean, in writing as I do, to commit Governor Foss to accepting your report without first seeing it, but I do believe that he ought to know what it contains, after waiting so long before taking any action and expecting to receive the benefit of your advice.

In talking with me a few days ago and asking me what I had written to you, he told me that he thought I had given you a wrong impression in regard to his vetoing the special appropriation bills; that no one wanted to give certain items more than he; that no one realized the necessity more deeply than he did of certain items in these special appropriations asked for; that it was true that he did not feel competent to pick and choose all of them and did want advice; and that there were certain items that unquestionably ought to have been given favorable consideration, but he was powerless to assent

only to certain items, because if he assented to any part of the bill he would have to assent to the whole. As the State Board of Insanity put the bill into the Legislature, it called for a veto of the whole bill or acceptance of the whole bill. After it had passed both branches of the Legislature no changes were possible.

He tells me that, if he is elected this next year, he will advocate giving the Governor the power to veto items in the appropriation bills, thereby preventing suffering or neglect where money is sadly needed, and also preventing money being expended on the ground that, if he does not sign bills as a whole, people might suffer. I hope I have made this clear.

I wish you could stop on your way through Boston, if you are anywhere north of Boston, and visit me at Manchester if possible, and if not, see Governor Foss in Boston and me also.

Very sincerely yours,
L. Vernon Briggs.

Dr. Meyer's answer was as follows:

1012 North Calvert Street,
Baltimore, Maryland, October 6, 1911.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *208 Beacon St., Boston, Mass.*

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — Our letters must have crossed. I hope that what I wrote has in some way cleared the situation, as far as I can clear it.

I am especially obliged to you for the explanation concerning the appropriations. I wish very much the Governor could make a public statement of it, as it would undoubtedly change the impression he gave and clear the atmosphere.

You say he has asked me, written me and telegraphed me at different times for advice, and now he is powerless to know how to act so as to get in line with my ideas. The trouble evidently is that it is difficult to focus on definite issues, and in my letter I tried to show directly what I would consider the best points to fix upon without implicating anybody or any cause prematurely. Certainly the Worcester issue is clear enough, and I could quote Dr. Hurd, who is the Baltimore correspondent of Dr. Howard and meant to keep me straight, as having said that he absolutely disapproves of the plan of consolidation. This, of course, is personal, but may be a specific example of what I said in my letter, — that the Governor can say it is the opinion of many alienists.

With regard to Dr. Quinby's statement, that I believe in sending the insane back to the almshouses and to the county care, there must be an important link missing. I should indeed like to know the details of his account, as it might be a valuable guidance.

The accident at Austin Farm is most deplorable. I feel sure that Dr. Frost will make an adequate investigation and draw adequate conclusions from it.

I am very sorry we could not touch Boston on our return. I hope that it is possible to arrive at an early clearing up of this period of suspense. If Gov-

ernor Foss is elected, I feel little doubt but that the State Board and the hospitals will take a different attitude, and that there will be some chance of collaboration between all those who have progress at heart. Without that, I am afraid the situation is one of stubborn resistance, even against perfectly well-meaning discussion.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

About this time the Governor asked me if I would allow him to use my name for an appointment to succeed a member of the State Board of Insanity whose term had expired. At first I declined.

In October Dr. Meyer wrote me a letter in which he paid me what I feel was a great compliment. I had declined, as I had always declined, to accept any public office, and Dr. Meyer had upheld me, thinking it was best that I should work from the outside, and not be in a position where my enemies could accuse me of working from selfish motives or for political position. But he came to look at things differently and wrote me on October 11, 1911, from Baltimore:

With regard to the State Board appointment, I almost feel as if I wanted to relent with regard to your own acceptance because it is so hard to find the right kind of person to take your place, and, after all, you would be better able to meet the false incriminations of personal interest and the like if you could show the temper of your own work and helpfulness on the Board. When I spoke of it before, I was rather strongly impressed by the influence of the deep antagonism expressed in several places, and now I almost feel that, in case Governor Foss should not be re-elected, the whole movement might suffer a severe setback unless one forcible element remains in the council.

About this time I was planning for social service work, and had organized it in the mental department at the Boston Dispensary, as I shall describe later. Dr. Meyer looked upon this as an important step, and on January 16 he wrote as follows (see also page 191):

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, January 16, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I do not blame you for the discouragement in overseeing the petition to the Council; it is an expression of what Southard himself told me with regard to the attitude of the bulk of the profession. How things could ever have come to this pass, I do not understand altogether; but there is no doubt that the reformer in Boston is apt to have a harder time than anywhere else, under the critical fire of very searching intellects. If the Yankee ingenuity is put at the disposal of strong feeling, and that feeling in people of strong influence and on matters little known by the average, the result is about as witnessed in this case. In the parlance of warfare, one could hardly call their statement a lie, but they certainly had a very effective but innocent-looking weapon.

I have not heard yet any reply to my inquiry about the Worcester trusteeships, and shall really have to write again in order to make clear that a woman is wanted, whereas I asked for one or two men. The problem of the Prison Commissionership is extremely interesting. Dr. Fernald no doubt would be an excellent man, especially in view of his training with the defectives, who play such an important part in this new field. In one respect I should regret seeing him pass out of his life work into this new field; it should, however, be possible to replace him.

The work you are planning at the Boston Dispensary is, to my mind, extremely important. It really is quite necessary to review seriously and conscientiously the effect of social service in our cases, so that we may know within what limits it has its best sphere, and perhaps also into what directions it had better branch off. For this we absolutely need a report of records which allow the reader to judge of all sides of the case.

In the expectation that I may soon be able to give you a reply with regard to the Trustees, I remain,

Very sincerely yours,
ADOLF MEYER.

Of the Worcester situation he wrote again:

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, January 22, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — It is very unfortunate that Dr. Woodward has really no grasp on the needs of the situation. He has very largely the attitude of the average physician, who claims that the asylum is a place for keeping very difficult and almost unmanageable people who make a lot of trouble, etc. He has not written to me since he acknowledged the receipt of my reply to his letter. I am inclined to think that if they would adopt the spirit and letter

of the proposal of Dr. Copp, and not a concoction of their own, matters would not be unnecessarily bad; I mean by that what Dr. Copp describes on page 32 of the Report of 1910, from the last paragraph. I should, however, be very specific about leaving out the word "practical" as altogether too hazy a specification of the form of independence. It is natural that the independence must be practical, but to speak of the practical independence at the outset leaves a loophole for just the kind of schemes that have frustrated so many things in the past.

Very sincerely yours,
ADOLF MEYER.

At last, in January, 1912, Dr. Meyer's report was finished and ready to be presented to the Governor and his Council, the representatives of the State Board, the superintendents and hospital trustees, as set forth in his letter to me, as follows:

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, January 24, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I am writing to-day to the Governor, asking him whether it would not be possible to arrange some kind of meeting of himself, several members of his Council, and representatives of the State Board, the superintendents and hospital trustees, for a reading of my report and a discussion which would obviate the inevitable criticism from those who gave me an opportunity to make my inquiries. I could then leave my material at the disposal of the Governor and whoever wishes to get access to it, without the slightest possibility for objection; and there would be a chance to really command the attention of those who ought to meet the facts most directly.

I wish very much you could win the Governor for this form of procedure, as I do not wish to impair my "welcome" with my coworkers in Massachusetts, and because, indeed, I feel this is the very best way to bring the contending forces together.

I feel especially that the Governor's Council and the various bodies which seem to dread antagonism and encroachment could in this way be reached and left to constructive discussion rather than mere defence of foregone conclusions. I may say that I have not received one solitary word that might give me an opening for a real discussion except the letter from Dr. Sam Woodward, the reply to which he can use as he deems fit; that is to say, he may keep it to himself without even showing it to the Board. Dr. Southard, too, although in Washington, did not exchange one word with me, and for these reasons I want to be especially careful not to give them a particle of cause;

and I rather asked for the above gathering in order to break the ice, and to have a chance to make my statement in absolute fairness and openness.

I really believe that last summer I regained the goodwill of quite a few who had got into the habit of associating me with other feelings, and I should not wonder if the course suggested would clinch many a beginning of coming to an understanding.

Very sincerely yours,
ADOLF MEYER.

I immediately proceeded to the Governor, and did win him over, and he sent out to all parties designated by Dr. Meyer the following invitation:

THE GOVERNOR

has invited Dr. Adolf Meyer of Baltimore, Maryland, to meet with others who may be interested, at the State House, on February 7, 1912, to read a paper on institutional administration and particularly concerning Massachusetts, following his visit last summer. It is hoped that there may be a general discussion of the subject and an interchange of ideas. You are cordially invited to be present.

Dr. Meyer was, I think, pleased, and immediately proceeded to make plans to come to Boston. I wish I had copies of my letters to Dr. Meyer, but I find only the one from which I have already quoted. The following from Dr. Meyer is evidently an answer to one of my letters which I wish I could give here, as it evidently pointed out some matters more or less connected with his report, which I felt to be of importance at the time.

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, January 31, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I am getting ready to take the night train on Tuesday and to spend Wednesday and Thursday in Boston. I expect to give Wednesday to the discussion of my material, and should like to have Thursday for some other matters.

In order to be absolutely free and to have a chance to see the conflicting parties, I should like to stay either at a hotel or with friends not directly involved in the issue.

The points in your letter are very valuable. The discussion which I have already prepared quite naturally covers a number of the points, and I really hope to point out some practical matters. A policy which is practical and not too remote is, of course, rather difficult to frame, but I shall do what is feasible.

A feeler which I sent out to Dr. Southard received the cold shoulder by putting the interpretation on it that my visit and report were largely in behalf of the American Psychological Association and would be heard there, which of course is not so. It was and is purely a private inquiry, and I hope it will also become of some use to the Association. I hinted at a desire to discuss the Worcester situation with him, but he did not mention the matter. I simply state this strictly confidentially to show the attitude, as indicated also by the final sentence: "Everything here is perfectly serene." I realize that I am exposing myself to a rather peculiar mission; but if it is carried out as I urged in my second letter to the Governor, *i.e.*, strictly *en famille*, I feel absolutely safe that I can do the right thing.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

Dr. Meyer's report is rather long, but all of it is significant, and most of his recommendations and criticisms have been an inspiration to me in my work and have intimate bearing upon what was subsequently done for the mentally ill in Massachusetts. Some of his recommendations have been carried out after many struggles. Those that have not been carried out are as important to-day as at the time he made them. In justice to Dr. Meyer, I feel that I should give his address in full, rather than attempt to make extracts, which might, perhaps, give a false impression of the spirit in which it was made. Dr. Meyer's position at this time was a most difficult one, in addressing at the request of the Governor the members of the Board, who knew of his study, but had never asked him for his conclusions.

ADDRESS DELIVERED BY DR. ADOLPH MEYER OF JOHNS HOPKINS UNIVERSITY BEFORE THE GOVERNOR AND COUNCIL OF MASSACHUSETTS, THE STATE BOARD OF INSANITY, AND THE SUPERINTENDENTS OF THE STATE INSTITUTIONS FOR THE INSANE AT BOSTON, MASS., FEBRUARY 7, 1912

The Status of the Medical and Scientific Work in the Massachusetts Hospitals for the Insane

Last year I was put into a peculiar position by a number of urgent inquiries concerning policies in practical psychiatry in which I had always been keenly interested. Among these were inquiries from this State. I then as always refused to give *ex parte* opinions and felt especially inclined to abstain from comments about the Massachusetts problems because my contact with the Massachusetts hospitals had been slight for nearly ten years, and in natural fairness to the cause and to myself I did not want to be drawn into a situation which might go beyond my control. In the meantime I used a good share of the month of August for an inquiry which is part of a larger plan of work to be continued this next summer and undertaken in order to obtain for myself the facts on which to base a review of the present status of practical psychiatry in this country under various systems of organization. The frequency with which questions on this point come up which demand first-hand knowledge and the desire to get a first-hand acquaintance rather than a scheme and notions based on intuition made it seem worth while undertaking this absolutely personal and otherwise disinterested study.

This year when I again received an official inquiry from Your Excellency whether I would offer any of the results of my studies of last summer with regard to certain questions of policy, I replied that I had no objection to do so before a representative body of men who would take my facts and my deductions for what they are meant for: an open and frank discussion of the questions of policies in practical psychiatry. All I demand is that the material offered be available in common to all those interested in decisions and that it should be used only after due investigation of the facts together with the men in charge of the work. Those who are in charge of the work are best able to draw one's attention to the problem as it appears to those familiar with and responsible for all its ramifications. With this qualification my review will, I hope, serve its purpose: that of conveying the view of a disinterested outsider, one who tries to view matters with his head above local policies and traditions.

I am indeed glad to have an opportunity to bring up a number of issues which stand out most strongly in my experience and if you will kindly favor me with your attention and especially your discussion, I hope that some conclusions of mutual value will be the result. Only with a discussion shall I feel sure that my statements carried so that there will be no doubt left in

the mind of any one of us as to both their intention and their interpretation. I shall be most anxious to clear up any uncertainties as questions may arise. I may say here and shall repeat it that the facts I want to pick out are a problem nearly everywhere.

Practical psychiatry the world over is in a stage of most encouraging progress. To-day we stand at a point where a number of questions are becoming ripe for attack from several divergent viewpoints. On the one hand, our methods of economies and business administration have for the last ten years stood under the sign of all-absorbing centralization, and to-day the question arises of how to balance the centralization and decentralization in the best interest of the purposes in view. On the other hand, medicine has grown tremendously, from a simple personal relation of physicians and hospitals to the individual patients and aggregates of patients to one of civic responsibilities and an interest in prevention and cure on a more aggressive basis than before. The responsibility to be healthy on the part of the individual and the community becomes as plainly recognized a demand as the responsibility of civic and moral integrity, and the problem of public health becomes a positive constructive problem instead of a merely defensive and mending job.

These developments have changed many of the traditional views. State care and State supervision of the insane, a practical monopoly of the State, put an end to the prevailing incompetency of most local efforts. Now the State monopoly has to develop further to do the work properly. It must ramify again to reach the patients when and where they can best be helped and so as to reach the breeding places of disease. The machinery must be adapted to these needs; and while stability of policy is the vital guarantee of success, capacity of growth must from time to time be assured by a survey of the facts and of the best ways to cope with them.

Massachusetts to my mind has in many ways the frame of an organization which I prefer to the excessive centralization in New York, and even more to that under the Boards of Control of some of the central States. First-hand familiarity with its early working in the first years of its present organization and subsequent first-hand experience with the New York system and a preliminary study of the general results of the system in the States with so-called Boards of Control give me some right to an opinion and to my outspoken preference for many features of the Massachusetts system. Some points do not, however, impress me as favorably as the plan as a whole; and since we are not here for a memorial service of a defunct body, but confronted with a live organization, we can take for granted and as approved many of the features and pass directly to the issues which seem debatable. As features of which I strongly approve I mention that the central body is expected to be a working and advisory body rather than one trying to make all decisions for every hospital and worker outside of it, and assuming dictatorial power. It has a good system of administrative reviews and surveys of expenditure instead of a peremptory estimate system. In its conception it aims to quite an extent at maintaining a body of expert helpers and advisers, and it is the mediator between the workers and the part of public opinion which constitutes the legislative and governing bodies. The question is to what extent the system

has been fortunate and successful in the actual impersonation of these good principles.

The law requires an expert of insanity as executive officer and an unpaid board of five persons, at least two of whom shall be experts of insanity. The board submits annually a properly classified and tabulated statement of the receipts and expenses of the board and of the institution under its supervision and estimates for the ensuing year, a concise review of the work and suggestions and recommendations, and information embodying the experience of this country and other countries relative to the best and most useful methods of caring for such persons as come under the supervision of the board. It is expected to encourage scientific investigation by the medical staffs, etc. The law is very broad and puts large opportunities into the hands of the board. These have been used excellently along two lines, *i.e.*, that of financial reviews of great value, and that of mapping out an ideal plan of State care, the best parts of which, however, *have remained on the paper* and do not show in the somewhat opportunistic actual performance or concrete recommendations. The main achievements are: The evolution of a partial program in Boston, and a great improvement in certain lines of laboratory work in the hospitals, especially those which refer to post-mortem work and to the attention to occasional epidemics such as will attack hospitals for the insane as any other agglomeration of people. Many other lines of work make this department one of the best organized ones in any public system. *Other lines, viz., those of the actual study and individual care of the patients and the organization of the curative and the preventive work, have fared much less well except in Boston itself, and really are at a disadvantage in several institutions.* It is therefore this last point from which I wish to start in my discussions.

What is the State trying to administer?

Aggregates of patients who are brought together because their different troubles affect their capacity of adaptiveness and conduct of their own life. *There is a wide range of diseases, some of which are clearly the outcome of specific causes which should be attacked outside the hospital* (or should at least be brought to the notice of the proper authorities in definite statements — not only in annual reports); and others are a combination of unfitness (by heredity and training) to find a harmless level of activity in the community and to meet the conditions of the familial and social existence of the present day.

The task would seem to be:

1. *To make it possible to get the cases in time.* For this, valuable legislation has been adopted; but it is very unevenly used, and too much dependent on the personal inclination of each superintendent; and sometimes not even known to the staff as a legalized possibility.

2. *To determine in each case the facts which made the patient a burden of the State, and trace as far as possible the responsible causes, and to modify these responsible discrepancies of environment and personality, so as to obtain reasonable certainty that in case of return the patient would not relapse and that no other victims would unnecessarily be sacrificed to the same local cause.*

3. *To give the patient such study and care and treatment as would satisfy our present medical standards, if the patients were our own relatives.* This means

an adequate medical and nursing staff and interests of work which go into the problems of the patients as much as into the hygiene of the institution as a whole.

4. To secure enough time and sufficient staff to bring the facts together for improvements so as to affect the organization within and beyond the hospitals more directly than where the chief consideration is merely that of housing and administering institutions.

Psychiatry, *i.e.*, the medical care of patients with mental afflictions, has changed considerably of late years. The aim of modern psychiatry is not so much to pigeonhole each case according to some arbitrary classification of assumed disease entities as to recognize the factors which are at work in the patient for the better or the worse, and to handle those medically or by adapting the life of the patient and his relation to the environment. Some of these factors are as plain as those of any disease; others more vague, and still others to be reached only by training in better habits of adaptation in life. This whole view of *individualized study and treatment* makes growing demands on the physicians and requires time and helps of methods of accuracy, and control by good bookkeeping.

The medical bookkeeping is the record and we must demand that it give evidence of the facts which make the case what it is, and of the plan of treatment, *i.e.*, evidence that the facts are used, so that each record is primarily kept for the benefit of the work on each patient. Out of the bookkeeping should grow our experience with the question of treatment of the whole problem. We should keep before ourselves and before the citizens an answer, frequently revised, to the question: What would we do if we had to create adequate facilities for the care and treatment of each patient with a free hand? Next, into what compromises are we actually forced by conditions which are handed on to us and by the limitation of means put at our disposal? The hospital authorities, the Trustees, the State Board, the Legislature, the Governor, and the public should have an annually revised picture: (1) of the needs of the patients, and (2) of the needs of the system with which we want to do justice to our patients and to those likely to be afflicted either by the disease or its consequences on the family and society or by the taxes. The annual reports of Dr. Copp have done much in this direction, but as far as I can see not all that would put up the Legislature to a clean-cut decision whether the best plan or one of simpler alternatives is going to be accepted or whether the public deliberately calls for makeshifts.

In my study of the question, I took up chiefly this question: *What do we do for the individual patient and how effective is our machinery?*

As I put it in the preliminary plan of my work in a letter to Dr. Howard, June 29, 1911, I chose wherever possible to study:

(*a*) The care actually received by groups of 10 acute cases (care pending committal, transportation, their distribution in the hospital, time of examination, and the form of treatment and record of medical attentions, and the method of presentation to the controlling medical officers).

(*b*) The care of the average sick case — analysis of a group of 10 consecutive cases that might have come to autopsy, and a group of cases under care at the time.

(*c*) Inquiry into the comparative advantages of certain types of provision for the care of difficult cases, with special reference to the organization of the medical and nursing force.

(*d*) The character and fate of recommendations made by the hospital authorities for the improvement of the medical effectiveness.

Of these items (*a*) was covered in most hospitals; (*b*) and (*c*) were more difficult to carry through in an accurate manner; and with regard to (*d*) no spontaneous co-operation was obtained, so that I had to depend on my impressions.

A detailed account of the data is not specially needed and would go too far. I must limit myself to the point about which it might be profitable to do something. Frankly speaking, I find it especially irksome to enumerate observations of undesirable features in the various institutions. I mention what I do, not in a captious spirit but to put forth concrete facts on which to invite you to build a constructive discussion. Many of these we meet at home as well as here. We are all very much alike, human in varying degrees of weakness, but after all also human in our varying degrees of ambition to rise and do the best within our reach.

The bulk of our shortcomings can be traced to individual shortcomings, and this makes discussion especially difficult unless we admit outright that no man is perfect in his position, and it is only through union and mutual help that we attain our maximum strength. The problem I have at heart is the question whether we cannot improve our machinery so as to make it take care automatically of many things which get otherwise wrecked on the rocks of personal equation and personal difficulties.

To be as concrete and plain as possible I pick out some definite facts. I started my study with a review of what had been done for definite series of cases. As in business, the records of the facts and of the work done are the available material by which to judge the work of the past and its effects.

We may say that a record shall contain an account of the examinations of the patient and the results of the inquiry into the fact of the condition to be treated. The hospital is responsible for the facts and their best use. The records of the cases are the only means of supervision of what work has been done and is being done in behalf of a patient. *Defects in records to my mind would indicate defects in the means of supervision by the officers in charge of the institutions and by the officers of the State Board.*

In the main the records studied by me show a great advance over what they were in the early nineties, but not very much since the later nineties. Yet the standards in this direction vary greatly. To at least one of the superintendents the form and size of the record was still the chief worry. The purpose of the record as a means of good work and as a means of getting at and using the facts for the patient and for the control of the work of the physician by his superiors was still a vague notion to him. I made it a point to choose records of cases whom I could see myself in person so as to depend not only on the impression from the clerical work. Therefore what I have to say is not merely an inference from records but from the case as such, and *I only judge the merits of the record as a means of supervision of the work.* Thus *some records*

show that the patient did not get a full examination until from one to six months after admission. The consequence must have been routine treatment as a mere inmate and not as a patient with definitely established and determined troubles calling for a definite plan of remedy. The cause lies partly in an insufficient number of physicians, sometimes owing to neglected vacancies, and partly in a poor plan of work. *The trouble is usually traceable to lack of adequate supervision of the medical work; in several places nobody seems clearly and definitely responsible to do better, and nobody is held strictly responsible to keep an eye on the standards of work.*

In keeping with the above, I found the treatment difficult to follow up both in the records and in the discussion with the physicians. Although an elaborate system of three shifts of nurses is carried through in most places there is little written evidence of a systematic way in which the continuity of treatment of the patient is assured and maintained on an active basis. This must have a decided effect in the way of leaving too much to routine. But there is also evidence of lack of sustained interest in a really effective routine. *In the actual activity of several hospitals there is little evidence of real occupation and systematic recreation, not enough outdoor life, and little spirit of active interest,* and I feel that this goes closely with an excessively large number of changes among the employees and numerous vacancies in the nursing force.

In several places the custodial care shows examples of herding together of patients such as are rarely seen in a truly modern hospital for the insane. Thus we find wards which are veritable schools for artifacts, for conditions which should not exist and which keep alive wholly inexcusable views about hospitals and about mental disease — even among the trustees and the public. *In one place I saw one of three women in permanent isolation on one ward, in a blanket smeared with fæces and a pool of urine under the bed, with enough evidence that this was not merely a bad moment or a bad day;* and in another place the ward had been prepared for my visit with formalin scrubbing, and so much formalin in the atmosphere that there either was extravagance in the use of formalin or a deplorable need of it before it was used. *The most deplorable facts are: that so many cases are allowed to develop asylum-bred conditions which do not exist in well-conducted institutions,* and that *not infrequently these cases are mixed together with relatively acute and hopeful cases,* oftenest owing to lack of nurses, but also frequently through faults of architecture which we shall discuss. *In this whole question of seclusion and restraint and tolerance of "excited wards" there undoubtedly has been some improvement since 1902, but several of the hospitals appear to be unduly below the standard of the best,* and that in part because of architectural makeshifts. Of the care pending commitment few positive efforts are to be found. Altogether too many cases go through the hands of the police. Worcester, with its institutions, has allowed the City Hospital to build a wholly antiquated type of an admission ward not much better than a lock-up. Many patients are brought by officers of the court instead of nurses as is the case in most progressive places. For some reason an antagonism to this plan was established in some places before the plan was tried, very much as with the use of women nurses on men's wards, one

of the Worcester trustees in years past told me he would not allow it and did not believe in it because it did not impress him favorably. While no doubt individual physicians do much to help patients on discharge in the line of after-care and help in regaining a footing, *there was little obvious and no organized interest in after-care, and very little evidence of systematic or even tentative work in the direction of prevention.* We shall have to try and trace some of the causes of these retardations of development in the organizing of the hospitals and their administration.

Should I discuss the defects of the large organization as they appear to me, I should put foremost the overcrowding concerning which a more graphic description should be submitted to the Legislature than is the case. With this is associated an undesirable distribution of the insane, especially those of the metropolitan district which are scattered and pressed into the hospitals at a distance; *much trouble comes from the policy of undesirable enlargement of most of the institutions, contrary to their original plan and the best principles of their working. I should censure as a defect the lack of insistent reports of the undesirable conditions by the public inspectors to the Governor and Legislature; not to speak of the lack of assignment of responsibility for the mental health problem of the different districts such as would assure after-care and prevention, and proper care of the cases pending admission to a hospital;* we shall further have to criticize certain difficulties of internal organization, which make too many issues depend on one frail mortal, and stand in the way of a satisfactory ventilation of the experience of the workers before those who make decisions. I refer to false centralization, a point which I shall have to discuss especially.

Summing up the chief defects, *I mention insufficient supervision,* which would raise the clinical work out of routine, partly due to a lack of supervision and prevention of vacancies on the staffs and an organization which estranges the superintendent and even the assistant superintendent (who may lack larger incentives) from active collaboration with the workers, and *often inadequate nursing facilities and methods to get the work done.* We shall have to try and trace the responsibility for these points. Further there is an undoubted *lack of evidence of moves toward proper districting of the State and the assignment of the responsibility for the mental health problem to the hospitals which would be in a position to lead in after-care and prevention. My impression is that much is due to a certain custodial atmosphere in the supervisory board owing to lack of familiarity of most of the heads with the specific needs in the work along the lines which affect the medical work proper.* Certainly there is little evidence in the way of concrete plans which would demonstrate education of the public and the Legislature towards the ideal depicted by Dr. Copp in his last report (pages 29–36); on the contrary, *certain utterances and plans even among the boards now point in a decidedly adverse direction of what appears to me deliberate retrogression.*

Before going into the general discussion I want to repeat that the drawbacks enumerated are problems with which most hospitals are wrestling, and not alone some of the Massachusetts hospitals. I do not discuss these points as difficulties characteristic of this sytem alone, but as points to which also

the Massachusetts system must adapt itself. *I do however believe that many points are better met elsewhere*, and that I am not talking of utopias; but I do not want you to assume that I string together these statements in a spirit of criticism. They are merely the points which suggest inquiry into the best constructive policy.

The existing systems of caring for the insane are inevitably a mere compromise between many divergent aims and conditions.

In the first place, at the inception of the existing régime there were already a number of institutions, which, together with often objectionable annexes to almshouses, contained the aggregations of patients who were not fit to be assimilated again by the community, and incidental to this custodial task they were the recovering places for the current mental diseases as far as judges found it necessary to commit the patients. Even the Lowell Almshouse received many acute cases. The distribution of these hospitals was partly accident, partly the result of forethought. It is especially a fact that Boston itself was unusually long allowed to put up with a makeshift, until, now, it is at last ready to come into the very front rank owing to the standards but not yet owing to sufficiency of provision; its history is marked by many accidents of birth especially in the way of a distraction of the interest from the other institutions and the evolution of a wise policy in their regions. The concentration of energy on the part of Dr. Copp has I believe been more or less inevitably at the expense of the *institutions farther away from Boston which have no normal development even now*, — a point which will deserve quite a little discussion.

To-day the care of the insane has been made a State monopoly in many communities. The steps taken here were: —

The State absorbed a number of institutions which were autonomous and partly what they called self-supporting, *i.e.*, paying their expenses out of the receipts for the patients from families, counties and townships, and from the returns of their property, while others had annual subsidies from the State or city. The State care proceeded at once to abolish the almshouse colonies with the exception of the annex of Tewksbury. Each unit had (and has) a quota of counties or townships for its admissions and took its share of Boston cases. Part of each hospital district usually became fairly familiar to the staff of the hospital; the metropolitan district however would inevitably be remote to the workers at the more remote hospital, and its stream of admissions was turned on at irregular intervals, greatly disturbing the order of the work.

The autonomy of the hospital and the absolute concentration of authority and responsibility in one hand had created units which inevitably made each institution a problem to itself and by itself, bearing strongly the marks of the individual maker in charge and as it happened with little relationship between the different hospitals and their superintendents. The State Board therefore had a difficult task, and undoubtedly many of the matters which I shall discuss were the inevitable outcome of mere compromises. As a matter of fact I am inclined to think that the principle of State care and financial control was largely used to obtain the help of State funds to overcome the hampering inapproachability of home-rule régime.

The existing institutions for the time represented the practical psychiatry of the State. The almshouse annexes had to be transformed, as was the case with Tewksbury, or abolished, and this suggested the foundation of the colonies. In the way of compromise and relief, the principle of the Worcester Asylum had already been imitated in the form of the Medfield Asylum, *i.e.*, special institutions for part of the supposedly incurable. This principle could of course not be carried through completely. The so-called hospitals had to keep a large asylum population of custodial cases. The addition of the Gardner Colony added merely a new type, leaving the custodial problem of the asylums practically untouched, if not really complicated owing to the singling out of the helpful workers. Even with this exclusiveness Gardner has only a moderate reduction of expense of maintenance to show; but it readily forms a most valuable nucleus for the right type of development if it sticks to a definite policy and makes custodial care its real issue instead of yielding to the temptation to become another institution like the rest, which I understand was Dr. Thompson's plan. Northampton has retained the most normal relations but had to send many chronic cases out of its district. It is the hospital for a fairly well-defined district, although probably as the district stands now not most happily located, since the Springfield end of the valley has developed much more. Worcester attempts to do justice to a large area — probably too large to do it well and profitably; Danvers has the northeastern part of the State. Lowell has long straddled. For a time it used its almshouse very extensively, but ultimately would send its committed cases to Worcester, or I believe for a time to Danvers. Taunton was and is the center for the southeastern part of the State.

The State has thus taken over and developed a system of institutions which for a long time had been autonomous concerns, each a problem unto itself, without a very clearly defined task beyond economy and efficiency within its walls and care of the patients committed to them, and a policy of expansion by occasional additions of buildings more in evidence than completion of inner organization. This, of course, is only a part of the psychiatry needed by a State and its communities.

Dr. Copp describes an admirable plan (pages 29–36) of creating districts which can become responsible units of work each with a mental sanatorium, a psychopathic hospital, a colony and infirmary. *The question is, to what extent do the proposals of the State Board show activity in keeping with this plan?*

I should consider the last report of Dr. Copp an ideal program if it had risen to a sketch with a financial estimate and well-defined plan of the district organization described on pages 28–36, with an outline, at least, for each probable district and thereby some warnings against mere undesirable tinkering along the lines of a plan which would be abandoned as soon as the public and its representatives are familiar with the facts and with the aims and the best alternatives, in a measure as the State is financially ready to do the best thing.

The burning question of modern psychiatry is how not to get stuck in the standard ideals of State care in the mere *sense of maximum economy of taking care of the end products of very defective methods of prevention and early care.*

With Dr. Copp I am convinced that the best plan of practical psychiatry is the handling of the problem in terms of districts, as shown by our charity organizations, or the units of our armies, or the units of the railroads or other business concerns. *The study of the problem of after-care and prevention must make us concerned with the conditions at large where the mental disorders are bred.* We have learned to see that the community must be handled in small enough units to remain practical and still compatible with the economy of care with our present methods.

It is, to be sure, impossible to foretell what the next twenty-five or fifty years will bring with regard to the distribution of the population; but we are decidedly certain about the *probable increase of the metropolitan district and its need of much more extensive provisions. Boston and Massachusetts should learn from the mistakes of other States, which have a metropolitan district, especially New York, and mend its plans before the State as a whole gets swamped with a system of unwieldy scattered institutions which are difficult to change and will become an elephant in the hands of the progressive workers.*

Every excessively large institution becomes a center of excessive focal interest, a matter of exclusive concern to itself, tempted to hold up the plans of the whole State if its own purposes seem to demand it — unless it is and remains a link in a chain, with a clear assignation of the sufficiently clear-cut and vital responsibilities to each link, that is the responsibility for the mental health problem in a working district.

What is meant by the work in the unit is sketched at some length and with care in a paper on the problem of the State published in the "Journal of Insanity," April, 1909. The chief aims are to have a clean-cut field of work, a hospital easily reached, subdivided so as to serve the different types of disorders, from what Dr. Copp calls the mental sanatorium, to the Psychopathic Hospital, and to the mixed semicustodial and custodial hospital and infirmary, and the colonies. Easy admission and easy discharge; easy access to the investigation of the sources of the trouble, preparation for the conditions pending a return to the home and after-care and *preventive help where the troubles breed and threaten the old victim and new ones.*

In the case of the diseases which are due to definite outside causes such as alcoholism, syphilis (producing in some regions of our country over 10 per cent of all the cases admitted to State care) and unhygienic conditions, it becomes obvious that the causes must be attacked outside of the hospital or should at least be brought to the notice of the proper authorities of responsible districts in regular and definite statements and not merely hidden away in annual reports, in which the figures are lumped together and cannot be assigned to the responsible locality or responsible factors. Page 99 of the last report says syphilis was a causative factor in 3.91 per cent of the cases; yet general paralysis alone figures with 7.51 per cent, and coarse brain lesions with 7.24 per cent. Such figures as these will never do what the facts demand, especially if they are not addressed to any special group of people. With regard to alcoholism we must trace it to the spigots and taps and their controlling forces, a reasonable task considering that even with the above laxity of figures 22.15 per cent of the cases are noted as influenced by alcohol.

Now what should be our districts?

A metropolis forms in a way a unit; but it is naturally subdivided for every single purpose of its administration — schools, municipal supervision, etc. It had best be divided into several districts, because it really does consist of something like subdivisions with different problems and different populations. Now for the work in mental health problems, *no agency is as well qualified to take up the constructive mental hygiene work as the hospital which is responsible for the study and care of the acute and subacute and chronic patients for that district,* the cases which have become thoroughly known and the discharge of some of whom brings up the question of getting the home and the situation fit for a renewed trial at home. *To-day Boston, even more than New York, sends its patients to overcrowded and overworked institutions* partly out of touch with the spirit and problems of the locality, and all the social warnings given by disease pass in vain, so that others continue to be affected by the same conditions under a fatalistic conception of doom quite foreign to the spirit of modern medicine. *One distant hospital cannot spread its influences over the whole mass of problems of all the Boston districts, and therefore not one of the hospitals as now arranged could ever get a good hold on extramural work and on prevention.* The reception hospital will improve things, but probably will bring together too large a mass of work to be handled and done justice to from one organization. What unit can digest such a large field? However that be, it *will be of the greatest importance not to scatter the Boston cases all over the State if the follow-up work is to be carried out systematically and with a hope to get a sound basis for the future work and plans of the city as one goes along. It seems absolutely mandatory that the metropolitan district have two or even three hospitals for its own cases instead of the one Boston State Hospital, and instead of remaining a distracting influence on the outlying State hospitals.* It should then be possible to assign the Worcester, Taunton and Danvers hospitals to their respective districts as far as possible, and to avoid their enlargement except for the improvement of the work in the districts, by giving them reception facilities in the chief centers like Lowell, Fall River or New Bedford, perhaps connected with the local city hospitals, but run in close connection with the hospital and colony of the district, not like the makeshift of an annex at the Worcester City Hospital which should not have become necessary if the State hospitals there had had a responsible hand in its construction. *The claims of economy for the old system are certainly offset by the demonstration of the inefficiency of preventive work, the continual accumulation of fairly economical but ineffective work at the wrong end, when the harm is done, leading to little more than the increase of days, weeks and years of lives in hospital care, including quite a few cases who could be at large at least part of the time, and supported by their families or helping themselves,* if it becomes easy to admit them in time and to discharge and help them along from the hospital on a level of life fitted to them and to return them easily to the hospital when it becomes necessary. Even with the present system your board is meritoriously active along the line of ready discharge, but the system does not lend itself very well.

The reports of Dr. Copp make it clear that for some time it would be necessary to count on an annual increase of provision on the part of the State,

and a special report shows that nearly four-fifths of the increase is due to the decrease of the death rate and the rest to the fact that the number of admissions increased by about 66 new cases a year. The task of the State is:

1. To avoid overcrowding.

2. To provide not only shelter but such a long-headed plan of growth that the best results are attained.

Looking over the activity of the Massachusetts system, we find that it has begun to *rise to its task in Boston, but that for the rest it has adhered to the old-time principles; it has added and added to existing institutions and instead of completing any one district it has merely added its general State colony and an annex colony at Grafton.* To-day it wishes to make plans for the Worcester complex but as far as I can see without any relation to the district scheme or even to the recommendations of Dr. Copp concerning internal organization.

Any one who knows the vicissitudes of appropriations, and the difficulties of carrying plans into effect (I merely refer to the difficulty in getting a site for the Psychopathic Hospital) can see why the State Board might be anxious to proceed as judiciously as possible so as to avoid many discussions of detail, and to open the door to interests difficult to fathom. I do, however, feel that this caution has been carried too far and too much with the principles of a close corporation. The result is that too few leading persons have a clear knowledge of the direction in which practical psychiatry is moving; and when inquiries and suggestions arise they meet a set plan too inelastic to do justice to the fact that both within the service and outside the board there may be some serious thinking and work on these problems which may be disturbing to a set machinery, but not to a live and active organization.

I say, *the care of the insane has very properly been made a State monopoly. But this means that the State has to offer good and progressive care, and adequate measures for prevention and early care, and protection after discharge in every district.* Massachusetts has promised all this, but over the work on one point, the highly meritorious Psychopathic Hospital, it has to some extent lost its perspectives concerning its duties about the whole system and concerning Dr. Copp's own excellent plan with which I heartily concur — with the exception of the one point that all the units should have about *2,000 patients, a figure which I consider too high,* perhaps the best for the metropolitan district, and generally economical for housekeeping, but apt to be paid for by the inadequacy of the work for the patients and a growing acquiescence to the herding together at State expense.

Dr. Copp evidently felt that his own interest was becoming fixed on the point in which he came nearest to the realization of his plans. He became for a time superintendent of the Boston complex, thus implicitly declaring to the board the need of having some one else look out for the larger policy. One can hardly deny that over the concentration upon the Boston problem, the overcrowding in Danvers and in Worcester was too little helped as we shall see later. A number of additions to these hospitals are of very doubtful value. To my mind a forceful propaganda with illustrations by concrete facts in the

easily intelligible terms of a district conception would have taken root in the course of but a few years and would have brought better relief.

Whether there ever was a frank and clean-cut plan of providing for the insane according to actual needs and not merely according to policy in asking for appropriations, I do not know. Whether it was or was not, this is one of the things which requires repeating and repeating. It is an undeniable fact that the care of the insane is in most States a product of opportunism, and that nobody seems to have the courage to come before the public with a comprehensive plan and estimate irrespective of the temporary policies of taxation and the like. I realize the fact that the history of institutions shows a great amount of unreasonable opposition which makes it desirable to be diplomatic in the developments; yet a general plan and estimate could not do much harm.

As far as I can see the tinkering on the old institutions may have appeared a necessary policy to obtain the much needed improvements in Boston. Yet I cannot help deploring the fact that the wisest alternative was not kept before the people in illustration and especially also in figures until it could win out. *It is quite obvious that the metropolitan district needs more hospitals; that they should not be beyond a 5 or 10 cent trolley ride from the city; that they should divide between themselves the various districts of the city and become responsible for these districts.*

The fact that State care is not merely a control of standards but of the disbursements from the State, has undoubtedly entailed some difficulty in throwing an excessive responsibility on the central office. It is well enough managed to stand well in comparison with the New York system; and, yet, the central office is too heavily under the weight of financial policy to do its best planning. The decision to let the institutions grow to 2,000 patients limit leaves out of sight a number of very serious points which ought not to be dominated by exclusively administrative questions; yet it is possible that any other questions would have great difficulty to reach the consideration of a distant State board unless somehow it keep in close touch with those physicians who are in active work with the more modern tasks in practical psychiatry. We shall have to discuss this in our recommendations.

Let us now enter more specifically into the problem of internal organization of the work in institutional districts, the collaboration with the State Board, and the policy of the State that evolves from these considerations, from the point of view of a balance with the other demands which are made on the State.

The main point in the discussion of the more intimate problem is that here as elsewhere *not enough has been done to keep the hospitals small enough* so that the medical and administrative control can be kept in the same hands or then so as to cultivate enough strong personalities in the leading clinical positions. Practically everywhere absurdly confused and really gigantic tasks are put on individual physicians without any light ahead and but rarely hope of satisfaction except in more or less resignation. Of course we cannot is heard much oftener than of course we can. The consequence is that resignation in the form of a passive staying or a different type of resignation in the

form of pulling up stakes has marred the continuity of practically every State system in this country. In some places it happens with politics as an explanation, and here it happens because the internal organization fails to meet these emergencies sufficiently.

The difficulties met by the patients, by the nurses, by the physicians and by the superintendents have two sources: (1) one of the personal equation, difficult to handle, except by live competition fostered by good opportunities, and (2) one more formal, the creation of large hospitals and leaving their organization in the same form in which they were when they were small, an exclusive one-man system with insufficient chances for discussion and ventilation of the needs and of suggestions before more than one man.

During my visits I made a number of notes some of which form the basis of my general comments on the Massachusetts plan of administration, but most of which are such as would be misleading and captious if discussed out of the setting to which they belong. I want to begin with a general warning. The problem of the care of the insane is by no means finally solved and therefore necessarily a compromise. The best we can do to-day is to keep the program of work reasonably open and to *prevent any narrowing of issues to a mere problem of cheapest administration of a tool, i. e.*, the existing State institutions, as if they were the only thing to be thought of. They are no doubt the chief problem now, but are but a tool in the task of the State, which must not neglect over "State care" the constructive work of a mental health board and the care and prevention of mental disorders by work where the troubles develop and by an organization which will make definite offices responsible for the various ramifications of the work.

None of our present systems for the care of mental disease is above criticism. To be sure, public opinion is hardly more unjust in any other field, and one hates to say anything derogatory because it is at once lumped together with some of the sensational accounts of such a well-meaning book as "A Mind that Found Itself," or, much worse, with the distortion of occasional accounts by the yellow press or poorly reported newspaper psychiatry like the bewildering Thaw literature. Yet this very fact must not make us decline all criticism or discussion of the undoubted existence of shortcomings, and I am especially inclined to repress hesitancy because of the direct promise of Governor Foss to deal with the matter in keeping with the facts presented to him. That I have not been asked as directly by the State Board and the hospital authorities to discuss the results of my visits cannot deter me from making a number of comments and from accepting an opportunity for conjoint discussion.

If the one man is the responsible administrator and the only one who has the right to make the proposals to the governing boards, it is natural that after a certain point of complexity the interest in further proposals would only appear to him as trouble, unless the man has the breadth and executive ability which distributes the work and gets it done and does not allow undue accumulation. The Trustees cannot profitably be more than the moderators and representatives of public common sense. Whenever they go beyond this

rôle their lack of direct familiarity with the work leads to blunders or at least complications. My experience on this point has been varied enough to make me feel sure that this verdict implies no injustice. It is therefore obvious that we must not expect the actual help and light and much initiative from the Board of Trustees, whose very important function as a moderator and as the intermediary with the best sense of the people at large can never be rated too highly.

Reliance on a Central State Board or on a conference of the administrative heads or superintendents of the institutions alone would not either promise a clear solution. What strikes one first in our systems of State psychiatry is the small number of men and of positions that would have to be distinguished by undoubted proficiency in first-hand and first-class psychiatric work. With all my respect for the administrative sagacity of many of the men in leading positions, I cannot help feeling that their bringing up and personal leanings with few exceptions *emphasize the custodial needs as the final and most important ones whereas but few show outspoken concern about the essentially medical work that deals with the patient and the conditions that caused the patient to become a burden to the State.* If I say this, I want to be clearly understood that I do not want to say that this is all wrong, and that I have a remedy from a totally different side. I say that I unreservedly respect the often wonderful results attained even this way.

I know that the psychiatric market is not overstocked with men of wide experience in more than one direction, and that of two failings a hospital can least afford defective administration. At the same time a really big administrator will always see the need of efficiency in the medical departments. For sufficiently suggestive reasons, our men, however, are usually more willing to favor the laboratory than to relieve those who are at work among the patients, and I know it has been more difficult to work with my principles of emphasis on clinical work and interest in the patients than with the principles of emphasis on the laboratory. Massachusetts has, as far as I can see, risen admirably to meet the medical situation at least from the laboratory point of view and with such invasions of the clinical field especially as do not influence the clinical tenor and thereby the administration. Rather cleverly a contrast is made in some quarters between medical work and psychiatric work, and I am afraid, rather too eagerly grasped upon by those who have an interest in protecting themselves against the perplexing task of recasting the clinical responsibilities of the hospital. Now this is a matter which one cannot profitably discuss in a large association, but which can only be taken up in small circles where the persons present know and respect each other enough not to see petty insinuations back of the plain outspoken word. We can with perfect dignity accept the statement that the bulk of our men and positions in English speaking countries will deal chiefly with administrative issues, with avoidance of friction and economy as the ideal, but with the utmost tolerance if not outspoken indifference as to psychiatric standing. We need only look at the men who figure as experts in questions of life and death, and who — still more vital — thereby help in the shaping or distorting of

public opinion. If we had more psychiatric leaders in the right positions our work would be in better shape and the public would see something more definitely medical in our institutions for the insane. If our city hospitals put as little emphasis on the medical work and prided themselves so exclusively on the administrative head, the effects on the patients would quickly enough call for correction; but in psychiatry, the victims are apt to have clouded minds or they have not the ear of the free critic, and few outsiders can judge of the conditions from the patient's point of view. Do not misunderstand me. The best work ever done for the mental cases is what the administrators of our institutions have made possible. But the time has come for provisions in division of labor, and the question is how and with what aims in view?

My inquiry has for this very reason been carried on from the unusual point of view investigating *what the State actually does for the patient and for the community of which the patient is a part and from which the patient is sent into State care.* It is absolutely mandatory that we should look at the problem from both sides and especially from that of efficiency of care and prevention since the administration should never have grown to be the larger problem. Good administration is the most important tool for the care of the insane. But the first thing is to know what is to be administered. Well, of course, our hospitals and colonies. To be sure, yes; but as they exist now, they are makeshifts and must aim to serve definite districts, and we must be ready from time to time to revise all the facts and to recast the plans in keeping with our data.

To do this we must invent ways of taking the physicians at work with our patients more definitely into our counsel. If they are not now big enough men to be trusted with positions equal to those of the administrators, we must devise means of making them so in fact, perhaps a little ahead of their deserts, and giving them a chance for natural evolution without depriving ourselves too much of their help. We must try and get men interested in that part of the work which will tell most in the long run of State care, and we must find some ways of creating careers for successful workers and of getting more men with concrete experience in more than custodial psychiatry into the supervising bodies.

Our public organizations throughout the country and in most departments mostly deserve the criticism that the executive rests with too few persons, and those happen to be overburdened or often insufficiently familiar with the details of the problems and in our field trained only in the custodial administration problems, and overawed by the traditional spirit of home rule or suspicion of interference.

When I was in the service of the Worcester Insane Hospital, the only person with whom the policy of extension and organization rested was the superintendent. Open to criticism from the local board of trustees and from the similar institutions and from the State Board of Insanity, he undoubtedly had a very complex task. Yet in the face of all the difficulties he brought about some radical changes which made decided advances in the work of the hospital possible. Finally a limit was reached beyond which he did not

want to go without the endorsement from the State Board. An appeal at that time in my annual report proved unavailing, as far as I can see merely *because of the tradition* that no such endorsement had ever been asked for or was deemed necessary, or was not asked for by the superintendent directly. Thus the whole weight rested on the superintendent together with many other responsibilities that the decision of 1901 of my leaving for New York came inevitably, greatly to my personal regret. It may have seemed wiser to the superintendent and to the State Board to make it easy for me to leave and to put an end to an experiment and to launch out in the direction of the present policy. But, even if that should have been the case, that was a juncture at which I felt more keenly than ever the peculiar disadvantages of the Massachusetts system — and as far as that goes most of the hospital systems in this country. *My issue was such an organization of the medical work as to give the living patient the maximum attention — in distinction from the tradition which practically limited scientific accuracy to the laboratory and post-mortem room;* and further, such an organization of the hospital itself as would fit it for its service, the help and care of the different varieties of patients. But as long as enlargement went before fitting the work for the patients threatened to remain but a mere incident to the administration. I insert this personal reminiscence because it is a concrete instance of the nature of many of our difficulties.

Some difficulties are inherent in what I might call our national desire to keep away from any form of division of labor which would make it difficult to put at any time a perfectly untrained and green but devoted man into any position whatsoever. In Massachusetts conditions have more stability and specialized experience is more apt to be valued; but the reserve of the New England training and the mutual rule of noninterferences or fear of interference tends to create more or less forbidding close corporations.

The execution of Dr. Copp's district plan, and the completion of the district units, has also another difficulty in a general failing of our generation. Restlessness and insufficient satisfaction with things is too readily slurred over by mere plans of expansion. Instead of expansion I should like to discuss the intensive development of work on mental diseases and its organization.

Sufficient cohesion and disability of the workers is under the best of circumstances difficult enough to cultivate, to favor solid work in a branch of medicine which has to study life histories, *i.e.*, diseases apt to outlast the individual observer and therefore not bringing the assumptions and theories to as quick a test as happens in most other domains of medicine. Our hope must lie in the fact that intensive work on the formative period of the diseases will bring a flood of light, and for this we need clinical services for just as intensive work as we now have laboratories for work at the end of the diseases and for more or less detached problems of purely experimental research. It would be a deplorable illusion to assume that one place in a State should do for all this intensive clinical work. As far as possible every district unit should develop so as to maintain opportunities for productive first-class experience with the developing mental disorders. This naturally requires a

relatively free hand and much judgment and safe collaboration between the administrative workers of the hospital and the essentially medical staff, and where the policy of the hospital is directed constantly into expansion, the simple and plausible routine of erecting buildings creates the atmosphere, and overshadows the main purposes of the hospital which are left to shift more or less instead of making a definite impression on the mental health problem of the district and becoming in that way the culminating feature of the organization. The consequence is that the staffs often have not sufficient aims and ideals to keep together and to form determined co-operative units of work. For this reason I should suggest making plans for a well-proportioned institution and having it completed and open so that the work can begin not by accommodation, but for its own sake.

Dr. Thompson told me that he would not have been able to make of Gardner what he did if Gardner had been a mere colony of another hospital dependent on another superintendent. Yet in the same conversation, within five minutes, he spoke in favor of the enlargement of each hospital to the 2,000-patient limit. There is a practical conflict in which I want to emphasize that what Dr. Thompson felt with regard to the value of a relative independence in shaping his colony holds just as well in shaping the work and policy of the medical services to the point of real satisfaction. Personally I left Kankakee because the superintendent when he accepted my plans, which I later carried out in Worcester, assumed that he himself should take the leading share in the work, in a way which was an unpractical partnership, while in Worcester I was given a free hand. *I left Worcester because the chances of development were narrowed on little points, such as lack of open support by the State Board, and because a wider field seemed to offer greater independence of action.* [See page 159 in volume on "Occupation *versus* Restraint." — L. V. B.] Why should we not make for greater responsibility and greater relative independence on the part of the medical services as such? The hospital system which will solve that problem first will be the leader, and I shall never tire in my efforts to try ways and means to come nearer an even balance in this vital question of practical psychiatry.

To qualify ourselves for a discussion of the position of the medical services we should properly start from a report of the close and intimate work with the concrete cases, and specific problems of treatment and prevention, and pass to an analysis of the working of the immediately responsible set of officers, — the medical staff and nursing force, — then to the administrative foundation, and the collaborative forces in the local and central supervisory bodies. We might then finally aim at a general policy, which respects the concrete work with the patients as fundamentally the most important work, and administration as a tool, but as the most important condition for success in the chief aim.

Our armies and any active organization must have adequate administrative provisions for their maintenance and hygiene; but the action in the field of achievement of the ultimate aim is after all the culmination of their function. *A system of constructive mental health organization of a State must have officers who work in the field and others who work in the administrative branches; but*

it would be like subordinating the army to the quartermaster to put administrative issues and custodial care in the lead. The conditions are of course somewhat different from those in an army. The custodial problem is big and important, and it may even be one of our weapons in keeping hereditary degeneracy in check. But there is a problem of urgent field work, and certainly a crying need for reform in the clinical work and its direction to the points where work will be most telling. Now, if the army will succeed, the generals and the administrative and sanitary officers must work in a way that most business concerns are coming to — an automatically working system of business council.

Such a system need not in the least interfere with the fullest scope of authority of a responsible superintendent. Any man of sufficient caliber and normal confidence in himself and his judgment, could not possibly find fault with a practical distribution of responsibilities and the formation of an organized board of heads of the medical departments, very much as it exists at the Johns Hopkins Hospital. I do not see how he could do better than by having the reports of the heads of the departments come to discussion at regular conferences preceding the trustees' meetings and to vote on the final recommendations to the trustees as the matured conclusions of the heads of departments, to be passed on by the superintendent personally and with his comments (and I would in my own organization go as far as to say that heads of departments be given a hearing in a meeting of the official staff before their proposals are finally put on the table or turned down). The responsible medical workers, those who are doing the actual medical work, must be chosen from a position in keeping with their responsibilities, and the physicians in charge of the manageable medical units should be given a position on equal footing with the administrative superintendent if the hospital gets so large as to require one, and the work should then be carried on with regular meetings of the staff or commission of officers. The general plan would thus be akin to the organization in the Johns Hopkins Hospital. In order to avoid wire-pulling, it would be sufficient to maintain the rule that nothing shall be passed over the head of the superintendent, but everything through him, and that proposals of individuals should consider a majority vote of the medical board or conference of heads of departments as strictly binding. Any sufficiently good proposition should be able to win a majority vote of the interested workers.

It has been my personal experience that excessive concentration of all initiative in the hands of a man overburdened with responsibilities is apt to be a check on everything which means expansion beyond what the one executive officer can do himself. With a system that gives an opportunity for broadening out in the council and its decisions, there will also be means of finding help for the executive if the demands require a division of labor; and there will be far more likelihood that more men of caliber and strength are educated in the whole organization. Moreover, the way of formulating the business puts valuable material on record and passes well sifted propositions to the governing bodies.

There must be some ways of hearing the men who do the actual medical

work and assured ways of official contact. I should consider it a safe rule that no superintendent who does not at least supervise the medical staff meetings should be considered a full representative of his hospital.

I admit that my preference in general organization is that with one superintendent and two or three charge physicians, as long as the contact of the superintendent with the medical work is genuine. A good business manager should make such *an administration possible for a hospital up to 1,200 patients, and only in exceptional cases more than this.*

Where this is transgressed I might possibly favor the plan of Dr. Copp's several hospital units with medical heads, and an administrative superintendent, of equal standing before the trustees, and each responsible for his sphere. This is however problematic and should be avoided; the pattern taken from the excellently governed Massachusetts General Hospital does not in reality promise as much for our system as appears from the unusual conditions at McLean Hospital.

To get modern medical work considered as actively as possible in the deliberations of the State Board, I should urge that the executive officer and the associates and the board on their visits to the hospitals meet the men in charge of the departments together with the superintendent in a conjoint meeting and individually; this will make discussions automatic and most profitable. As I would like to state with more detail, the deputies and all the workers of the State Board could easily do their work so as to make it much more serviceable to the interests of the patients and to the State as a whole. This would, I feel sure, make a strong impression upon the activity and policy of the State Board, and would more surely promote the working out of a practical attack along the lines of district psychiatry. These are matters which should not be left to silent routine; but it would be well that occasions be furnished and demanded by the State Board to go over the status of things at stated intervals at the hospitals as in the semi-annual conferences, with a sufficiently intimate hearing to those who carry the responsibility for the various functions of the organization, and a comparing of notes between the hospitals. The visits of members of the State Board or of its staff of special workers should recognize that the study of the organization and efficiency of the medical and nursing staff is as much a duty as the investigation of the individual complaints which can only be part of a larger task of constructive organization.

We must now turn to the more intimate problem of the care of the patients and the nursing.

The foundation for stability and safe progress is an "atmosphere," and that depends on how much one organization can keep together profitably. Personal contact with persons having the whole at heart is the only safe blending force and medium of cohesion. From a certain point on, the size of the institutions creates merely formal ties unless the organization recognize subheads of sufficient personality and strength, and definite responsibilities and satisfaction concerning the right kind of loyalty to the work.

In the actual working of the force I have found, especially in one hospital, insufficient co-ordination of the physicians who do the work and are in charge

of the divisions and the nursing force itself. *We touch here a problem which can only be judged if we take up the study not only of complaints of injuries to body and feelings of the patients, but also the excuses of physicians for restraint and seclusion,* and lack of occupations and sufficient outings, and the difficulties found by the superintendent of nurses in doing justice to the demands.

I am told that only the types of injuries which might be apt to be brought into court are taken up seriously. There is rarely a record of all sides of the difficulty, and I have rarely seen investigations lead to really valuable results. The same with ordinary complaints. I know from my own experience how hard it was to compel even some of the very best assistants to make an accurate and full report in writing of the extent and results of their investigation. It is a very onerous task and I could not altogether blame them for making it as light as possible in keeping with the way these matters are handled by our public at large.

You know something about the New England conscience. *I must own up to my Swiss conscience and the feeling of justification and even responsibility to look into the things when they do not appear straight — even if I am not the official policeman, and even when I am not directly ordered by some binding law;* I am merely guided by the feeling that where there is smoke there is fire, or at least, the idea that the way to handle a fire in time is to take smoke seriously. Or the way to handle an epidemic is to treat the first case as a potential epidemic. *The one who sees the smoke or sees the first case of an epidemic must be willing to look into the facts and to see that they are attended to.* I therefore cannot help entering into every complaint with principles of equity, whereas there seems to prevail a tendency that for the maintenance of authority we have to give the one or other party the "benefit of doubt," and in *most hospitals it is the attendant who gets the benefit of the doubt* unless he be summarily dismissed. I do not believe that I made myself disagreeable to any of my employees by going at the facts without recognition of such special "benefit of doubt;" they gradually became accustomed to the method and to trust its fairness.

It is unfortunate that when a complaint is made, the authorities consider an inquiry too rapidly a reflection on their dignity and they look upon an investigation as a sign of lack of confidence. We must admit that most institutions train the trustees to look upon the patients as trouble-makers; the trustees are apt then to make a great deal of the injured feelings of the attendant because they do not know the patients from personal contact, and merely see in them a lot of those "unfortunate wards of the State" concerning the details of whose lives they rather depend on their imagination and traditional notions than on any knowledge of a good case record and an understanding of the experiments of nature. *Most investigations in our institutions are a process of whitewashing closely connected with a traditional feeling of false loyalty.* It seems to me that hospitals should be willing to have every accident, or even the slightest complaints, filed and handled in writing and open to the control of a responsible and experienced officer of the State Board, who could judge whether the inquiry into the facts was sufficient, and especially whether any adequate remedy was the result of the inquiry. To carry this to the

point of efficiency we must treat human nature as what it is and create our machinery so as to obtain results. *I am positive that wards conducted under the occasional scrutiny of an outside helper will very quickly have relatively few complaints* to handle than those which treat these difficulties as matters of no concern to any one beyond the institution. *To deal with trouble by merely discharging the immediate wrongdoer is often wrong.*

By an adequate remedy I would understand the definite assignment of responsibility for the occurrence and above all things of any slackness of the prevention of the occurrence to some definite person in authority or to some rule in need of readjustment. A large number of these troubles come from the difficulty in the handling of the nursing force. On this point Massachusetts has made much progress; but the organization is still in the making. Why should the physician who investigates complaints not rather consider himself the official investigator of the conditions which led to the cause for complaint? *How often are the responsible physicians and nurses brought together to discuss the means of such prevention?* Why not make the attending to complaints part of the much more important and worthy task of co-ordinative and constructive work, *i.e.*, of planning a better working of the methods?

The development of modern medicine has created for the nurses the standards of a profession who safeguard their own rights, which they must jealously guard by rules in which the patients are apt to be too little considered. Yet the patients are the first consideration and the organization of the nursing force must adapt itself to their needs or the patient will be the first to suffer. *If there happens to be a shortage or deficient assignment of nurses certain patients in some places go into seclusion, or into minor or major forms of restraint at least during the dinner hours of the nursing force, which is altogether wrong* as I believe it is better to make a modification in the program of eating of the healthy rather than a modification of the condition of the patient merely to make absolute regularity in the nurses' life possible. A body of attendants which in some hospitals changes over four times a year is too far from Utopia to even deserve the unqualified title nursing-force. As I have said, for some reason the larger institutions have fewer and fewer employees personally known to the responsible heads and officers, and I am strongly under the impression that the lack of familial cohesion in a large institution creates formal relations which are easily broken and which fail to keep active. I came across rather suggestive facts. In one place the management of the nurses is taken out of the hands of the physician in control of the patients, and thereby the most personal points of the work are sacrificed to administrative expediences. The training schools for nurses have done a great deal of good, but they have too much the purpose of training the nurses for outside work at the expense of faithful and attentive service with the patients at hand. The training leads to shifting of the nurses according to a scheme extraneous to the responsibilities of the hospital, *i.e.*, the care of the patients. With the training school comes the introduction of the superintendent of nurses, and a program of changes of nurses approved by the superintendent or assistant superintendent, and there it is necessary not to lose the contact among the

actual workers. Safe methods can only prevail where the nursing remains largely subordinate to the physicians responsible for groups of patients. As soon as administrative considerations take the control and right of decision too far from where it counts most, *i.e.*, too far from the patients, we reach the danger limit of our modern craze of administrative centralization. The consideration is perfectly feasible and successful in most places. Where it is not heeded we find undesirable compromises.

In general hospitals it may seem immaterial how often we change nurses, although one has to have but little personal experience in being sick to appreciate what that means. In any case, with mental disorders it takes a long time to get into touch with the individuality of the patients so that one can handle them intelligently; and under those circumstances the principles in use in general hospitals certainly have got to be modified very radically to make efficient work possible in our cases.

I repeat here, that *poor handling of the nursing problem and architectural difficulties are undoubtedly at fault in the lack of occupation, the lack of opportunities of getting the patients out of doors — so glaringly present in several of the hospitals* — and the indifferent results are responsible for a deficiency of the right kind of loyalty to the work, which holds at least for two thirds of the nursing body; and surely also affects seriously the devotion of the physicians.

A great problem is the question of how to make official visits useful. It used to be a matter of great disappointment to me that neither the trustees nor the State Board nor the public were ever given a correct picture of what the hospital did and did not achieve in the task which it was meant to perform. I realize that one does not like to lay oneself open to the criticisms which might be taken advantage of by unscrupulous persons, but this is no sufficient reason to keep the Board of Trustees uninformed of existing drawbacks. The personal equation of those who have access to the Board of Trustees may occasionally demand an attitude of self-protection if the man who makes the complaints has to admit that it is partly a lack of resourcefulness of his own. It is natural that one must make it very easy for him to show things exactly as they are. *The feverish activity in scrubbing and in fixing up the wards for the trustees' visits and the procession through these wards usually in conversation about extraneous matters cannot possibly be the most profitable form of collaboration.* Visits on the part of the State Board which are visits only to one or two officers, absolutely miss the point. Contact with the work and openness of discussion is the only fit and acceptable condition and somebody must counteract those who naturally would be inclined to make things formal. All this would inevitably do away with just such lack of discussion as obtained in the building plans of 1897.

There is another point in which the State Board can help the medical problem proper in maintaining standards and regularity of work. It should, I believe, get reports concerning the ways in which vacancies are handled. Massachusetts is favorably situated in not being bothered by a bureaucratic civil service law concerning assistant physicians, such as stifles a great deal

of the individual initiative in the New York system. As soon as vacancies are endured any length of time however it shows that either there is something wrong about the work at the hospital or about the interest of the men in charge, and if they cannot attend to this most important matter it ought to be charged up against them as among the strongest evidences of unfitness. Anything of this kind can be done in a perfectly impersonal way and should be a matter of report to the Board of Trustees, to the State Board, and to the Governor. A similar openness of report and discussion should prevail with regard to the general arrangements about the handling of admissions. The attitude with regard to voluntary cases, and with regard to emergency care which should not be left merely to the arbitrary decision of one superintendent but should become a matter of mutual discussion and adaptation between the local unit and the larger body of the State authorities. Your semi-annual conferences do much in this line. I know so well how smoothly these things work without any autocratic concentrations of power, they are altogether a question of qualification and tact and sufficiency of personnel on the part of the co-ordinating board. In the New York system in an extremely delicate position I make it a point not to ask for any authoritative rulings, but I stood up for open and public discussion as the best means of adjusting standards. Should the State Board happen not to prove effective on matters of this sort it would merely mean that the personnel is not sufficient for the task.

A matter which I inquired into in most hospitals was the burden by cases that did not properly belong in our hospitals. Many of these cases come from the Lancaster School for Girls, and in former years also especially difficult cases of epilepsy played a great rôle. From what I have been able to ascertain the *Lancaster School depends on rather rigid discipline and as soon as its methods do not avail the patients are apt to be relegated to hospitals for the insane.* It would I think be to the great advantage of the school if they would themselves evolve an annex for the management of difficult cases, under the responsible care of somebody trained in a hospital for the insane and familiar with the principle of educational discipline in contrast to reglementary discipline. The patients sent from there very often do not get what they need at the State hospitals, and *the school itself would do well to rub up against different methods of handling things which I feel sure would add a great deal to the efficiency of the methods of life to the average girl of the school.*

In this respect, I wish to say that I am not an advocate of lax discipline, but of discipline which prevents disorders rather than discipline which tries to patch them up by punishment.

Concerning the relative centralization and decentralization, I should suggest the development of district organization, with its necessary ramifications, and support of the patients from each district and maintenance of the patients within the district wherever possible, so that the district can be studied and administered as a unit. The central body should be as it is now a co-ordinator and analyzer of standards, and in its capacity as intermediator between the district organizations and the legislative and executive State

authorities and the people as a State it shall maintain an advisory capacity with ample resources to co-ordinate and classify the necessary facts and to keep them in evidence and to use them in the recommendations of general and special policy.

Just as the Boards of Trustees can only be mediators and as it were representatives of the common-sense of the people, so the State Board in its narrower sense forms a council of persons interested in the whole range of State care and State responsibility. It is highly desirable that the medical and preventive work form a point of equal interest as the custodial work and business administration.

From the point of view of evolution of the best care, I deplore that the expenses for the care of the patients have been taken from the communities and put on the State as a whole. If Boston or a country district or a mill center have less hygienic conditions than other regions, nothing brings it home as well as a clearly understood assignment of taxation. At least a proportionate part of the excise revenue should go towards paying for the excess in alcoholic diseases. The State should regulate the amounts of money to be paid per patient but it should not centralize the handling of the money and cause the bringing together of sums of appropriation which sway the judgment of the legislator away from the consideration of the purposes involved. I could give interesting examples of how necessary improvements were held up in New York owing to the multiplication of each item by 13 or 14 — only to be granted after periods of discouragement after the need had become forcibly demonstrated — and after periods of undesirable discouragement.

There are, with proper organization within the working body of the State Board, ways of keeping the administrative and medical problems up to standard without dangerous concentration and consolidation of interests too far away from where the facts are in evidence and where the men and women work, on whose fervor and devotion the actual success depends and whom the State organization should serve as a helper and co-ordinator and as a means of articulation with the rest of the problems of the State.

Before summing up my conclusions I ought to review what I was able to gather concerning the fate of requests and recommendations actually formulated. It is remarkable how little there was to be obtained in this respect, either because of reserve or because there were not sufficiently definite policies the hampering of which might have been a matter of keen regret or interest. The chief complaints concerned the overcrowding and the refusal of various appropriations. What I think on these points can easily be deduced from my previous remarks. I am convinced that there are so many intrinsic and inevitable discouragements in practical psychiatry that it does not pay to create a spirit of disappointment. It gives a cinch to the lazy man and is disheartening to the serious worker who must be able to count on stability and on the value of his judgment. If I understood Your Excellency correctly, the financial policy was one of liberality provided that enough of the expense was likely to go to the root of the problem and not merely into more or less indefinite minor improvements. These matters are of course always difficult

to judge at a distance and require a full and perhaps sometimes repeated review and discussion by competent and patient investigators, such as the State Board should maintain as a matter of routine. In the main I do believe it an excellent principle to demand on such occasions a more or less far-reaching plan of what complete organization is aimed at, so that the position of individual requests can be judged as fairly as possible.

In the main anything that improves the outlook of successful work for the patients would readily appeal to any one, and is not likely to be turned down. *When we come to enlargements two things are worthy of consideration: Who needs it, and for what purpose? And how does that demand fit into the program of the State and the working of the institution?* My discussion of this point is plain enough with regard to the developments at the Worcester Hospital. There is, however, a very important point in this problem: To cancel a plan for increase in one place must be balanced by adding a corresponding quota somewhere else in the system, because the State is sadly in arrears in its provisions. I also want to emphasize that it pays the State to improve the work in each unit until it brings satisfaction, and I should want especially to put in a word for the provisions for the physicians who sacrifice many advantages of ordinary life and too often show it by an attitude of undue resignation. Give them a chance to live and grow and you will do the best thing for the standards of work.

The review of the condition of the individual hospitals would be too long, and, to be of value, too intimate for a general account. There are many fine features, and when Boston will be safely launched on a working basis, the other districts will not only have their innings, but a most interesting plant to study for the making of their own plans.

I beg to take this opportunity to thank you for the very hospitable and kindly reception you gave me last summer. I hope what I discussed to-day means not only a certain progress in my own grasp on the facts and a better formulation of the State's duties and opportunities than I had before I undertook the work, but also a basis for a valuable discussion on your part. *I have not spoken of utopias, but kept closely to approved examples,* and I only regret that I had not time to trim my notes to get the language wholly into harmony with the spirit which actuates me — *not a spirit of criticism but a deep desire to see practical psychiatry do its work at the most effective end. Custodial efficiency, yes; and in addition to that full encouragement of intensive work for the patients and for prevention at least of relapses.*

After a short discussion which added nothing of value and in which the main issues were apparently avoided, the meeting concluded with a few words from Governor Foss, as follows:

I would like to say that I think we are very thankful to Dr. Meyer for coming to us to-day and for the paper which he has presented. I want to say

this personally — that I am deeply interested in this work. I knew very little about it. That is the trouble with the State generally — that the people know so little about our own institutions, and I believe in giving these subjects greater publicity. Let people know what is being done and how the work is being carried on. I think this coming here to-day is productive and will be productive of great good. We ought to get together oftener and discuss these matters, and I think some publicity ought to be given to these discussions.

As a layman I have not known anything about it, and I think that is true generally throughout the State — that we have not appreciated the work which the State is attempting to do in all these directions. Now let us have another paper, and let the State Board take this matter up and get a more general discussion — invite the members of the legislative committees to attend and have a better understanding of the needs of the institutions; and if they are properly presented, I assure you that I know enough about what is going on here to say that we shall have the necessary money and these salaries shall be increased and we shall have the most efficient help. . . .

It is interesting to note Dr. Meyer's reflections as expressed in a letter written several days after his return, and I am sure all who are interested in the development of the work for the mentally ill in Massachusetts will be glad I preserved this valuable letter.[1]

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, February 10, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I am looking back with somewhat divided feelings upon my two days spent in Boston. In the main I do believe that much has been done to break the ice which had threatened to make impossible any collaboration between the two sets of forces, one of which is aggressive for reform and the other forced into a position of defence of its own judgment and policy. And I believe that I have also been able to suggest some points which will tend to make your work count for more. While on the first day the parole was, "If Briggs is put on the State Board there will be a general resignation," on the second day the attitude was not as radical, and Dr. Southard, at least, thought that the cause for which he was responsible was larger than the feelings which could only justify an outbreak of temper and not the act of a sober and broad judgment. He certainly has eliminated from his stock repertoire a number of incriminations, and *I believe that if there were a way to bring our friend Dr. Channing to the manly act of owning up what led him to play such a nefarious rôle of insinuation without frankness, a great deal*

[1] For other letters from Dr. Meyer, following his report, see pages 54, 82, 93.

would drop away from the difficulty which forced you into an anomalous position and did you and your cause a great deal of injustice. I duly felt, at the moment, as if the man should be put on his honor to make a clean-cut statement to you, before any further discussion should be allowed. I feel sure that a whole string of insinuations started from that point, and while I would not want to make him responsible for all the results, he ought to realize that he set the ball rolling in an unmanly fashion.

On Thursday Dr. Southard gave me a pamphlet, House No. 2167, dated July 17, 1911, and signed by Dr. Copp, which, if I had had it, would not have modified my statements in my talk on Wednesday, but would have called for additional remarks, more emphatic than what I said concerning the appropriations. Between you and me, I must call it absolutely preposterous that men of the caliber of these experts and such off hand decisions, only partly based on the work of these experts and not on the conjoint review of the facts, should upset the well-considered activities of a whole number of official boards. The only derogative comment I have to make on this pamphlet is that it evidently did not get wide enough circulation and did not precipitate such a full thrashing out as alone can do justice to such serious practice.

You have an extremely interesting and difficult task at this present juncture, *i.e.*, that of (1) making the Governor responsible not to stop plans of work unless something better is put in their place, and in harmony with those who have to execute it; this latter clause is of importance because our form of government is absolutely dependent upon subordination to the concensus of the responsible workers; (2) I hope that in justice to me, any proposals which will come forth before the Legislature and a wider public must be absolutely free of those things which one has a right to say only within the circle of the officially responsible persons. The press and the public are too irresponsible and too little trained to be able to discount many of the statements contained in my report; and I feel that I must make you responsible for the safeguard of what is absolutely essential to guarantee the success of my campaign for medical psychiatry.

My report is handed to the Governor to form a foundation for your counsel with him. It is intended to give him some facts which I felt any program for the future should consider most carefully; and at the same time we should realize that we cannot run ahead of our generation, and that it is the duty of the framer of advice to put before legislative bodies means to choose the alternative, so that some of them at least can be carried through by the people living at this date, with all their prejudices and preoccupations.

I had a brief interview with Dr. Thompson. I do not feel that he quite rose to the attitude which the ideal man in his position might have shown; but there is no telling what he may come to if he follows his own natural inclination to be absolutely frank and square with the Governor, and to discard the memories of strife which those who belonged to the State Board last year could probably never wipe out.

Mr. Sherman intimated that there were going to be copies made of my paper. You will, I hope, help me in seeing to it that they only get into the hands of those who can understand the very complex topic, and who would

not break into the compact that it is a report to the Governor and his Council, to the State Board and the hospital authorities; and that any considerations and the results coming from it should, as far as possible, be the result of joint deliberations with this body. I am a little afraid lest copies might be made containing errors, owing to the bulk of the whole thing and the relatively numerous pencil notes.

Taking it all in all, I do believe that an important service was rendered to the cause, and that all concerned are seriously inclined to help in the furtherance of the aims in view, with the suppression of anything that might hurt unnecessarily or satisfy personal feelings rather than the needs of the cause.

If it were possible at all to help and advise in the formulation of recommendations that you may arrive at, I assure you that I shall not shirk the work.

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

CHAPTER II

Governor Foss and the State Board of Insanity. — Attendance at Democratic Convention, Baltimore, when Woodrow Wilson was nominated. — Governor Foss sends Dr. Briggs' Name to the Council October 18, 1911. — Letters on his Appointment. — Activities of the Opposition increase. — Petition for Henry P. Field. — Dr. John W. Bartol joins in Opposition. — Confirmation refused November 29, 1911. — The Medical Coterie give up their Fight for H. P. Field as hopeless

To go back to the summer of 1911, and take up the history of events from the time of the passage of my bills on restraint and social service. Governor Foss, in his sixty-fifth Special Message, which was sent to the Legislature on June 28, 1911, charged that there was nothing approaching a standard rate of expenditures in the different hospitals, and that there was a lack of any definite system of governing the scale of expenditure; he suggested a more direct control by the State Board. The Governor approved the regular appropriations of the State Board and the institutions under its charge, but urged that all these expenditures be brought at once to a uniform level of business economy, and *recommended that the authority of the State Board be so strengthened as to make it directly responsible for the immense expenditures incurred in those institutions.* But while the Governor approved the regular appropriations, the special appropriations sought by the various institutions — for extension of buildings, additional facilities, new nurses' homes and the pur-

chases of additional land — were not approved in many instances.

In regard to an item of $250,000 approved by the Legislature for the payment of land already taken at the Boston State Hospital, the Governor said:

> I deplore the fact that this institution was located on such high-priced land, and particularly regret that an opportunity was left for a rise in the value of the land after the hospital had started and the necessity of purchasing such land by the State had become apparent. The objection to this procedure needs no explanation.

Before writing his message, he brought on to Massachusetts Joseph H. Byers of New Jersey and Frederick H. Mills of New York, well-known experts in investigation and the reorganization of institutions. His recommendations were partly based on their report.

Dr. Copp, in House Document No. 2167, July 17, 1911, answered the Governor's criticisms. He stated that inasmuch as the Governor had approved all appropriations for current expenses, which constituted 81.79 per cent of all appropriations requested that year, it was fair to assume that the experts could see no way in which to effect an immediate economy.

Regarding the Governor's disapproval of certain special appropriations for buildings, improvements, etc., Dr. Copp said that the reasons assigned for the disapproval were not well-founded, but were based on —

1. Cursory and superficial investigation.
2. Failure to grasp the situation and the main purposes of such appropriations.
3. Errors of fact.
4. Incorrect use of terms and comparison of unlike conditions of widely separated periods of time.
5. Discarded methods and faults already corrected.
6. Failure to make allowances for differences due to stage of progress and gradually disappearing, or for essential variations in character of work.

He then cited examples under each of the foregoing headings. From the records of visits made by the experts, Byers and Mills, Dr. Copp concluded:

It thus appears that the experts did not visit three institutions, that they spent two hours at one, three hours and a quarter at another, three hours and a half at another, from five to six hours and a half at each of four others, one day at another, eight hours in two visits at another, and four days and two hours in six visits at the Westborough Hospital. (Compare with record of Dr. Copp's visits in any one year.)

Dr. Copp's report concludes:

Therefore the State Board of Insanity is firmly of the opinion that its authority at the present time is sufficient; that uniformity of expenditures is steadily and satisfactorily progressing; that local efficiency of the institutions is being promoted to a marked degree; that it would be seriously impaired by the exercise of greater central control; that such impairment would be disastrous in the extreme to real economy; that central control would be dangerous in its exposure to political influences; that it would drive out of the State service the type of men who are essential to maintain and raise the standards of administration and treatment of patients; that the results of central control have been proven to be less satisfactory and less economical than those of supervision backed by education, expert assistance, persistent investigation and distribution to the different institutions of comparative information, as is now practiced and capable of extension under the supervision of the State Board of Insanity.

The Governor's stand was criticized or praised by the newspapers, according to their respective political policies.

The "Boston Post" of August 27, 1911, in a long article about hospital abuses still frequent at this time, said:

It was Dr. Briggs of Beacon Street, a well-known alienist, who brought the conditions of the insane hospitals to the attention of Governor Foss. Dr. Briggs is the man who has been fighting for several years to have restraint abolished in the insane hospitals. He said that it was the system of hiring attendants that was responsible for the numerous cases of brutal treatment. Dr. Briggs, in an interview at the time of the Lawson Case, said that men who had been discharged from one hospital for brutal treatment could go to another and secure a position. He also said that the staff of attendants

shifts twice, and sometimes more, each year; that the kind of men thus obtained were naturally very inferior. Dr. Briggs at this time quoted Dr. C. W. Page, formerly in charge of the Danvers Asylum, to the effect that nurses, knowing that restraint can be used, were likely to assume a hostile attitude towards the patient. Dr. Briggs in his communication said that the present conditions were a blot upon the record of the State, and that means should be taken at once to bring the institutions to an up-to-date standard.

As a result of the public outcry in regard to alleged abuses in the State institutions Governor Foss employed a number of other experts, and sent James A. Watson — who was elected Boston city councilman for the following year — to investigate the management of certain State hospitals for the insane. Mr. Watson made a careful study of the situation during the summer of 1911 and published a report of his findings. In spite of the fact that some of the newspapers of the day, especially the "Boston Herald", made light of this report and of Mr. Watson as "the Governor's expert," they were able to assail only the manner and not the matter of that article, being particularly hilarious in regard to Mr. Watson's lack of familiarity with medical terms. But it was impossible for them to refute his charges or dim the graphic picture which he drew of carelessness, neglect and brutality in some of the institutions. Indeed, the callousness with which the "Herald" of December 4, 1911, ridiculed Mr. Watson's account of the most brutal treatment of helpless patients by attendants in certain hospitals can hardly be too severely condemned.

An interview with "Jerry" Watson was published in the "Boston Post" of February 9, 1913, from which I extract the following:

Ever since he jumped into politics when he was twenty-one, he has pursued a picturesque and persistent path. The same appealing characteristics

which won him the honor of being voted the most popular conductor in the employ of the old West End Street Railway, when he was twenty-three, have brought a series of political triumphs, in which the glory largely belongs to himself, for he has been his own campaign committee, his own press agent and his own candidate. . . .

He is quoted in this article as saying:

"While I favor pensions for aged city employees, I will go farther and say that every aged and infirm citizen, whether employed by the city or not, should be given a pension during his declining years.

"I believe that every meeting of the city council should be held in public, in the aldermanic chamber, and that the council chamber be reserved for public hearings, where the fullest knowledge of our doings should be had by the city which we represent."

The councilman takes pride in his old American ancestry, declaring that some of the propensities which his political opponents criticize may be his by right of birth, for his maternal grandmother was a full-blooded Mohawk Indian.

While a member of the common council he introduced the orders providing for the Union label upon city printing, one day off for firemen and the eight-hour day for city employees. He opposed the increase of pay for the police. He helped to secure the first appropriation for the Cabot Street bath-house. . . .

Mr. Watson was nominated and elected to the House of Representatives for 1900 and 1901. . . . He is widely represented as possessing a quickness of mind and fertility of resource that are remarkable. . . . Many times Mr. Watson has stumped the city for one cause or another, but always in his own fashion. His stump stories have often relieved the monotony of rallies. . . . His one-man rallies in behalf of himself, sometimes held in a coupé in some such central spot as in front of the Court House in Pemberton Square, would draw spectators from every walk. One thing that he never does when speaking publicly is to talk "over the heads" of any one within hearing distance. . . . He may be described as a Democrat, but he is not averse to "boosting" any one in whom he has confidence, no matter what his party. He is the kind of man who can, and sometimes does, write his own campaign songs.

Towards the end of the year 1911 Governor Foss was approached by prominent politicians who wished to use his name as a presidential candidate in the Democratic Convention at Baltimore. He absolutely declined to allow his name to be used as a candidate for Vice-President, saying he preferred to be Governor of Massachusetts. Few know how near he came to being the successful candidate for President of the

Sincerely Yours
Eugene N. Foss

United States. Woodrow Wilson was nominated for President at this Convention. In company with Governor Foss I attended this memorable convention and saw Wm. J. Bryan force his way to the platform amidst catcalls and howls of derision and even physical attacks. His hat was battered over his head and he was repeatedly struck on the shoulders and back. But when he gained the platform and began speaking he held the whole Convention spellbound with his oratory. I shall never forget the scene when the students from Princeton arrived, or when Woodrow Wilson, the greatest man this country has produced since Lincoln, was acclaimed the candidate of the Democratic party for President of the United States.

In a letter written me by my friend Dr. Henry J. Berkley of Baltimore, on October 7, 1911, he says:

> It is hard for me to give any advice about what should be done in Massachusetts. Certainly the system now in vogue there is rotten to the core, and the only thing possible for the Governor to do is to strike at the root of the evil and appoint a committee to report to him what changes should be made.

On October 18, 1911, Governor Foss sent his appointment of me as a member of the State Board of Insanity to the Council for confirmation, in the place of the Hon. Henry P. Field of Northampton, whose term had expired. Mr. Field was also chairman of the executive committee of the Republican State Committee. This nomination, coming as it did before I had fully made up my mind to allow my name to be used, was a complete surprise to me. I first learned of my nomination by seeing my name on the bulletin board of the "Boston Daily Globe." I rushed to the Governor to ask him to withdraw my name, and he held up the appointment for a week; but his intentions had already been

made public and the tactics immediately employed by those opposed to me were such that I determined, under the advice of such men as Meyer and others, not only to allow my name to be used, but to make a fight for it. The opposition lost no time in circulating false stories maliciously intending to injure my practice and my reputation.

At the same time letters of congratulation came pouring in, as if my appointment had actually been confirmed. Dr. Henry M. Chase, associated with me for many years at the Boston Dispensary, and intimately acquainted with my work, wrote on October 19, 1911:

> My Dear Dr. Briggs: — I congratulate you on your appointment, which has just come to my notice. It is the best appointment the Governor has made. I hope there will be no further obstacle to your plans that I had the pleasure of knowing.
>
> Sincerely,
>
> Henry M. Chase.

As I have said before, the "Boston Herald" was influenced by the coterie of physicians who were opposed to me, and in commenting on the nominations made by Governor Foss, it made the following editorial statement on October 19, 1911:

> The appointment of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs to the State Board of Insanity may have a beneficial effect in quieting the ill-advised agitation which he has long maintained for restrictive legislation against those who have the custody of the insane. Dr. Briggs' motives have been excellent; but that his plan was wise is unlikely. To put him in a place of responsibility in direct acquaintance with what the State institutions are now doing should lead to a better understanding all around, and probably to a settlement of the case "out of court."

Governor Foss referred to me in his speeches, stating why he had sent my name in. At Conway, Mass., in the Town Hall, where he made an address on

October 14, 1911, in speaking of the insane institutions, he said:

> The fault I have to find with these institutions is one of policy as directed by the State Board, and not at all with the resident management. It is because there must be a change in policy that I have selected such a man as Dr. L. Vernon Briggs for a place upon the State Board of Insanity.

At the same time Dr. Copp tried to discourage my work in many ways. Among other things he put out propaganda to the effect that the restraint bill legalized restraint for the first time in the history of our country. My answer was that it was better to have a law which regulated restraint, and which would either be obeyed or broken, than to have no law and no control over the attendants or others who abused the use of restraint, often to the injury and suffering of the patients.

The "Boston Globe" of October 19, 1911, in commenting upon the Governor's appointments, said:

> In the appointment of Dr. Briggs, who was the father of the bill against the use of "restraints" in insane institutions, it was facetiously remarked that the Governor had scored on the enemy, for Mr. Field, whom Dr. Briggs succeeds, is chairman of the executive committee of the Republican State Committee.

Mr. C. W. Barron, in an interview published in the "Boston Sunday Globe" of October 22, 1911, is quoted as saying:

> The nomination of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs to be a member of the State Board for the care of our insane is a progressive step, and entitles Governor Foss to the thanks of every humanitarian and well-wisher of Massachusetts. I don't believe that any cut-and-dried, conservative Governor, patting Massachusetts on the back for her glorious history and traditions, could have stood with Dr. Briggs and against the Trustees as Governor Foss did.

The following letter addressed to the Governor's secretary is an answer to a letter from the Governor

which was one of a series he sent out to ascertain my qualifications, after he had sent my name to the Council and objections to his choice had been made by certain physicians:

October 22, 1911.

Mr. Dudley M. Holman, *Boston.*

Dear Mr. Holman: — I am in receipt of your letter of the 20th instant, and in reply enclose a letter to Governor Foss, which you may make any use of that my poor influence may afford. Dr. Briggs must be "laying up treasures in Heaven," for certainly the post the Governor is offering him will bring him none on earth. I consider it a rather hazardous step for him to take, and one that will influence his future for years. I hope I am wrong.

May we hope to have you with us before long to visit Frankford and Springfield, the latter without lock or bar?

I remain, with regards,

Very sincerely,

Henry J. Berkley.

The enclosure was as follows:

Henry J. Berkley, M.D.
130 Park Avenue, Baltimore

October 22, 1911.

Hon. E. N. Foss, *Executive Chambers.*

Dear Sir: — I have heard of your appointment of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Boston as a member of the State Board of Lunacy. All of Dr. Briggs' friends in Baltimore congratulate you on this appointment, as we regard your nominee as an able man, thoroughly devoted to the care of the insane, and having a thorough knowledge of what is required, in both a scientific and practical way, to aid these unfortunates to a more favorable place than they now occupy in many institutions throughout this broad land. May we soon hear of Dr. Briggs' confirmation.

I remain,

Very respectfully,

Henry J. Berkley.

A letter to Dr. Meyer brought this reply:

October 23, 1911.

Mr. Dudley M. Holman, *Executive Department, State House, Boston, Mass.*

My Dear Sir: — I cannot see how the clipping from the "Transcript" can have any weight in this matter; and, on the other hand, I do not see

why the Council should have to take notice of *my* opinion. The *facts* must decide, and to my mind they are plainly as follows:

Dr. Briggs has a record of work with the insane not commonly known but easy to ascertain. If the time spent with individual patients and in partnership with Dr. Channing and his present relation as physician to Dr. Channing's relatives and others is known, I do not see how there can be any question of lack of experience, nor, as a matter of fact, any likelihood that the experience of Mr. Field is in any way superior.

As to the reforms, there are some worthy gains in the form of the Butler Ward, the working of which is, I believe, appreciated by all who know it. Moreover, there must be other concrete achievements, and perhaps even the argument that if certain needs are properly represented in the State Board it should no longer be necessary to use the statute books and legislation for such matters as the regulation of restraint. The best way to use a reformer, unless he is merely a hopeless interferer, — which certainly cannot be said of Dr. Briggs, — is to make him responsible for the problems. The State Board is large enough to balance the zeal, if there should be any injudicious zeal. Moreover, the whole temper and type of personalities worthy of a position on the State Board should alone give sufficient assurance of smooth sailing, even if Dr. Briggs should enter as a representative of a minority. Personally I believe that getting a little better acquainted with each other will, in this case, lead to a blending of the conflicting factions.

These are arguments which must stand or fall on their own merits. I have strong reasons not to allow my name to be used in the matter. As I said above, the Council must decide such matters on real *facts* and not on authority, and the extent to which the official faction has decided on home rule and resentment against interference by outsiders would greatly jeopardize my influence in the future. As I hope that I may yet be of decided use to the cause of the insane in this country, I have to use my judgment and experience concerning the ways in which I can do the most good. That experience tells me that I achieve more through a presentation of uncontrollable facts than by using the foibles of those who merely go by authority.

With my most sincere wishes for success, I remain,

Very respectfully yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

An old friend from Hanover wrote me this characteristic letter:

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

BOSTON, October 23, 1911.

MY DEAR VERNON: — Yours received. I am praying for the confirmation of your appointment and I can see no reason why it should not be. I wonder at the source of your information as to my political activity. I have pur-

posely avoided any action or discussion of politics, as I knew that office of the Legislature, composed of all political parties, is an emasculated position. As to wanting or expecting any favors from Governors, I do not.

My present situation suits me, and all I ask is to be let alone. Whether I am or not depends. However things may go, I am like the fellow who didn't care if he went to Heaven or to Hell — I have friends in both places. I shall have a very loyal friend on the State Board of Insanity.

Yours,

H. S. T. [Horace S. Tower]

The following is an editorial in the "Boston American" of October 23:

Under the influence of Dr. Briggs we may hope that more of those who are committed to our insane asylums will find it unnecessary to return after they are discharged because during their first restraint they fail to receive the benefit of careful and scientific treatment intended to effect a permanent cure. Dr. Briggs is an expert in that branch of his profession, and he is an enthusiast.

On October 26, 1911, Dr. William Sturgis Bigelow, who resented the attacks upon me, wrote:

56 Beacon Street, Boston.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — It is good to know that you are still as active and effective as ever in behalf of your friends and the community.

Yours very truly,

W. S. Bigelow.

I also received a pleasing letter from Dr. William Mabon, superintendent of the Manhattan State Hospital, Ward's Island, New York:

October 31, 1911.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Dr. Briggs: — I was very glad, indeed, to get your note of the 30th instant. I will be pleased to see you at any time that is convenient for you to visit the hospital. I regret to learn that the Council failed to act upon your nomination to be a member of the State Board of Insanity.

Yours very truly,

William Mabon.

Soon the opposition became still more active, headed by Dr. Walter Channing, and from this time on *their attacks were malicious, relentless, vicious and unceasing.* (Dr. Channing was proprietor of a private sanitarium, also chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Boston State Hospital and the Psychopathic Hospital.) Letters began to come to the State House addressed to Lieutenant Governor Frothingham, attacking my character and reputation. The opposition knew, of course, that it was useless to attempt to influence Governor Foss who had made the nomination, and most of their communications were addressed to the Lieutenant Governor, as member of the Council. To refute the statements made by the Channing coterie, other letters were directed to Frothingham by my friends.

Dr. Philip Coombs Knapp, Secretary of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology, was one of Channing's most active supporters. The wording of the following letter from him is almost identical with that of a vote which was passed against me by their society a year later (November 21, 1912). It is possible that this vote may have been passed two years successively, to be sent to different Lieutenant Governors, but I have proof only of the one under this date.

THE CHARLESGATE
BEACON STREET

BOSTON, October 22, 1911.

Hon. LOUIS A. FROTHINGHAM.

MY DEAR SIR: — Dr. L. Vernon Briggs has recently been appointed to the State Board of Insanity.

Dr. Briggs was responsible last winter for certain unnecessary, unwise and impractical legislation in regard to the treatment of the insane, and for certain criticism of the institutions for the insane in the Commonwealth, which was not founded upon proper knowledge of the work done by those institutions. His ill-advised interference with the work of the hospitals and

his lack of knowledge of the best interests of the insane, as shown by his agitation last winter, render it very undesirable that he be confirmed as a member of the State Board.

Hoping that you can attend the meeting of the Council and vote against his confirmation, I remain,

Yours very truly,

PHILIP COOMBS KNAPP.

Following this letter, my friends came to my rescue, and Dr. Vincent Y. Bowditch promptly addressed the Lieutenant Governor as follows:

OCTOBER 23, 1911.

To the Hon. LOUIS FROTHINGHAM, *Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts.*

MY DEAR MR. FROTHINGHAM: — In your position as chairman of the Governor's Council, I am desirous of expressing my opinion regarding the appointment of a gentleman well known to me for almost a lifetime to the position on the Board of Insanity, in the place of Mr. Field. I refer to Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Boston.

I have known Dr. Briggs almost from his boyhood, and in all these years have never known him to fail in devotion either to his friends or to any cause in which he felt he could aid humanity. The plea of his "lack of experience" has been brought up against his nomination. It would perhaps be useless for me to attempt to prove the contrary, except to cite his long and valuable experience in a private institution and his constant study and interest in all work of this sort, including visits to the most celebrated institutions, both here and abroad. Dr. Macpherson of Edinburgh, the President of the Royal Association of Alienists, a man respected and loved all over the United Kingdom, has told me personally of his great respect for Dr. Briggs as a man and as a specialist, using to me the expression "Dr. Briggs is ahead of his time." Dr. Adolph Meyer of New York, probably the foremost alienist in the United States, has the highest opinion of Dr. Briggs' work for insane patients and of Dr. Briggs as a man also. I could cite other proofs, but refrain from so doing, merely stating from absolute knowledge that I know no man who is a more indefatigable worker in any cause which interests him for humanity. In all of his recent endeavors to better the condition of patients in our asylums, I can also testify to his absolute disregard of self in all that he has done, at the sacrifice of no one knows how much of his time and strength.

Massachusetts is far behind the times in matters which hold Dr. Briggs' chief interest just now. If his nomination is not confirmed, it will mean a distinct setback to much-needed reforms.

In conclusion, allow me to say that this is written absolutely without solicitation on Dr. Briggs' part. I lay this before you, not only in my posi-

tion as a friend to him, but as a citizen of Massachusetts, begging you to weigh the matter very carefully when deciding.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

VINCENT Y. BOWDITCH.

Louis B. Thacher, a business man of prominence and one of the most conscientious and upright men I have ever known, wrote to the Lieutenant Governor:

HANCOCK, N. H., October 31, 1911.

Hon. LOUIS A. FROTHINGHAM, *State House.*

MY DEAR LOUIS: — Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Boston has been nominated by Governor Foss to the State Board of Insanity, and I presume his name comes up before the Council very soon for confirmation.

If there is any doubt in your mind about his fitness for the position I should like to say these few words.

I have known him for some ten years and he is a warm personal friend, and I have had a chance to judge him as a man and as a doctor. As a man he is a hard, steady worker, enthusiastic and conscientious, and absolutely straight. As a doctor he stands very high with the leading men throughout the country in his branch of the profession. In my mind, as regards ability and honesty, there is no question that he is well fitted for the position.

I was in hopes that I should have the pleasure of voting for you on Tuesday next, but I am afraid that I may not get to Yarmouth to cast my ballot, as I have not been very well the last few weeks. But at any rate, as a good '93 man, I trust the fates will be kind to you on Tuesday.

Believe me,

Always sincerely,

LOUIS B. THACHER.

Frederic H. Curtiss was a prominent bank official, who since has been chairman of the Federal Reserve Board. He wrote:

THE FIRST NATIONAL BANK OF BOSTON,
October 31, 1911.

To Hon. LOUIS A. FROTHINGHAM, *911 Barristers Hall, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR MR. FROTHINGHAM: — I want to call your attention to one of the men appointed by Governor Foss on the State Board of Insanity, — Dr. L. Vernon Briggs.

Dr. Briggs is the son of Lloyd Briggs, who for many years held the position as notary for most of the banks here in town. He is a man who has made a great success as a specialist in mental diseases. He has been a close personal friend of mine for many years, and a man who has my very highest regard in every particular. He is a man of means and a man of sterling qualities, and I believe that he would be a very valuable man on that Board. Our mutual friend, Mr. Arthur D. Hill, had a great deal to do with him when Mr. Hill was district attorney, and, I believe, knows him thoroughly.

Very sincerely yours,

FREDERIC H. CURTISS.

I am giving these letters as they come, according to dates, to show how the barrage progressed. The opposition, under Channing, got the ear of Councillor Glidden, and the Council rather centered upon Glidden for advice as to what they should do. He was, as it were, a sort of spokesman for the powerful men in the Republican party. In the following letter Dr. Shattuck says he speaks for "a large number of those best qualified to judge," but does not say who they are:

THE MASSACHUSETTS MEDICAL SOCIETY,
OCTOBER 31, 1911.

Hon. WALTER S. GLIDDEN, *care of Clerk, Executive Council, State House, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR SIR: — Permit me to express the hope through you that the Council will give most careful consideration to the proposed change in the State Board of Insanity. It is difficult to see, from any point of view, how the Board would be strengthened by the substitution of Dr. Vernon L. Briggs for Mr. Henry P. Field.

The medical profession is already well and sufficiently represented on that Board, and the legal profession would not be. The eastern and central parts of the State are well and sufficiently represented and the western would not be. Even were it conceded that the interests of its wards required a fourth medical member on the Board, Dr. Briggs hardly represents the best and most useful adviser for the Board, in the estimation of a large number of those best qualified to judge.

Very truly yours,

GEORGE B. SHATTUCK.

I am sure Dr. Shattuck knew nothing about me personally except what he had been told. His line of work

The Massachusetts Medical Society

COMMITTEE ON STATE AND NATIONAL LEGISLATION

BOSTON, MASS., April 18.1910.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs:-

208 Beacon Street:-

Boston, Mass.:-

My Dear Doctor Briggs:-

I thank you for your note of the 13th.inst.telling me of your success in getting Senate bill 212 enacted into law. You are to be congratulated most heartily in that you have carried this good work to completion. The object was a most worthy one and the wonder is that the evil was not corrected years ago.

The Massachusetts Medical Society could not do better than to put you upon the committee on state and national legislation! You would get there when the rest of us fail ! I hope you like the work better than I do, although when things come your way ,there is a satisfaction in feeling that you had something to do in obtaining the result.

Again congratulating you upon your success in this matter,

I Am Very Truly Yours,

George W. Gay

Sec'y.

was different from mine, and we never met to my knowledge. I publish this letter not because of any feeling of animosity against Dr. Shattuck (who, I believe, was unduly influenced and knew only one side), but because I do not feel it right to leave out or select certain letters. I am publishing all that have come into my possession, or copies of them. (Dr. Shattuck was a member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded at Waverley.)

Edward S. Bradford, a politician (and former member of the State Board of Insanity), had been successfully appealed to by Channing's ring. His letter follows:

UNION TRUST COMPANY
SPRINGFIELD, MASS.

OCTOBER 31, 1911.

Members of the Governor's Council, Council Chamber, State House, Boston.

When the State Board of Insanity was organized, I found myself, by Governor Wolcott's appointment, one of its charter members, so to speak. I became intensely interested in the work of this commission and gave it a good deal of time and study and effort, until I was transferred into the State treasurership; so that I believe I am qualified to speak intelligently respecting its best interest.

The Governor has appointed, to succeed Judge Field of Northampton, *another doctor*, of which profession, if you shall confirm said appointment, there would be *four* on the Board, with one layman only. *The best work of the Board needs, in its membership, a lawyer;* and on this ground, without any thought of personality, I desire to protest, as a constituent member of that Board, against the confirmation of said appointment.

I beg you to give this protest the attention that it deserves, and you are at liberty to make any use of it that you deem desirable.

I am,

Very faithfully and cordially yours,

EDW. S. BRADFORD.

Also at this time, Dr. Channing and his supporters found in my wife's brother-in-law, Dr. John W. Bartol, a ready aid to their plans. He seemed very friendly when we met or were thrown together socially, but he

and his wife were evidently bitterly opposed to me, and joined forces with my enemies to discredit me. (Dr. Bartol was a friend of Dr. Channing, and for years had a relative under Dr. Channing's care and for months at a time at his sanitarium.)

One of the most prominent professors at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, who was also president of the Board of Trustees of the Sharon Sanatorium, on which Board I had served with him for nearly ten years, wrote as follows:

Massachusetts Institute of Technology,
Boston, November 4, 1911.

Dear Governor Frothingham: — I am asked to say a word about Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, whom the Governor has nominated for a place on the State Board of Insanity.

I know Dr. Briggs well and have served with him for some years on the Board of Directors of the Sharon Sanatorium. He is a very pleasant and co-operative man, with initiative and energy and high ideals. I should think that he would make a very useful and very valuable man on the Board.

Respectfully yours,
William T. Sedgewick.

As a proof of Professor Sedgewick's opinion and endorsement I publish the following letter received from him some years later when I resigned from the Sharon Sanatorium Board of Directors. I had been a member of that Board ever since its inception.

Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge
Department of Biology and Public Health

December 13, 1916.

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — Your letter of December 4, resigning your office, was duly received, and but for an unusual pressure of work would have had the early answer which it deserved. I shall to-day bring it before the annual meeting of the Directors, who, however regretfully, will in all probability, like myself, feel that they must abide by your own decision.

It is entirely true, as you state, that you have been a friend of the Sana-

torium from the very start, and I may add that you have always been one of its most loyal and devoted friends. The breaking of a chain thus reaching back to our very beginnings accordingly marks an epoch, and as such can only be contemplated with real regret.

Pray accept the most sincere thanks of the Directors for your long and faithful service to the Sanatorium, and, through the Sanatorium, to the community. We have no right to disregard your decision, but I hope that, while accepting your resignation, you will allow us to reserve the privilege of calling upon you for further aid in the future, if your time and strength permit and the needs of the Sanatorium should make such a call imperative.

Sincerely yours,

W. T. Sedgewick,
President.

Dr. Henry M. Chase of the staff of the Boston Dispensary soon realized the fact that my appointment still had to be confirmed and that a barrage was being directed against me. He had been a member of the medical staff, of which I was also a member for over ten years, and I had worked with him not only on the staff but on many committees, and therefore he was better able, as I have already said, to judge fairly of my qualifications and work than were men who did not know me by sight. His letter follows:

November 5, 1911.

His Excellency Lieutenant Governor Frothingham, *State House, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Mr. Frothingham: — Pardon my encroachment upon your time in writing a word regarding Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, whose appointment as a member of the State Board of Insanity is under consideration. I have been personally associated with Dr. Briggs in the work of small committees and in that of large groups of men, and have at all times admired his indefatigable energy, his definiteness of purpose, his ability to grasp the trend of large and small affairs, and his willingness to assist in developing and harmonizing the details of the work. My personal association with Dr. Briggs has been one of great pleasure, and I am confident his co-operation with the members of the Board of Insanity will be most cordial. I will appreciate your submitting this to the Council.

Sincerely,

Henry M. Chase, M.D.

About this time I heard that a petition was being sent to the Council against my appointment. The first intimation of this came in a letter to Walter S. Glidden, clerk of the Executive Council, from Dr. Coffin, who was a trustee of the Westborough State Hospital for a time.

NOVEMBER 6, 1911.

Hon. WALTER S. GLIDDEN, *Council Chamber, State House, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR SIR: — I desire most emphatically to endorse the protest to the appointment of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity, sent to you under date of October 30, 1911, and signed by Dr. John G. Blake, *et als.*, physicians of Boston.

Very sincerely yours,

JOHN L. COFFIN, M.D.

The petition to which Dr. Coffin referred, I later learned, had not been delivered to the Council at the time he wrote. It was only in preparation and Dr. Coffin seems to have let the cat out of the bag. The petition was dated the following day, November 7, addressed to the Council, and read as follows:

The undersigned physicians of Boston and its vicinity wish emphatically to protest against the confirmation of the appointment of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs upon the State Board of Insanity. Some of the reasons for this opposition are as follows:

Should he be appointed, four of the five members of the Board would then be physicians, in addition to the executive officer. This would make by far the largest proportion of medical members on any of our State Boards. Even the State Board of Health, on which the medical men would be expected to predominate, has but three physicians out of its seven members.

Moreover, there are at present three of the members of the Board of Insanity, including its executive officer, who are experts in mental diseases.

Another important disadvantage would be that, with one exception all its members would be residents of Boston, the rest of the State not being adequately represented.

There is imperative need of the services of an experienced and able lawyer on the Board, and to replace Mr. Field, who has been connected as Trustee with one of the State hospitals, and who has since had long familiarity with the large legal questions with which the Board of Insanity frequently has to deal, would seriously impair its efficiency.

The great majority of the men who signed this petition had no knowledge of what had gone before. Therefore most of them merely signed it as a petition for the retention of Mr. Field, on the ground that a lawyer, rather than a physician, should be appointed on the Board. That did not make me feel very badly, because it was not, on the face of it, directed against me, but merely a petition to retain Mr. Field's services on the Board. There was nothing in this petition which savored of the vindictiveness of the Channing group of which I was later made so keenly aware. Had there been, the signatures would have been few and far between. As it was, they obtained the signatures of 149 physicians, which included all the members of the Channing group, and others whom they could persuade by some means or other to sign it. They distributed their own names through the petition so as not to appear too prominent, but there is no doubt that they were its originators.

The sixteen physicians whose names are starred (*) in the list below signed the petition later sent out endorsing me, and several of them wrote letters saying they would not have signed the petition against me if the petition endorsing me had first been presented to them. It is interesting to note that in the original petition twelve signed as residing at the Massachusetts General Hospital, where Dr. Howard was superintendent, and many of the others were connected with this hospital.

The physicians who signed were as follows:

George B. Shattuck, Boston.
George W. Gay, Boston.
E. H. Bradford, Boston.
F. C. Shattuck, Boston.
F. B. Harrington, Boston.
Clarence J. Blake, Boston.
H. A. Christian, Boston.
John G. Blake, Boston.
*T. M. Rotch, Boston.
Herman F. Vickery, Boston.

Alfred Worcester, Waltham.
F. G. Balch, Boston.
E. P. Joslin, Boston.
F. C. Pfaff, Boston.
H. D. Arnold, Boston.
Hugh Cabot, Boston.
Charles F. Withington, Boston.
Edward Cowles, Boston.
Walter Channing, Boston.
Henry R. Stedman, Boston.
Herbert B. Howard, Boston.
John L. Hildreth, Cambridge.
Philip Coombs Knapp, Boston.
George L. Walton, Boston.
W. N. Bullard, Boston.
E. B. Lane, Boston.
E. W. Taylor, Boston.
J. J. Thomas, Boston.
J. W. Courtney, Boston.
H. C. Baldwin, Boston.
W. E. Paul, Boston.
George A. Waterman, Boston.
E. C. Norton, Norwood.
F. C. Richardson, Boston.
Henry A. Wood, Waltham.
F. W. Goss, Roxbury.
*John Warren, Boston.
F. B. Mallory, Brookline.
William P. Graves, Boston.
W. M. Conant, Boston.
F. B. Lund, Boston.
Julian A. Mead, Watertown.
E. A. Crockett, Boston.
A. K. Stone, Boston.
C. A. Porter, Boston.
C. L. Scudder, Boston.
R. B. Greenough, Boston.
J. H. Wright, Boston.
*H. P. Mosher, Boston.
J. B. Blake, Boston.
E. G. Brackett, Boston.
Myles Standish, Boston.
Lincoln Davis, Boston.
Charles P. Loring, Wollaston.
Robert M. Green, Boston.
Channing Simmons, Boston.
W. H. Boos, Boston.
J. H. Pratt, Boston.
George C. Shattuck, Boston.
Samuel Robinson, Boston.
F. A. Washburn, Boston.
J. B. Howland, Boston.
George G. Smith, Boston.
John Homans, Boston.
W. B. Cannon, Cambridge.
C. D. Underhill, Boston.
*L. P. Felch, Boston.
*Carrie I. Felch, Boston.
C. H. Lawrence, Boston.
F. L. Burnett, Boston.
Beth Vincent, Boston.
E. P. Richardson, Boston.
H. C. Low, Brookline.
C. R. Metcalfe, Boston.
W. J. Dodd, Boston.
G. W. Hall, Boston.
L. H. Spooner, Boston.
D. F. Jones, Boston.
E. H. Risley, Boston.
F. J. Goodridge, Cambridge.
D. C. Greene, Boston.
H. P. Towle, Boston.
J. E. Blaisdell, Chelsea.
F. B. Talbot, Boston.
*G. S. C. Badger, Boston.
L. H. Burlingham, Boston.
Byam Hollings, Cambridge.
Harry N. Langnecker, Cambridge.
C. B. Fuller, Waltham.
Richard Collins, Waltham.
William A. Bell, Somerville.
E. H. Stevens, Cambridge.
Fred R. Jouett, Cambridge.
Fred W. Taylor, Cambridge.
*G. N. P. Mead, Winchester.
G. P. Cogswell, Cambridge.
*O. L. Dascombe, Waltham.
F. M. Stiles, Waltham.
C. J. McCormick, Waltham.
*J. W. Willis, Waltham.
*C. A. Willis, Waltham.
H. B. McIntire, Cambridge.
L. S. Hapgood, Cambridge.
H. P. Stevens, Cambridge.

E. L. White, Somerville.
F. E. Bateman, Somerville.
Walter L. Bond, West Somerville.
*Herbert Cholerton, West Somerville.
*E. P. Stickney, Arlington.
I. T. Cutter, Winchester.
Ralph Putnam, Winchester.
Harold A. Gale, Winchester.
F. W. Gay, Malden.
R. L. DeNormandie, Boston.
Charles H. Tozier, Somerville.
A. F. Barnes, Cambridge.
*W. R. Mansfield, Boston.
W. L. Barnes, Lexington.
*L. B. Clark, Waverley.
R. F. Gibson, Somerville.
H. C. Valentine, Lexington.
J. O. Tilton, Lexington.
*W. M. Tyler, Lexington.
B. T. Loring, Boston.
E. A. Darling, Cambridge.
*J. H. Saunders, Brookline.
Augusta G. Williams, Brookline.
Richard Dutton, Wakefield.
H. S. Trueman, Somerville.
R. W. Hastings, Brookline.
William Dunn, Boston.
W. W. Palmer, Boston.
T. F. Mayo, Boston.
J. E. McCartin, Boston.
G. A. Leland, Boston.
G. D. Cutler, Boston.
H. T. Swain, Boston.
C. A. Hedblom, Boston.
E. D. Gardner, Boston.
A. F. Jennings, Boston.
H. H. Crabtree, Boston.
R. S. Eustis, Cambridge.

Later, at the suggestion of Governor Foss, these same men, and other members of the Massachusetts Medical Society, were asked to endorse me. It was interesting to see the result of giving the physicians of Massachusetts an opportunity to decide the clear issue of whether they wanted me or not, and whether they were willing to endorse my qualifications.

In the meantime, letters from prominent persons who knew me and who wished to endorse me were received by the Council. Mr. Church, who sent the following letter, was for many years cashier and later vice-president of the Boylston National Bank. He was also a prominent official of the Young Men's Christian Union, respected and beloved by all who knew him. He had known me for over thirty years.

BOYLSTON NATIONAL BANK,
BOSTON, November 7, 1911.

Hon. LOUIS A. FROTHINGHAM, *State House, Boston.*

DEAR SIR: — Understanding that Dr. L. Vernon Briggs has been nominated to a position on the State Board of Insanity, I write to recommend his appointment.

I have had a long and intimate acquaintance with Dr. Briggs, and believe him to be well qualified for such a post by both training and natural equipment.

I am told to-day that the consideration of this appointment is imminent, and that you are the proper person to address in this connection; otherwise I would not intrude on your attention when I know it must be so largely occupied with more important affairs.

Very respectfully,
EDWARD A. CHURCH.

Mr. Charles A. Vaille, who had known me ever since I was born, and who had been for many years president of the National Bank of the Republic, and at the time of writing was one of the vice-presidents of the National Shawmut Bank and a man of unquestioned ability and standing in the community, wrote:

THE NATIONAL SHAWMUT BANK,
BOSTON, Mass., November 7, 1911.

Hon. LOUIS A. FROTHINGHAM, *State House, Boston.*

DEAR SIR: — The name of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs is before the Council for membership on the Board of Insanity, and it gives me great pleasure to testify to his high standing in this community, professionally and otherwise, and should the Council be of the opinion that a change should be made on this Board, they would find Dr. Briggs one most admirably adapted by experience to faithfully perform the duties pertaining to such a position.

Yours very truly,
CHARLES A. VAILLE.

Every one knew Mr. A. Shuman. I had for years been associated with him on the Board of Directors of the Puritan Trust Company, and especially on the executive committee, of which we were both members, and in these capacities he had had an opportunity to

know me well and to judge of my ability in executive matters. He wrote Lieutenant Governor Frothingham as follows:

NOVEMBER 9, 1911.

MY DEAR GOVERNOR: — Dr. L. Vernon Briggs has been named by the Governor for the State Board of Insanity, and I believe his name is now before the Council.

I have been associated with Dr. Briggs on the Board of Directors of the Puritan Trust Company for several years, and have known him otherwise. I have always found him a capable, earnest and reliable trustee, and am satisfied that he will make a desirable member of the State Board of Insanity.

With sincere regards,

Yours very truly,

A. SHUMAN.

My good friend, Dr. Joel E. Goldthwait, the eminent orthopedic specialist, wrote:

NOVEMBER 14, 1911.

LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR FROTHINGHAM AND COUNCIL, *State House, Boston, Mass.*

GENTLEMEN: — I am writing at this time in regard to Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, who has been nominated by Governor Foss as a member of the State Board of Insanity.

My knowledge of Dr. Briggs extends over a period of many years in which it has been possible for me to know quite intimately of his work and of his ideals. It seems to me that he is one of the most progressive men whom we have at the present time in that special line of work. He is a man who believes that there is a way out of even the most seemingly hopeless conditions. He is a born optimist, and yet tempers his optimism by most careful scientific study of the problem involved. He is a man well known abroad as well as in this country, and his work has been recognized perhaps more abroad than it has here.

Traditions often make it difficult for a man's work to be understood until the work has been so definitely proven that it becomes a part of tradition.

It seems to me that Dr. Briggs is unusually well qualified for a position on the Board such as has been suggested, and it is my earnest hope that his nomination will have your approval.

Very respectfully yours,

JOEL E. GOLDTHWAIT, M.D.

Dr. Wiswall was the head of a private sanitarium in Wellesley, of the same school (Homœopathic) as the

Westborough State Hospital. I had patients in his institution, and he knew my professional work and my interest in the work for the insane. Being in a position to judge, which some others were not, he felt that he should write a letter to the Lieutenant Governor:

Hon. Louis A. Frothingham, *State House, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Sir: — I am very glad to express my approval of the selection of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, recently nominated by Gov. Eugene N. Foss as a member of the State Board of Insanity. I have known him personally in a business and professional way for a number of years, and consider him eminently qualified to become a member of the above Board.

Very respectfully yours,

Edward H. Wiswall, M.D.

November 27, 1911.

The Council (bewildered by the conflicting appeals) delayed action on my confirmation, and this caused considerable newspaper comment. The "Boston Transcript" of October 25, 1911, in commenting upon the Council's attitude to the Governor's appointees, said:

In appointing Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity he has selected a gentleman who is acknowledged by the leading alienists of this country and Europe as standing at the head of his profession, a man who is endorsed by such men as Prof. Adolph Meyer, Director of the Phipps Laboratory of Baltimore; by Prof. Henry J. Berkley of the Chair of Psychiatry at Johns Hopkins University, and many others. Dr. Briggs for years has been known as a leader in the work of caring for the insane. He believes thoroughly in progressive treatment for the insane, and in measures that would look toward the prevention and cure of insanity.

The "Boston American" of November 26, 1911, said, editorially:

The Governor's Council is playing the sort of politics that may be expected from a part of the present Republican machine. Clothed with constitutional power to refuse confirmation only to the Governor's appointees who are disqualified by reason of unfitness for the office, they are now attempting to usurp the appointing power itself. They refused to confirm Dr. Briggs for the State Board of Insanity, not because Dr. Briggs is an eminent expert on

insanity and has secured this year remedial legislation aimed to prevent brutality toward the insane in our public institutions at the hands of ignorant attendants, but because they want to hold Henry P. Field in that place.

I soon learned that powerful political influences were being brought to bear to work against my confirmation, and that paid legislative agents were employed by my opponents. I was not the only one with whom the Council was playing politics, for they seemed determined not to approve or confirm any of the Governor's appointments, except where they were obliged to do so. The Governor's secretary is quoted in an interview in the "Boston Herald" of October 26, 1911, as saying:

The Governor talked very plainly to the Council with regard to his appointments, and said that it had come to him from a number of sources for some months back that the Council did not intend to confirm any appointments that were made on important boards and commissions unless he reappointed the present incumbents, this being particularly true of the Prison Commission, State Board of Insanity, the Board of Conciliation and Arbitration and the Railroad Commission. He had exercised his rights as Governor of the Commonwealth to make appointments to fill these positions, and had placed before them men who were recognized in their various lines as being authorities and experts, and he wished the Council would take immediate action. *He had been accused on the stump of holding back appointments, but when appointments were made, the Council practically took upon itself the appointing power by refusing to confirm any one, no matter how well qualified they might be, save those whom they personally favored.*

In appointing Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity he has selected a gentleman who is acknowledged by the leading experts of this country and Europe as standing at the head of his profession, a man who was endorsed by such men as Prof. Adolf Meyer, Director of the Phipps Laboratory at Baltimore; by Prof. Henry J. Berkley of the Chair of Psychiatry of Johns Hopkins University, and many others. Dr. Briggs for years has been known as a leader in the work of caring for the insane. He believes thoroughly in progressive treatment for the insane and in measures that would look toward the prevention and cure of insanity.

In an editorial referring to my appointment, the "Herald" said:

In the case of Dr. Briggs, nominated for the State Board of Insanity, some of the Council feel that one member of the Board should be a lawyer; his confirmation would make it solidly medical.

It was of this situation that the Channing group took advantage, and they congratulated themselves that they were having influence which in reality they did not have, for the politicians were using them rather more than they were using the politicians.

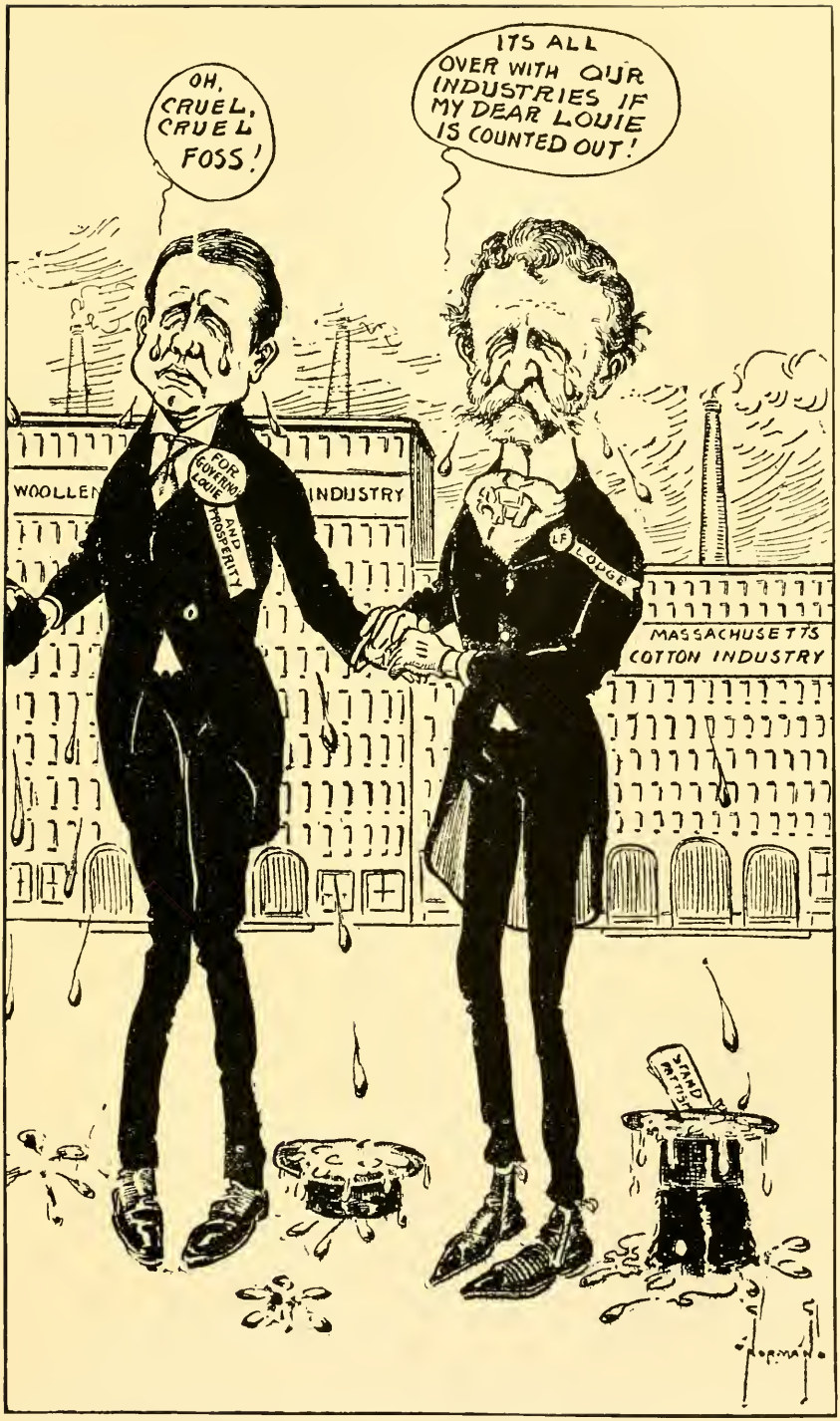
Frothingham is said to have seen his defeat if he should line up with Governor Foss by giving in one iota, and he stood firm against the judgment of the men best qualified to advise regarding matters concerning the insane, and listened to the Channing propaganda, probably believing this to be his safest course. It is also possible that he thought he must discredit not only Governor Foss, but all his appointees if he expected to win. A cartoon showing the effect of a possible defeat on Frothingham and his backers was rather interesting at this time.

Governor Foss sounded his defiance to the politicians in one of his speeches before his re-election:

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, whom I have named for the Board of Insanity, is a distinguished expert, and has endorsements from the leaders of his profession. Mr. Henry P. Field, whom he is chosen to succeed, is chairman of the executive committee of the Republican State Committee, in immediate charge of the Republican State campaign.

In a later speech made during this campaign, which was very acute, he said:

Let us look into these matters in detail. The position on the Board of Insanity was one of the choicest plums of the Republican machine. I proposed to displace Mr. Field, who is chairman of the executive committee of the Republican machine, and to put in his place an eminent specialist, Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, thus putting not only a highly endorsed alienist into the position, but taking the position out of politics. Nevertheless, I was told by the Councillors that this appointment could not be made. Even the Republican newspapers, who are backing the Republican machine in this State, have been



Cartoon appearing in the "Boston Post"

trying to discredit Dr. Briggs. That is a bad enough situation, but it is only the beginning. Let me show you how much farther the control of the Republican machine extends.

He then went on, exposing the methods and purposes of the machine.

The "Boston Transcript" of October 31, 1911, in reporting an interview prior to the hearing to be given by the Executive Council to the remonstrance against the Governor's appointees, quoted the Governor's secretary as speaking for him, as follows:

That men of the standing of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs and others should be held up by "charges," with an intimation that they have done something that ought to debar them from holding public office is a most *cowardly insinuation* that honorable men would hesitate long to make. These men are entitled to public vindication. *Come out into the open and fight* and do not hide behind closed doors and vote men's characters away! "Take the public into their confidence?" Oh, how I wish they would honestly do so. How I wish that they would tell the public why they are so anxious to keep the chairman of the executive committee of the Republican State Committee on the State Board of Insanity, instead of permitting a man recognized the world over as an alienist of the highest rank and an expert in dealing with insanity to go on the Board in the interests of the poor unfortunates, in whose interests Dr. Briggs has unselfishly labored for years, and who has forced humane and progressive legislation in their behalf through the Legislature in spite of the protests of Mr. Field and the other Republican politicians on the Board.

Let us have public hearings. I welcome them, and every man whom I have appointed is willing to meet and refute all "charges" made against him, but they certainly *do object to being assassinated in star chamber proceedings.*

But the Council and the cabal continued to "assassinate," and I was working to ascertain what charges could have been brought against me. I knew of none that they could possibly bring, yet the cabal were evidently providing the Council with charges, which were used behind closed doors as excuses for refusal to confirm my nomination. They were either afraid or ashamed to come out into the open.

After much delay a public hearing on the opposition to the Governor's appointments, including my own,

was finally held November 1, 1911, and was very largely attended. A great many physicians were reported to be present, among others Drs. Blake and Gay, representing the Channing group; but unfortunately I was ill and my attorney asked for a postponement of the hearing on my case. No other opportunity for a public hearing, in which it might be possible for my friends to refute the charges made against me, was given, in spite of the repeated demands of the newspapers on both sides for publicity.

"Practical Politics" of November 25, 1911, said:

> It is difficult to see how the Council can do other than confirm Dr. Briggs' appointment; indeed, it is difficult to see why it hasn't been confirmed long ere this. He is a learned and brilliant man, and it must be extremely distasteful to him to have his name made a political football of.

Every Council day committees from the Channing group appeared before the Council at the State House and had personal interviews with the members; and, so far as my appointment went, things remained *in statu quo*. Dr. George W. Gay had appeared before a meeting of the Council about the end of October, and used the name of the Massachusetts Medical Society, of which he was a former president, in opposing my nomination, although the Society, as such, had never taken any action to that effect. It appeared that Dr. Gay was not willing to use the methods of some of the others of the Channing group, although he had countenanced them. The opposition also obtained the good offices of Ex-Councillor Seward W. Jones, who appeared before the Council against my appointment.

Senator Nash, Mr. Barron, Frederic H. Curtiss, Ex-Governor John D. Long, Messrs. A. Shuman and Robert Boit, Drs. Vincent Y. Bowditch and Joel E.

Goldthwait, Gen. William A. Bancroft and others appeared before the Council in my favor; but on November 29, 1911, a vote was taken and the Council refused to confirm me as the Governor's appointee. Lieutenant Governor Frothingham did not attend the hearing. His vote would have counted for nothing at that time. Governor Foss being away, he had no right to vote on the matter. It was during the Governor's absence that the Council finally got their courage up to take a vote.

In reporting their action, after an interview with the Council, the "Boston Globe" said:

> The great objection to Dr. Briggs was merely on the ground that there ought to be a lawyer on the State Board of Insanity. To place another physician on the Board in place of the lawyer, the Councillors believed, would make the commission top-heavy with alienists. Dr. Briggs was therefore rejected on this ground.

On the same day the "Record" said in an editorial:

> There is just one point to be argued in the case of Dr. Briggs, rejected by seven to one — the now usual alignment in the Executive Council. Is it essential to have a lawyer on the State Board of Insanity? Dr. Briggs' backing before the Council Wednesday was impressive. He is efficient. He would be a valuable Board member — that is the opinion of most who know him and the Board's work.

"Practical Politics" also stated that —

> The reason for Dr. Briggs' rejection was that the Council felt that there already are enough physicians on the Board, and that a lawyer or business man should be named to succeed Mr. Field.

But this was not true, as later developments showed. Matters had got to a point where the opposition had lost all hope of Mr. Field's reappointment, and they were now looking for another man to take his place. They tried to interest the Governor in various candidates, having thrown up the sponge so far as Mr. Field was concerned.

CHAPTER III

Governor Foss re-elected to Office. — The Governor's Council. — Dr. Fernald's Friendship. — Correspondence. — Extract from Paper on Auto-Intoxication

In November, 1911, Governor Foss was re-elected by a large majority, showing that the people were with him rather than with the Council, and that they not only approved his work, but looked to him to lead them for another year. Soon after this I received the following letter from Dr. Meyer:

1012 North Calvert Street
Baltimore, Md.

November 11, 1911.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — I can assure you that I was very glad to read the result of the election, and to see that there is a possibility to vindicate the earnest and reasonable intentions of the Governor and those interested in his activity in behalf of the insane. It will, of course, be a very difficult proposition, and there should, I think, be a very clear understanding that he means, above all things, reasonable and sensible collaboration, and, to say the least, a recognition of his good intentions and a chance to show by deed what he is after.

I am very glad that the superintendents recognize also the spirit of your co-operation, and that the statement of Miss Richards was a misunderstanding. I suppose the same kind of trouble often happens to me; people assume interpretations and pass them on.

I hope very much that there will soon be constructive work, and I assure you that I shall not spare any personal trouble to help in the way of a reunion of the forces.

Believe me,
Very sincerely yours,
Adolf Meyer.

Dr. William Burgess of Cornell, who has ever been a strong advocate of my work, wrote on December 13, 1911:

I am glad to see that things are shaping themselves satisfactorily on the State Board of Insanity, and I hope it won't be long before you land there yourself.

The Governor's Council in 1912 consisted of Lieutenant Governor Luce, who succeeded Frothingham, Eben S. Keith of Bourne, J. Stearns Cushing of Norwood, Edward D. Collins of Boston, Alexander McGregor of Malden, Edward G. Frothingham of Haverhill, Herbert E. Fletcher of Westford, Winifield S. Shuster of Douglas, and August H. Goetting of Springfield. Mr. Collins was the only Democratic member, and he was the one who had voted for me persistently from the time my name was first before the Council. Lieutenant Governor Luce, Mr. Goetting and Mr. Collins were the committee on nominations, which accounts for letters to the Council regarding nomination being directed either to the Lieutenant Governor or to Mr. Goetting.

At the second inauguration of Governor Foss his popularity was evidenced by the crowded legislative chamber and people waiting far outside the doors to get in.

This year Levi H. Greenwood was elected President of the Senate, and the Committee on Public Charitable Institutions was composed of Messrs. Wheeler of Worcester, Clark of Plymouth, and Quigley of Hampden in the Senate, and Messrs. Cliff of Somerville, Charles J. Wood of Cambridge, Atkins of Lynn, Bowker of Hanson, Arkwell of Worcester, William J. Sullivan of Boston, Schlapp of Lawrence and Twomey of Boston in the House.

A disturbing event at this time, in which we were all much interested, was the strike of the mill operatives in Lawrence. This strike was instigated by the Industrial Workers of the World, under the magnetic leadership of Joseph J. Ettor, an American-born

Italian. Serious rioting broke out and the whole city was in an uproar. The Governor called out the militia, and bayonets were used, but it was some time before the disorder could be checked. This strike caused terrible poverty and suffering. Governor Foss sent me with his secretary, Dudley M. Holman, to Lawrence to investigate and report upon conditions. The newspapers were so biased it was impossible to learn from them the truth as to social conditions. We arrived in Lawrence at 1 o'clock in the morning of January 17, remaining until after daylight, and the next day made a report to the Governor, which he felt gave him a fair insight into the situation. I mention this episode, because it shows that the Governor had confidence in my judgment upon an important occasion in a capacity other than professional, — in spite of the attitude of those opposed to my appointment.

After my name had been turned down by the Council, Governor Foss continued to call upon me almost daily for advice, not only in matters pertaining to the insane, but to other departments of the work of the State, and he asked me to select for him a new Prison Commissioner. His confidence in me was soon recognized by the officers in the State institutions, many of whom believed in me and said they wanted me on the Board but dared not so express themselves to the State Board. Others went so far as to seek my advice, thus expressing their confidence in me, but they excused themselves from coming out publicly, saying that they were under the State Board and did not feel it right to express their opinion publicly one way or the other. One of these men who was always my

friend is Dr. Walter E. Fernald. When a vacancy arose on his Board of Trustees, he sent me the following letter:

MASSACHUSETTS SCHOOL FOR THE FEEBLE-MINDED,
WAVERLEY, January 6, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — As I told you the other day, it has always seemed to me a mistake that the boards of trustees of our State institutions could not have the benefit of the knowledge possessed by the men who are teaching sociology and economics in our colleges and universities.

I believe that a few men of this type scattered about on the Boards of our hospitals and institutions would do more than anything else to make practical the wealth of modern knowledge of the conditions involved in the study of degeneracy, criminology, mental defect, etc. In order to give point to my remarks, I would suggest that any of the following members of the faculty of Harvard would honor any position of this sort: T. N. Carver, Professor of Economics; R. F. Forester, Instructor in Social Ethics; James Ford, Instructor in Social Ethics; A. N. Holcombe, Instructor in Government; H. W. Holmes, Assistant Professor of Education; and A. O. Norton, Assistant Professor of Education.

With kind regards, I am,

Very truly yours,

WALTER E. FERNALD,
Superintendent.

I was successful in persuading Governor Foss to appoint on Dr. Fernald's Board of Trustees two of the men whom he had recommended. At that time I heard that the opposition were quoting him as actively against me, although I had understood from him that on account of his position he did not feel that he should express any opinion. I failed to find his name on any of the petitions or signed to any letter sent to the Council remonstrating against my appointment. Having great confidence in him and relations of personal friendship, I felt it my duty to write him frankly, stating what I had heard and asking him if he would be willing to state his position to me. He answered:

WAVERLEY, January 20, 1912.

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I have been away for several days, and this is my first opportunity to answer your most kind letter. I am sure we ought to be grateful to you for the reappointment of Dr. Barnes and Mrs. Brackett on our Board of Trustees. They are the best type of trustees, never missing a meeting and always ready to give of their time and thought to the problems of the school.

In answer to your question, I would say that Prof. T. N. Carver of Harvard College, Professor of Political Economy and Sociology, would make a most valuable addition to our Board of Trustees. His deep knowledge of sociological problems would be of great value to the State. We still have one vacancy on the Board. Dr. E. W. Emerson of Concord has been suggested, and he would bring to us wide experience and special familiarity with this work. All of the Governor's appointments have been so strong and fine that I am sure we shall get a good man.

No, Dr. Briggs, my name was not on that petition, and there is no basis for the rumor you mention that I was "active against you." I have always done my own thinking, and your ideas and ideals are much in accord with my own. I am in favor of anything that will benefit the insane or other unfortunates. You may remember that I did not join in any opposition before the legislative committees; indeed, how could I when I have been practicing and preaching non-restraint, manual instruction, occupation, etc., for many years? I am sure these things should be accomplished without destroying the faith of the public in our public institutions.

It takes a full generation to regain the trust and confidence of the poor patients and their friends after it has been once destroyed, and, like a woman's reputation, to be accused merely is of itself very damaging. The agony these poor people go through is so cruel and unnecessary. I am familiar with the best insane hospitals in this and other countries, and I believe our own to be among the best in the world, especially so far as the kind and humane treatment is concerned.

They can be and should be improved, and they need the help and inspiration and uplift of brave souls like yourself who can see ahead. I know the men who are in charge, and I firmly believe there is no reason why they should not eagerly co-operate with you if the main issue were not beclouded and really lost sight of. Would it not be possible to bring this about? I am sure this whole matter might be put on a constructive basis.

I am glad you are hoping to get a better salary for the Prison Commission chairman. I agree with you that it would be difficult to get a good man at present salary. I hope that the proposed reorganization may be brought about, even if I still feel that it is my own duty to stay here and work out the educational and economic and other phases of the work with the feeble-minded which I have begun. I have a book in preparation. I have some work on heredity half done and some clinical research covering twenty years, which I could not drop with a clear conscience. I should feel like evading the responsibility of a rare opportunity to leave these matters unfinished, especially

as the feeble-minded are to attract great attention and study in the next ten years in this State.

I deeply appreciate your very frank and friendly letter, and I want to assure you that I have the greatest confidence in you and your work.

I am in hopes that the right man will emerge for the Prison Commission. I am going over all the men I know as at all possible, and if one occurs to me I shall take the liberty to suggest him to you. A strong system would find a number of men already in the prison service in every way qualified for the work, who would command the confidence of the State.

Faithfully yours,

WALTER E. FERNALD.

In January I received a gratifying letter from Dr. Berkley who ever stood by me and gave me encouragement when I most needed it. He wrote from Baltimore, under date of January 31, 1912:

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Yesterday Drs. Hurd, Herring, Pleasants and I ran down to Crownsville to inspect our new institution. We had a wonderful afternoon, mild as the spring, and a quite pleasant trip. Your name was mentioned a number of times in connection with institutional reform, and always in a commendatory way, as a pioneer in the field.

Sincerely yours,

HENRY J. BERKLEY.

On February 12 Dr. Fernald again wrote to me:

PARK AVENUE HOTEL,
NEW YORK, February 12, 1912.

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I have been away on a little visit to some institutions, and on arriving here I find your letter, which had been remailed to me. You were very kind to write me and I shall certainly try to think of a man for the Prison Commission. It is rather a commentary on the general lack of interest on this subject that there are not many men equipped for this work in the State. I am going home pretty well satisfied with our own institutions compared with others in the Atlantic States.

In answer to your question, I am still sure that I must not leave my own special work. This trip has strengthened my feeling that the work elsewhere, in a way, rather counts on the evolution of the work we have only begun at Waverley, and that if we do not do it, it may be half a generation before it is taken up again.

I am deeply grateful to you for assisting in the reappointment of our splendid trustees. The fine work of our Board makes the opportunity. I hope to see you soon.

Sincerely yours,

WALTER E. FERNALD.

In January, 1912, the State Board of Insanity had sent its recommendations to the Legislature, without having asked Dr. Meyer for his report on his study of the State hospitals. As previously stated, Dr. Meyer's report was read, by the Governor's invitation, on February 7. The Governor's attitude toward the estimates of the State Board of Insanity, as expressed in his message of March 1, showed later that he had not been indifferent to this source of expert advice, and Dr. Meyer's influence is reflected also in his later messages (see Dr. Meyer's report, page 17).

Dr. Meyer's frequent correspondence with me continued for some time after the reading of his address. His interest in the development of the best possible plan for the care of the insane in Massachusetts was very strong. The first step in the program was the development of the Boston State Hospital, about which he wrote as follows:

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, February 21, 1912.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I hear from Dr. Frost that my statements are taken to discredit the plan which has been worked out for the development of the Boston State Hospital. This would, I think, be a very deplorable interference, which I must promptly forestall. I urged, that, as far as possible, an institution once planned and started should be completed as promptly as possible in harmony with its definite proportions and plans. While for the State at large I do not see why a single institution should be enlarged above 1,200, the Metropolitan District can probably not economically be provided with institutions below the size of that planned. And certainly an institution which has been laid out in a definite manner, and which is in the hands of a very capable man, ought not to be held up in its development. If anything is needed now, it is prompt action in relieving the intolerable conditions of overcrowding, delay and discouragement. I must repeat that, unless something better is put in the place of the proposals of those who have thought out the plans, none of the appropriations asked for can, as far as I can see, be cut out without a great deal of harm. My own program would be: Complete the existing Boston State Hospital along the lines of its plans, and take measures to plan an additional hospital for the Metropolitan District at as early a date

as possible, so as to prevent the necessity of still more increasing the outlying hospitals and keeping them from their natural development.

If there are any uncertainties whatsoever, I shall be very grateful to you for drawing my attention to them, because I am very anxious that what I have done should render a real service to the State and should not result in a hindrance.

Believe me,
Very sincerely yours,
ADOLF MEYER.

Following up the suggestions in the above letter, he wrote, a day later:

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, February 22, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — My letter of yesterday partly answered what you say in your letter of the 20th instant. If the message emphasizes the absolute necessity of making immediate plans for another metropolitan institution with the prospect of adding a third one; and if it gives as the main reason the necessity of concentrating the work and creating a chance for district work, and especially also a chance for the outlying districts to develop properly, the main thing will be achieved.

With regard to last year's appropriations and this year's, I should say most emphatically that none of the proposals of those who have given them very careful consideration should be turned down unless something can be offered that does the *same work* in a better way, so that the authorities who have to use it approve of it as a workable scheme. I mean by this that it will be absolutely necessary to get the judgment and co-operation *of those who have to carry out the scheme,* because it will never do either to merely stop and refuse things, or to force upon the existing body of workers things which they cannot accept or approve.

With regard to the Boston State Hospital, the plans *should be carried out* so as to create a harmonious unit; and as far as I can see it has been carefully planned. The main point at this juncture is not to interfere with these plans, but to see to it that they get finished, and that an additional metropolitan hospital receives a definite start, and that, as far as possible, with a plan that will make prompt construction possible, and not a protracted evolution — if, at least, it is possible to win over the responsible official bodies.

What you say of the printing of the document is, I think, very true. It would, I think, be much better than discussions of fragments which are easily misinterpreted.

Believe me,
Very sincerely yours,
ADOLF MEYER.

I did not like the complication arising from Dr. Meyer's report in regard to the Boston State Hospital plans, and expressed myself quite freely to Dr. Frost on this subject in a letter, to which he answered:

Boston, February 23, 1912.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — I concluded not to write again to Dr. Meyer about the matter we were discussing to-day because, as you said, that would be making too much of it; and perhaps you would prefer that I should not intimate to him that you felt offended with me on account of the communication I sent him. You can do that yourself, if you wish, and also get from him my letter, which you will see is frank and friendly in respect to all concerned.

You will, I am sure, understand my very great interest in the fate of our plans for the hospitals' development and my desire that the argument for them should reach the Governor in the most convincing form and from those in whose judgment and advice he has most confidence. If I got a wrong idea, in your opinion, on the question of the ultimate size of the hospital, it was doubtless because you argued the point, as you say, for the sake of clarifying it. I have not for a moment questioned your good faith or goodwill, and I should be sorry to have you think that I could do so except to yourself directly, should I feel so inclined. I can flare up on occasion, as you saw, and so can you, but that need not, so far as I am concerned, inaugurate a lasting dispute.

Yours sincerely,

H. P. Frost.

P.S. — I considered seriously what you told me about Pickles [an attendant whom I knew to have been abusive to patients], and told him a day or two afterwards that he did not have my confidence and should go the first of March.

In the issues of January 5 and January 12, 1905, of the "Boston Medical and Surgical Journal" was published a paper by me entitled "A Consideration of Auto-Intoxication and Auto-Infection as Causes of Various Mental Diseases." The following year I wrote a paper entitled "A Consideration of the Treatment of Auto-Intoxication or Auto-Infection where they are the Cause of Mental Disturbance," which was published in the "Boston Medical and Surgical Journal" issues of April 19, April 26 and May 3, 1906.

It was the last of these two papers that my opponents picked out for attack, especially my suggestion that among other antiseptics glyco-thymoline be employed at times.

When I wrote my first paper [on auto-intoxication] few alienists were adherents to the theory of auto-intoxication, but during the past year most of the prominent alienists of this country and especially abroad have become deeply interested in this subject. The concensus of their opinion seems to point to the fact that there is an auto-intoxication in most cases of mental disorders, although some prominent members of the profession still cling to the old idea that it is merely a symptom or effect, rather than a cause. When we have our hospital for observation in mental disorders in their early stages (which is bound to come soon), it can then be more easily demonstrated that auto-intoxication is the beginning of many mental disorders, and this being corrected, the mind clears up and the symptoms disappear.

This is what we find in our private practice among those cases which come early enough to us; and such has been my experience in the Mental Clinic of the Boston Dispensary among the many cases that find their way there during the early stages of mental disturbance. . . .

Pathologists, often disagreeing among themselves, all want to find the specific germ or toxin which causes the alienation of the mind. Forbes-Robertson showed me, in his laboratory in Edinburgh, bacilli of general paralysis as he has found them. Dr. Lewis Bruce showed me in his laboratory in the Murthly Asylum, Perth, Scotland, the bacilli that he has isolated in catatonia, also the bacilli that he has isolated in cases of acute mania.

It is early to say much about these germs, but because some other pathologist has not found them does not prove anything. The fact that alienists treat cases of mental disorder in an antiseptic way and for auto-intoxication (or, as Maudsley told me he preferred my paper to read, "self-poisoning") and get results quickly and permanently in certain cases makes the man who studies cases therapeutically believe that he has hit the nail on the head. . . .

From my notes I give ten cases, just as they come, which have been treated with antiseptics, some showing improvement, others no improvement, others cures. . . .

In a general way the antiseptics that I have used have been glyco-thymoline (the formula of glyco-thymoline contains: benzo-salicylate of soda, eucalyptol, thymol, salicylate of methyl from betula lenta, pini pumilionis, glycerin and solvent), borolyptol (the formula of borolyptol contains: gum myrrh, benzoin and storax, eucalyptol, pinis pumilio, boric acid, glycerin and solvent), beta-naphthol, phosphate of sodium, benzoate of sodium, guaiacol, quinine, strychnine, nux vomica, creosote, naphthalin, calomel, salicylate of soda, peppermint, checkerberry, salol, bicarbonate of soda and antiseptic tablets put up by manufacturing chemists.

For treatment, also colonic flushing, high enemas of normal salt solution, washing out of the stomach or lavage, salt baths, sweat baths, hydrotherapy, hot and cold packs. Diet, where the above remedies do not correct the fermentative processes at once, but a generous diet should be given as soon as the evidences of fermentation from the bowels or stomach have disappeared. . . .

The histories of the ten cases cited are too long to give here, but I quote a few paragraphs to show the type of treatment followed for which I was so severely criticized, although in several cases I had the advice and approval of eminent consultants. The first case was one of *acute mania*, and the treatment was as follows:

She was started on hyoscine hydrobromate $\frac{1}{200}$ and calomel in $\frac{1}{2}$ gr. doses. Realizing the seriousness of the case, I called Dr. C. F. Folsom in consultation. He advised giving glyco-thymoline $\frac{1}{2}$ dr. t. i. d., as an antiseptic, saying he thought antiseptics proved very beneficial in such cases. I have never ceased to be grateful to him for giving me this advice.

I gave in another case glyco-thymoline 1 dr. t. i. d. and later 2 dr. before meals and mainly liquid diet. Phosphate of sodium after meals was given to replace the beta-naphthol, and from time to time since then his treatment has only varied in the kind of antiseptic given, no one kind being given over three or four weeks without changing. Twice he has received iodide of potassium for limited periods.

This patient was treated by me, or more or less under my direction, for about a year, but was finally sent to Baltimore and placed in Dr. E. N. Brush's charge, at the Sheppard-Enoch Pratt Hospital.

On January 26, 1906, Dr. Brush wrote:

I am fully of the opinion, based upon the history of the case and our observations here, that your patient is one of the unfortunate cases of early mental breakdown to which the term "dementia precox" has recently been applied. . . . Overwork at an important period of his life, associated with undoubted *autotoxic processes*, would, I believe, tell the story. I feel that the course you have pursued in the case since he has come under your direction is by far the most judicious that could be suggested.

My article continues with citations of many eminent authorities, from which I select the following:

Dr. Allan McLean Hamilton of New York, in a paper on "The Connection of Auto-Toxis with Certain Forms of Insanity," read before the Medical Society of London, sums up his treatment as follows:

The most successful treatment consists of lavage, intestinal antisepsis by means of hydrochlorate acid, borax, salicylate of soda, charcoal, guaiacol, or naphtholine in small repeated doses, and the administration of the combination of the red marrow from small bones, blood and glycerine. . . .

Frederick Peterson, M.D., President of State Commission of Lunacy, New York, who has a clinic of nervous and mental diseases in Columbia University, says, "When auto-intoxication is suspected as a causative factor in any nervous disorder, it is essential to regulate the diet, which should consist mainly of milk. There are at our disposal a number of antiseptics which, though not always efficient, are yet often of great benefit. I have found in my own practice that beta-naphthol is one of the best intestinal antiseptics. I give it in capsules of 5 gr. each, two hours after eating, with water. In several cases of epilepsy and melancholia it has acted extremely well. In many cases of epilepsy, salicylate of soda has proved itself of great value, and salol, too, as an intestinal antiseptic. Sometimes I have made excellent use of peppermint for the same purpose.

More than a dozen psychiatrists are quoted to the same effect, and my article continues:

In November, 1905, I visited the Manhattan State Hospital and spent some time with Dr. Adolf Meyer. He said to me, "Why should we use the term 'auto-intoxication'? Why not say 'habit-disturbance' and correct the habits of the glands, secretions and organs, and life of the patient, the same as our mothers would have done if we had contracted bad habits?" The result of his analysis of urine shows him that indican varies in normal individuals, so he thinks it is not to be depended upon. For melancholics and excited patients, especially, he gives calomel, prolonged baths of from twenty-four hours to a week, sometimes, at temperature from normal to 105 degrees. No restraint is used. If one nurse is not sufficient then two are assigned.

. . . . . .

Dr. George O. Welch, medical superintendent of the State Hospital, Fergus Falls, Minn., says that the larger part of their cases suffer from auto-intoxication on admission to the hospital, and that "it certainly has a considerable effect in prolonging the unbalanced mental condition and making it more severe. . . ."

Dr. Maurice Craig of Bethlehem Hospital, London, says of the treatment of the insane in general, "There is little doubt that many of the insane are

affected by the absorption into the blood of poisonous substances which are generated by putrefaction and fermentative changes taking place in the intestines."

Dr. John Macpherson, Commissioner in Lunacy for Scotland, . . . says where gastro-intestinal disorders (in mental diseases) are evident the indications for treatment in this direction are imperative. "First of all, the stomach should be washed out with warm, alkaline water. The bowels should be moved with a strong dose of calomel, followed in the morning by a Seidlitz powder or some strong alkaline aperient. When this has been done, the administration of antiseptics should be immediately commenced. The most effective of these are naphtholine, calomel in minute doses, ¼ gr., frequently repeated, salol in 8 gr. doses thrice daily, beta-naphthol, salicylate of bismuth, iodoform and resorcin.

"The washing out of the stomach should be continued once or twice a week, when there is reason to believe that there is dilatation of the stomach, or that it contains fungi or low vegetable ferments. One or other of the antiseptic substances, such as carbolic acid, boracic acid, corrosive sublimate, or permanganate of potash, may be used for washing out. It is significant in this connection that Bouchard considers opium to have good effect in dilated conditions of the stomach."

Then follows my summary:

The treatment of an average case of mental disease, where the cause is auto-intoxication or auto-infection, would include a tonic before meals, antiseptic with meals and two hours after meals, also daily colonic flushings with normal salt solution and baths of salt water for twenty minutes to one hour at night. The diet should be regulated and should consist entirely of milk at first. Should there be much decomposition in the stomach, lavage should be resorted to. The antiseptics and tonics can be varied in quantity and kind according to the individual or the results obtained. I consider glyco-thymoline, beta-naphthol, phosphate or benzoate of sodium, naptholine, calomel, peppermint, salol, bicarbonate of soda, the most valuable in these cases; and of tonics, strychnine or nux vomica and gentian. In cases where there has been actual damage to the brain, treatment has shown that the process of the disease can be stopped, though we must not expect to go further and replace damaged areas. Almost every case of mental disease begins with insomnia, and while this is not the cause of the disease, it retards repair, and until normal sleep is established, permanent result cannot be obtained. With the elimination of the toxins by antiseptics, sleep usually comes without sedatives. . . .

Dr. Meyer's letter follows, written after reading my paper, the substance of which is embodied in the above extracts.

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, March 2, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — The proposals seem to take very definite form. I wish Dr. Thompson and the State Board could make up their minds to move in the direction recommended, and to take once for all the step in the direction of having more than one institution for Boston. The present plans for the Boston Hospital must, of course, be carried through as they are; but it will be of *the greatest advantage to have a second institution planned at as early a date as possible, because that will divide the clinical material and bring about a natural and wholesome spirit of emulation.* I am writing to Dr. Frost to make an appeal to him in this direction.

I am greatly amused by the feeling of righteousness which must prevail among those who make an issue of the glyco-thymoline matter. I am very glad indeed to have the article because it absolutely explains your attitude in the matter.

With regard to Foxborough, I hope you will get satisfactory information from Dr. Neff. I am surprised to hear that Mr. Wood should not have been able to offer more information, and I wish I had the time to visit Dr. Neff.

With best regards,

Very sincerely yours,
ADOLF MEYER.

CHAPTER IV

Governor Foss' Message of March 1, 1912, and Dr. Meyer's Comments on it. — Hearing on the Message March 2, 1912. — Governor Foss sends a Second Message March 27, 1912. — Dr. Southard's Suggestions

Governor Foss had for some time been anxious to send a message to the Legislature on matters pertaining to the insane, and he consulted Dr. Meyer and others for advice. On March 1, 1912, he presented House Bill No. 1857, accompanying the estimates of the State Board of Insanity. He called attention to the fact that, beside estimates for special purposes, the regular estimates exceeded those of the previous year by 9 per cent.

"At this rate," he said, "the annual cost would increase 100 per cent every eight years, while our population increases only about 16% in a like period. I cannot believe that such a rate of increase of cost should be continued without subjecting the entire system to an exhaustive inquiry as to whether the form of state control now in force in this Commonwealth has justified itself. State supervision of insane institutions was undertaken as a means of improving and standardizing the methods formerly administered by separate communities. *And if the practical result has been to advance the ends of administrative measures to the end of ultimately checking the increasing ratio of insanity, then, whatever the cost, the existing method should receive hearty support,* but if such results are not being reached, an immediate change of policy should be considered."

He *protested against enlarging existing institutions,* on the theory that they must continue to expand, saying that it was a *mistake to suppose that the efficiency of an institution increased with its size beyond a certain limit.* He also recommended, in place of the existing Boards of Trustees of the State hospitals, moderately paid boards of four local members, together with one

member of the State Board, who should be required to attend their meetings and act as an *ex-officio* member. He said that administration by unpaid boards tends to throw the actual work upon some salaried subordinate, and stated that he was convinced that the system was not desirable for permanent boards and commissions. He also urged an extension of the boarding-out system, and concluded his message by stating that he approved the estimates for the regular work of the State Board of Insanity and the institutions under its charge, but disapproved all special appropriations based upon the assumption that the existing institutions must continue to enlarge.

I wrote to Dr. Meyer and enclosed a copy of this message. He answered as follows:

THE JOHNS HOPKINS HOSPITAL,
BALTIMORE, March 12, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I was much interested in both your letter and the Governor's message. The latter gives, I think, in very brief terms, a very commendable principle, and I hope it will have the weight it deserves.

Concerning the change with regard to the Boards of Trustees, I had a letter from a Trustee of one of the hospitals asking me whether that was my recommendation, and whether I realized that it was really aimed to introduce a system of bi-partisan boards, two members to be Republican and two Democratic, according to what Governor Foss said at one of the hospitals last summer. I feel absolutely sure that no such plan could be implied, because it would give the whole problem a partisan atmosphere which would be absolutely disastrous. As the proposal stands in the message, I feel that it fulfills exactly what is claimed, *i.e.*, a closer contact with the State Board and other institutions.

I hope your suggestion with regard to Foxborough will go through. Neff is a very earnest and capable man, who will, I believe, do the right thing. With regard to Dr. Frost, I know that he is in sympathy with my plea, but without wanting to take an aggressive stand with his Board and with the State Board. There may, of course, be some temptations to which he might readily yield, *i.e.*, the general advantage of a unitary system; but as I say, he accepts my arguments and would not be an obstacle.

Southard's conversation is, I think, very characteristic. I believe since our last talk he must realize that his former conceptions deserve to be modified.

I only wish one thing, *i.e.*, that Dr. Channing could be brought to terms, because I feel strongly that his influence has overemphasized the occasional causes for misconceptions or disagreeing.

I am leaving to-night for New York, and shall sail on the "Provence" on Thursday morning.

With best regards to Mrs. Briggs and yourself, I remain,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

Dr. Charles W. Page, the superintendent of the Danvers State Hospital, who was one of the leaders in abolishing restraint, was a strong supporter of my work. On March 20, 1912, he wrote me a letter which concluded with the following paragraphs:

The treatment you have received from the Executive Council has aroused my indignation. I fully sympathize with you, and my experience qualifies me for expert sympathy.

The management of Danvers Hospital incurred the ill will of Republican machine men years ago, and they lost no good opportunity to knock us. I was, however, able to maintain a large degree of indifference, knowing my views were vastly superior to those held by the politicians. I did, however, enjoy a trip of 160 miles, in November, 1910, to cast my Republican vote for Governor Foss, and when, after the election, it appeared that I was one of 30,000 Massachusetts Republicans to hold independent views anxious to express our disagreement with Governor Draper and his supporters, I felt anything but lonesome. I sincerely trust you will turn the tables upon your antagonists yet.

Dr. Charles E. Thompson, the superintendent of the Gardner State Colony, succeeded Dr. Copp as executive officer of the State Board of Insanity. Dr. Thompson was apparently in an uncomfortable position. He evidently wanted to be friendly with me and he wanted to be friendly with the Channing group. He was a protégé of Dr. Howard, who had nursed him along for many years, and he looked to Dr. Howard for his future success. In responding to any suggestion that I made, he always listened to me attentively,

but usually gave me a rather indefinite answer, — an answer which might be taken in either of two ways. I am sure he was anxious not to give offence. After one of our interviews, in which I urged the completion of the Boston State Hospital immediately, he wrote me the following letter:

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
STATE HOUSE, BOSTON

MARCH 22, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Since our conversation on the afternoon of the 18th, regarding the possible rapid development of the Boston State Hospital, I have given the matter considerable thought, and I am inclined to believe that as many serious mistakes might be made in completing the hospital in a very short time as by doing it more gradually, as has been the custom.

I can readily see that, while the plan in my office which we referred to may look to be the only development, it may be found that certain of those buildings may not be needed just as planned, while others not shown there may be needed. For instance, another infirmary building is shown on the plan, identical with the one just completed. As I see the problem now, I am not sure that another infirmary of this size will be found necessary, but I believe we can only determine this by building for special needs as they arise.

Therefore, while my mind is still open on the best method of building the Boston Hospital, I fear that as many, if not more, mistakes would be made by rushing the development too fast.

Very truly yours,
CHARLES E. THOMPSON,
Executive Officer.

I had made up my mind that Dr. Meyer's report which stood for so much that was progressive should not be turned down, but that his recommendations should be carried out. We had asked him to come to us; he had given of his time, his strength and intelligence, and it was our duty to see that this expenditure was not wasted. It was because of this feeling that I was urging the State Board to complete the Boston

State Hospital. It was my privilege later to be the means of carrying out most of his recommendations.

On March 25, 1912, a hearing was held by the Committee on Public Charitable Institutions on the Governor's Message. I addressed the Committee as follows:

Up to the present time it has been the policy of the State, or of the State Board of Insanity, to add to the present hospitals for the insane, buildings for patients, or to make to the present buildings additions to accommodate a part of the increase of patients each year.

The result of this policy has been to keep the superintendents active in building operations and the making of plans for enlargement, instead of allowing them to do the medical work which the patients are in dire need of.

As the buildings have been enlarged or added to, the power plants and laundries have become too small, and these in turn have had to be enlarged. It has been a sort of vicious circle, and no plant has ever been completed. The nearest to a complete plant to-day is perhaps the School for Feeble-minded. With the addition of the building they ask for this year, I understand the superintendent will be able to give all his time to the care of his patients, and will not be subject to the demands of architects and of builders.

It is with this end in view that I recommend that the Boston State Hospital should at once submit estimates for a complete rounding out of their institution to 2,000. As soon as this unit is finished, the superintendent will be able to devote his time to scientific and therapeutic work, and no one can trouble him with plans for buildings hereafter. This is the way a business house would plan. The manager of a large business corporation could not properly take care of the business — not even if he had sufficient men under him — and give his time continuously to building operations and plans.

Another reason for completing this unit at once would be that it would relieve the outlying hospitals of cases which do not belong to them and which should be brought back to within a 5 or 10 cent car fare of their relatives. To-day there are probably between 4,000 and 5,000 Metropolitan District patients under commitment in the State of Massachusetts. Of these, 950 only are taken care of in the Boston State Hospital. This leaves several thousand in hospitals scattered all over the State.

If this unit were completed at once, 2,000, or nearly 50 per cent of the patients belonging to the Metropolitan District, would be housed and treated where they properly belong.

Another unit should at once be started within the Metropolitan District which could very well duplicate the Boston State Hospital plant. This would take care of 2,000 more, and render unnecessary the enlarging of the outlying hospitals to units above 1,200. It would make Massachusetts a leader, — the first state to be ahead of the game. In other words, it would be the first

state properly to provide for its insane patients, and not be, as it always has been, from 300 to 500 behind in point of accommodation — and much more if appropriations are not yearly given to enlarge the institutions.

In the end it will be an economical procedure, and eventually, if insanity increases and the modern methods together with more medical care do not reduce instead of increase the number of insane in our State, other units can be added. But in the meantime each present unit should be made complete as soon as possible, psychopathic departments for acute cases being provided, instead of additional buildings for custodial care.

Further, to relieve the present situation, the Foxborough State Hospital, which now contains inebriates as well as insane, could be deserted by the inebriates and turned over to the State Board of Insanity for the insane only, thus providing for 200 more insane persons, if the Trustees at Foxborough would complete their reception plants and buildings, power plant and superintendent's house. This means only $50,000 to $60,000 over their present request, and would enable them to remove the inebriates from Foxborough to Norfolk and give to the superintendent at Norfolk the problem of a therapeutic proposition rather than a building proposition.

The laundry work could be done at Foxborough, as it is now, for some time to come. As an example, if these two hospitals were completed under the above recommendations, it would bring the unit of 1,000 patients at Foxborough under the medical care of the superintendent and his assistants probably four to five years earlier than the present method of building by piecemeal; and the unit of 2,000 patients at the Boston State Hospital would come under medical treatment, free from all distractions of building operations by the superintendent, from seven to ten years earlier than by the present plan of doing a little each year.

The disadvantage, also, of doing a little each year is that, by the time one building is completed the earlier buildings are almost antiquated, so that there is no harmony in the architectural and custodial features.[1]

The above would seem to me the best plan for getting right down to business, and the most economical for the State, for two reasons: first, that the building operations could be done at once at less cost than by extending over a long period; and second, that the patients would have the undivided attention of the physicians and sooner recover and become useful citizens.

In accordance with the above plan, I would recommend that the appropriation for the Foxborough State Hospital for the Norfolk development be sufficient to allow all of the inebriates to be moved at one time. (This, I understand, would amount to $33,000 for the superintendent's house and $16,000 for the laundry, although the laundry work could be done at Foxborough for a time.)

I would also recommend that an amount be added to the appropriation for the Boston State Hospital sufficient to make available the means to round out and complete their unit of 2,000 patients at once. This will probably be not less than $750,000 and not more than $900,000.

---

[1] The Boston State Hospital group of buildings is an example of this piecemeal construction.

I would further recommend that the sum of $100,000 be appropriated for the selection and bonding of land to be used as a site for a new hospital for the insane within the Metropolitan District, and that plans be started for the building of the same at once.

Thus I made public my views in regard to a State policy for the care of the insane a year before I was finally to become a member of the Board. In the contest against my appointment, no one assailed these views, and (despite the disorganization caused by the World War) they have virtually all been carried out, except the building of the Metropolitan State Hospital, which is still pending, although the site was secured in 1914 and plans drawn and approved by Governor and Council.

The next day the "Boston Globe" reported the hearing, as follows:

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of the State Board of Insanity [two other newspapers spoke of me at that time as already holding this office] advocated the Governor's idea. He favored the concentration of institutions to serve the districts in which they were located. Thus he said two large and complete hospitals would take care of the insane of the Metropolitan District. He believed that it was better policy for the Commonwealth to do all of this at once rather than by piecemeal, and that if a million dollars was put out at once the thing would be done and there would not be the continual coming year by year, as has been the policy. If the insane were brought back to the Metropolitan District who belong there it would stop the overcrowding of existing institutions, especially of Foxborough.

Dr. Channing, chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Boston State Hospital, who followed Dr. Briggs, opposed such an idea, and did not believe it was a wise policy for the State to embark upon. He said that the State started out with the idea of small hospitals for the various institutions, and that there isn't one of them to-day that is not caring for twice the number for which it was originally intended.

The result of the hearing was communicated to me by the Governor's confidential secretary in the following letter:

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
EXECUTIVE CHAMBER
STATE HOUSE, BOSTON

MARCH 26, 1912.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — The request of the Trustees of the Boston State Hospital for a building for a hundred disturbed women was rejected by the Committee as too high. The estimate was $115,000.

The Trustees have modified their plan to accommodate 120 women, by throwing some of the bedrooms into a dormitory and by cutting down the total estimate to $105,000. This throws the per capita estimate from $1,050 to $875.

How would it do to send this to the Legislature with favorable comment, and at the same time to use it as an example to show the desirability of constructing an entire institution as a unit, so as to avoid having these repeated conflicts over expensive piecemeal construction?

Following this recommendation, we could put in the substance of your recent memorandum, and refer to Foxborough as another similar case calling for unit construction.

I have been unable to get you on the phone to-day. Please call up, if you conveniently can, to-morrow.

Very truly yours,
JOHN C. SHERMAN.

On March 27, 1912, the Governor sent to the Legislature a message accompanying the estimate for the new building for women at the Boston State Hospital and approving the reduced estimate. The message continues:

In this connection, however, I desire to comment upon the existing method of building the State institutions. The Boston State Hospital, for example, represents to date an outlay of approximately one and one half million dollars, but it is not completed, and further construction may very probably call for another million dollars.

Yet the institution cannot reach its full measure of service to the public until completed, and, as each new addition comes up year by year, difficulty arises in determining whether or not it bears the best possible relation to the ultimate development of the institution.

Hospitals which are erected efficiently under private ownership are not as a rule constructed in this manner, for such obvious violation of good business practice would not be sanctioned by the executives of a private estate.

The mere item of land on which the Boston Hospital is being built represents an expenditure of many hundred thousand dollars, and under the present

plan a very large part of this land will lie idle for years, but at just as much expense as if it were being utilized.

We have at present, scattered over the State and housed in various State institutions, between four and five thousand insane patients from the metropolitan area, but only 950 of these are taken care of at the present Boston State Hospital. For this reason, the other State institutions become overcrowded, and repeated demands for their step-by-step enlargement are made upon the Legislature.

Moreover, the State institutions are now being repeatedly enlarged and altered merely to meet each year's needs, without proper regard to the importance of giving each institution, when finally completed, a self-containing and efficient plant and organization of suitable size.

This repeated rearrangement of the existing institutions undoubtedly diminishes the effectiveness of curative measures, and causes the important medical aspects of the institutions to be subordinated unduly to the work of merely providing suitable places of incarceration for the insane.

I therefore recommend, instead of adding further to the plant and equipment of our other State hospitals for the purpose of providing for patients from the Metropolitan District, that the Legislature concentrate such further expenditures mainly on the work of building up the Boston State Hospital to a maximum capacity of 2,000 inmates. This work should be done in from two to three years, and might involve a total expenditure of a million dollars. We are at present spending in special appropriations for new construction and equipment work under the Board of Insanity several hundred thousand dollars a year. The special appropriations now pending aggregate $961,000 for the current year.

A capacity of 2,000 inmates is recognized by modern authorities as the maximum effective capacity of a metropolitan asylum.

Having completed this institution, I am confident that it would be wise not to resume the present method of enlarging the institutions throughout the State, but to again concentrate the expenditures upon the development of institutions within or near the metropolitan area.

Such further metropolitan provision for future inmates, if fully outlined in the beginning, might well follow the colony plan of arrangement, in accord with the best European practice, which provides the nearest approach to normal living conditions obtainable in institutional work, and at a much lower per capita expense than our present asylums for incarcerating the insane.

The increasing urgency of our institutional work makes it imperative to proceed upon a definite plan and to obtain the co-operation of the public, the Legislature and the State Board in placing Massachusetts upon the highest possible footing as regards the custody and cure of the insane.

EUGENE N. FOSS.

After the hearing, Dr. Southard wrote me a letter in which he said:

I was impressed with your co-operative spirit as shown at the hearing. The division now seems to be one of details, as you suggested.

Trying as I had for many years to make my influence felt on the State Board of Insanity, for progress and the better care of the mentally ill, I kept pushing my plea for a rapid completion of the Boston State Hospital. In March I received the following rather feeble letter from Dr. Thompson:

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
STATE BOARD OF INSANITY
STATE HOUSE, BOSTON

MARCH 30, 1912.

L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston.*

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I received your letter of March 20, and feel that I should set myself aright, inasmuch as I think I notice throughout your letter that you feel I am opposed to the plan of completing the Boston State Hospital as rapidly as possible.

Let me say at once that this is not my position, and I cannot see how I could take any such position personally; and, as secretary of the Board of Insanity, how I could in my official position take such a position, after what has been said in several annual reports of the Board as to the future extensions of the Boston State Hospital.

There are, as you say, many patients in other hospitals who really should be in the Boston State Hospital, nearer their relatives, and I believe that the Boston State Hospital should be pushed to completion as fast as it can be done properly.

The only question in my mind at the time I wrote you was whether we might not make some serious mistake in building all in one or two years. Very possibly, given sufficient time to study the future needs more carefully, I might myself see the absolute future needs so clearly that a serious mistake would not be made. Therefore if it is possible to obtain a sufficient appropriation to rapidly extend the Boston State Hospital, I certainly should not oppose this and should do my best to see that suitable buildings were constructed to fit future needs.

While I cannot speak officially for Dr. Howard, I know that he is not opposed, as you thought, to completing the Boston State Hospital in a short space of time. He mentioned at the hearing that, even though rapid extension should be made, it would not be a "complete" hospital — that his experience had been that he had never seen what could be called a complete hospital. I know that he feels that if a large appropriation is granted this year, it is simply an anticipatory measure, making more rapid extension than had been outlined in the Board's reports. His position, then, I am sure, is not in oppo-

sition to such extension, and that such an extension at this time would be simply anticipatory.

Dr. Channing I do not know as well and do not know his intimate views concerning this problem, but I do know how Dr. Howard stands.

Of course you realize that if appropriations had been granted last year, as had been deemed necessary by the Board of Insanity, we would be much nearer to a completed institution than at present, so my position would be that if the Legislature of this year feels that other Legislatures have not been ready to grant needed extensions, and that they will now step in and grant a large appropriation, I certainly should be the last one to object to receiving such appropriation and doing with it the very best we could.

Sincerely yours,

CHARLES E. THOMPSON,
Executive Officer.

On April 1, 1912, Dr. E. E. Southard sent me the following suggestions for further provision for the insane of the Metropolitan District:

Metropolitan insane should be cared for within the Metropolitan District (10 or 15 cent car fare).

The Board of Insanity should be requested to make plans for proper provision to this end.

The Boston State Hospital Trustees *might or might not* be asked to take over the plant, when built, by the Board of Insanity.

The Board of Insanity might (1) plan a new institution; (2) enlarge the Boston State Hospital to become a Metropolitan District Hospital (which at present it is not); or (3) it might advocate a beginning of a colonial system for the Metropolitan District on such lines as permit a central infirmary group (Gardner plan).

This is properly State Board's business, rather than Boston State Hospital business.

The present executive officer would be especially qualified for colony planning.

Allowance for increase of insanity to be made.

CHAPTER V

Legislative Committee of the Massachusetts Medical Society. — Dr. W. N. Bullard on Hospital Superintendents. — Résumé of the Winter's Events as Contained in a Letter to Dr. Meyer. — Contest over Second Appointment. — Petitions to Governor Foss from Physicians, Citizens and Labor Organizations endorsing L. Vernon Briggs. — Interview with Dr. Howard

The Committee on State and National Legislation of the Massachusetts Medical Society for the year 1912 was composed of Drs. G. B. Shattuck, C. F. Withington, F. G. Wheatley, W. P. Bowers and Elisha Flagg. The Committee on Ethics and Discipline was composed of Drs. H. A. Gage, Henry Jackson, J. W. Bartol, G. DeN. Hough and S. B. Woodward.

The medical cabal in opposition to me knew that the Committee on State and National Legislation would not carry out their plans against me, though some of the members of the Committee were members of the cabal. It will be noted that on the Committee on Ethics and Discipline, strange to say, were Drs. Bartol and Woodward, whose underhand conduct in their activities against me was not exactly in accordance with the tenets of the Massachusetts Medical Society. (See pages 167, 182.)

The activities of my opponents did not prevent the American Medical Association from asking me to read a paper before their Nervous and Mental Section, at the meeting held at Atlantic City in May, 1912. Dr. E. E. Southard, as secretary of that section, assured me in a personal letter that if I was not able to present my paper in person, he would attend to it, adding:

In case you are not going to the Atlantic City meeting of the American Medico-Psychological Association, I shall stand ready, as the secretary of the Nervous and Mental Section of the American Medical Association, a week later, to insert your paper at the last minute.

I read a paper on "Bromide — Its Abuse, Especially in Epilepsy," and that same month, at the meeting of the American Medico-Psychological Association, I presented my paper "Three Months without and Three Months with a Social Worker in the Mental Clinic at the Boston Dispensary." Dr. Southard had written me: "There is no other paper on 'Social Service' at the Nervous and Mental Section, so I am greatly desirous that a paper in that direction be read at that meeting," and urged me to present it. This paper proved of interest to many, not only in this country but abroad, and favorable reviews of it were printed here and in the "Annales Medico-psychologiques," Paris, France, in May, 1912, and also in some of the German medical journals. (See "Boston Dispensary," page 196.)

In May the Optometry Bill came up, and some of the medical profession appealed to me to block it, but they did not appeal to me until it was before the Governor and he was ready to sign it. As an example of the trend of some of the letters that I received at that time from physicians outside of my specialty, indicating that my work and influence were being favorably recognized (which, of course, pleased me), is one from Dr. George S. Derby, the eminent oculist, dated from 7 Hereford Street, June 13, 1912, in which he wrote me that it was no use crying over spilt milk, but he was sorry that he had not asked for my help earlier in the game; and he closed his letter with:

We certainly will call upon you earlier if we are in another contest like this in the future, and I want to tell you once more how much we all appreciate your taking the trouble and time to go out of your way and work for us as you did.

Dr. W. N. Bullard, chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Monson State Hospital, about this time created a stir among the hospital superintendents by a paper which he read before the American Neurological Association in June, 1912, in which he said:

All psychiatrists, however, are not clinical psychiatrists. This fact, more than any other, has led to the separation and isolation of the great practicing psychiatrists of the country, — the superintendents of our large institutions. Owing to an unfortunate combination of circumstances and to loose political conditions, as well as to general popular indifference and ignorance, many of our prominent "institution officers" were forced to devote themselves rather to problems of administration than to those of clinical study, research and advance. Hence grew up the class of superintendents who have been so prominent before the profession and the legislative public, — men who know, or at least can now practice, little medicine or surgery, whatever their qualifications in early life may have been, but who, on the other hand, are excellently adapted to superintend and properly direct the building and heating of their buildings, the buying of coal and groceries, the making up of accounts even to minute details, such as will satisfy the stultifying red tape of State Boards of Estimate, and of looking after the external needs of a large institution, without knowledge or care of the great medical questions — except of those which, like epidemics, affect their reputation and their cost. And yet, after all, these men are members of the profession. They are doing a hard and very responsible work, into which they have been forced, many of them more or less against their inclination, and are doing it well, often against heavy odds of ignorance, stupidity and incompetence on the part of the politicians and the public.

Dr. Bullard was in a position to know whereof he spoke.

To further show the situation in Massachusetts at this time, I can do no better than quote a letter which I wrote Dr. Meyer on July 8, 1912:

My Dear Dr. Meyer: — I have been trying to find time to write you what has happened this winter. In accordance with your report, the Gov-

ernor recommended that the Boston State Hospital should complete its plans at once, so that another hospital could be started, duplicating the Boston State Hospital on the other side of the Metropolitan District. This would take care of 3,000 Boston insane, who are now distributed through the hospitals of the State (2,000 in Boston State Hospital and 1,000 more in the proposed new Metropolitan Hospital), thus relieving the said hospitals to that extent, and giving them a chance to improve their present plants instead of making additions for more patients, especially when their present institutions are too large for effective work.

The Worcester State Asylum (on Summer Street, Worcester) was closed, by order of the Legislature, at the request of the citizens of Worcester and against quite a fight put up by the State Board of Insanity. I think it cost about $1,000,000. The patients were distributed between Grafton Colony and the Worcester State Hospital. Dr. Quinby went to Europe and Dr. Scribner has taken his place at Worcester. Since Dr. Quinby left the institution, the letters that I received from patients there, which often average three or four a day, have been much better in tone, and letters even from patients who were apparently unreliable and whose statements I discounted have entirely changed from complaints to praise. I cannot help feeling that there has been a change for the better. How long it will last or be possible with so large a number of patients under one management I do not know, but the new broom has certainly swept a little cleaner than the old one.

I hear it rumored that Dr. Howard intends to leave the State Board in September, and some of my friends are urging me to wait until then before allowing the Governor to put my name in to succeed him. *My name is still on the Council Table, the Governor not having taken it up since it was turned down by the Council at the request of the opposition, so that I remain still as a candidate for Mr. Field's position.* Dr. Berkley recently informed me that he had heard on good authority from some one at Atlantic City that Dr. Howard had made the remark that he expected me to succeed him. I met Dr. Howard at Atlantic City, and when I asked him if he thought I ought to allow my name to go in again, as the Governor was urging me to do, his answer was, "Briggs, you are in the hands of your friends." I don't know what that means. Again Dr. Southard was very nice to me at Atlantic City. He advised me to change my paper to one on "Social Service," which I did, although I had not intended to read the paper on "Social Service" quite so soon. It created an hour and a half of discussion, and was pleasantly discussed by Drs. Southard, Houston, Frost and many others, including Mr. Elwood of New York. At the end of the session Dr. Southard said he thought he understood me better than he ever had, and that any doubtful feelings that he had ever had regarding me were entirely wiped out, and if I just kept quiet for a little while, he thought I would come out with my hands up. All this sounds very personal, but as I have depended upon you for advice as to just what to do and have endeavored to follow what has always been wise advice from you, I wanted to put you in possession of all that I knew concerning myself as well as other things, mainly because I felt that if I should be placed on the State Board of Insanity, I might be able to bring about what it would be impossible to do from the

outside, and in bringing about certain changes, it would be done only under advice from such men as you. If I could stand for, in a small way, what you stand for in a great way I should feel that my life work had been worth while.

I must not forget to tell you that Dr. Frost, in giving an account of the Psychopathic Hospital, gave me credit for having started the movement by establishing the observation hospital or ward connected with the Boston State Hospital. This is the first public recognition I have had, and I cannot tell you how deeply it affected me. Dr. Russell said afterwards to Dr. Frost that he had done a very handsome thing, and what he ought to have done as being at the head of the hospital.

Now to come back to the recommendation of the Governor. A hearing was held on the message after it was decided that it would cost $1,000,000 to complete the Boston State Hospital. Five to seven years had been the plan for completion. With immediate funds, the Governor felt it ought to be completed in two years, or, at the outside, three years, which would be about half the time planned for. Dr. Howard and Dr. Channing opposed the appropriation on two grounds: first, that they were not ready for it and could not complete it at once; second, that the law required that they should furnish plans before last November for money appropriated this winter. The committee later said that they had never known any institution to argue against receiving money before, and were very strong for the passage of that part of the Governor's message. Dr. Thompson being doubtful of the committee's action, I took him to the chairman, who not only promised that the report of his committee would be unanimous for the immediate appropriation of $1,000,000, but said that the Legislature could and would pass a resolve at the same time upon the recommendation of his committee that the law applying to plans should not be applicable in this case. Still Dr. Channing held out and said that it was impossible for them to go ahead with the work faster than exactly as they had planned. This was a little discouraging, but I hear they are working on plans now, and I believe that they intend to have their plans completed this summer, and, if all is well, to present their complete plans next fall. This is some delay, but it will also be some gain, provided we have a Governor next year who will be as favorable to your recommendations as Governor Foss has been. This was their chance — next year we shall have to trust all will be well.

Dr. Channing at the same time opposed building another hospital, and stated before the committee that it was the intention of Dr. Copp and all those who were most interested in the insane in the State to have a colony and a hospital for nervous breakdowns attached to the Boston State Hospital — possibly a population of 4,000, but the buildings might be distributed in different parts of the Metropolitan District. He insinuated in his talk to the Committee at the hearing that Dr. Frost might not be willing to take charge of so many people and assume the responsibilities of these different institutions, but further stated that a good many men thought as he did and would be willing to assume such responsibility. He didn't think it was asking too much of one superintendent. I afterwards wondered if Dr. Frost was happy in such a statement, and if he would be contented under such a rule.

The Governor vetoed the Westborough appropriation because of a certain amount of what he considered was graft, and the Worcester appropriation he also vetoed under the same belief as to land deals; and he feels that he has written evidence of the fact that the State was paying more than it ought, and he further did not wish to have Worcester enlarged. Most of the other appropriations he approved of. His appointments of Trustees I think have been wise. I have rendered what help I could, and have got two new Trustees for Dr. Fernald, both of whom meet with Dr. Fernald's hearty approval. The new Trustee whom Governor Foss appointed for Bridgewater and Tewksbury, Mrs. Henrietta Cushing, died suddenly two weeks ago of heart disease.

I will mail you a copy of Governor Foss's Message and any other papers which I think may interest you. I think the "Journal of Insanity" is going to publish my paper on "Social Service." If they do not, you will find it in the "Proceedings of the Medico-Psychological Association."

I am sorry that you have to remain in Baltimore this summer. Perhaps, after all, you will come north, and if you do I trust you will plan to make us a visit. I wish again to thank you for the good work you have done for our insane, and not forgetting the change of feeling towards me which has been created by you and through your efforts. I fully appreciate it.

Very sincerely and gratefully yours,

L. Vernon Briggs.

Dr. Meyer wrote me a very pleasant letter in reply to this on August 14, 1912, most of it personal, but the following is of interest here:

The intention of Governor Foss to recommend you in the place of Dr. Howard is difficult to judge, because so much depends upon the feeling and attitude of those who have to decide the question. I am inclined to think that they will make strong efforts to maintain the present régime in the hope that Governor Foss will retire; and as long as Dr. Channing's attitude cannot be changed, there will be a very strong factor at work. We would like to see the day when war is superfluous; but I suppose that the present situation is subject to the vicissitudes of war, and the time when sensible arbitration will cover the differences of opinion is probably not here yet. This simply means that the General must know his grounds and his forces and those of his opponents.

Since the Council had refused to confirm my appointment by Governor Foss to replace Henry P. Field of Northampton as a member of the State Board of Insanity, in November, 1911, the Governor had made no other appointment to that position, and Mr. Field

was still on the Board, acting as a "hold-over," during the year 1912.

In September, 1912, the term of office of Dr. Herbert B. Howard, the chairman of the Board, was to expire. The objection which had been raised to my appointment in 1911 — that the vacancy left by Mr. Field should be filled by another lawyer or a business man, to avoid having the Board composed almost entirely of physicians — was not valid in the case of my appointment as Dr. Howard's successor, as in this case it was simply replacing a physician by a physician.

The "Boston Medical and Surgical Journal" of August 29, 1912, contained the following editorial:

> The term of office of Dr. Herbert B. Howard of Boston, chairman of the Massachusetts State Board of Insanity, will expire next month. It is most important that the services of so valuable an official should be secured to the Commonwealth by his reappointment. To this end a petition has been sent to the Governor signed by over 100 physicians. It is to be hoped that the members of our profession generally throughout the State will lend their influence to secure the reappointment of Dr. Howard.

Names for the petition were secured by sending out mailing cards for signatures bearing the following statement:

> Please add my name to the petition for the reappointment of Dr. Herbert B. Howard for the State Board of Insanity.
>
> Signed —— ——

The cards were accompanied by a stamped envelope, addressed to Dr. Edwin H. Brigham, Boston Medical Library, 8 The Fenway, Boston, Mass.

The "Boston Herald," previously referred to as being the spokesman of the medical ring, stated on September 12, 1912, that the petition was signed by nearly 1,000 physicians, "including practically every

medical man of prominence in Greater Boston" (it was really signed by less than 500), and in an editorial of the same date it stated:

> It is difficult to believe that Governor Foss will hesitate over the reappointment to the State Board of Insanity of Dr. Herbert B. Howard, whose term of office is about to expire. He is one of the most useful and public-spirited men in the service of the State, and his acquaintance with the particular class of unfortunates with which this Board deals is exceptionally large. The Governor has made many good reappointments to the saving of the State institutions. Here is a case where he should continue that policy.

Dr. Howard had been a member of the State Board of Insanity for fourteen years, but had recently been appointed physician in charge of the Peter Bent Brigham Hospital, at a salary of $10,000 a year, — a position which would supposedly demand his undivided attention.

The following names, in addition to most of the names which appeared on a previous petition (see page 65), also appeared on this petition to the Governor in favor of Dr. Howard: Alexander Cochran, William H. Wellington, Horace S. Sears, Henry S. Howe, W. A. Gaston, E. S. Draper, I. McD. Garfield, John P. Reynolds, Edw. Hamlin, S. H. Fessenden, Neal Rantoul, R. W. Emmons 2d, Chas. F. Adams, 2d, F. L. Higginson, Jr., Geo. C. Lee, Walter Hunnewell, F. S. Mosely, Gordon Abbot, Philip Stockton, Gardner M. Lane and Moses Williams. It is of interest to note that Mr. Williams and Mr. Higginson were Trustees of the Massachusetts General Hospital, where Dr. Howard was superintendent, and they were also Trustees of the McLean Asylum.

The persons most active in opposing me as a candidate for the State Board of Insanity were: Dr. Henry

R. Stedman (chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Taunton State Hospital and proprietor of "Bournewood," a private sanitarium for mental patients, and whose wife was a Trustee of the Monson State Hospital and a member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded), Dr. George W. Gay (Trustee of the Wrentham State School for the Feeble-minded), Dr. Walter Channing (chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Boston State Hospital and Boston Psychopathic Hospital, member of the Corporation of the School for the Feeble-minded, and proprietor of a private sanitarium for mental cases at Brookline), Dr. John B. Blake (Trustee of the Gardner State Colony), Dr. P. C. Knapp (one of the most active members of the Boston Society of Neurology and Psychiatry, of which Dr. Channing was founder and President), Dr. Herbert B. Howard (Chairman of the Massachusetts State Board of Insanity, whom I was to replace, and who was at one time superintendent of the Tewksbury State Infirmary for Insane and Paupers), Dr. John W. Bartol (a friend of Dr. Channing and while assuming the rôle of friend to me was working with my enemies against me), Dr. Edward H. Bradford (a friend of Dr. Bartol and used as a tool by the medical cabal; he was Dean of the Harvard Medical School), Dr. Hugh Cabot (a friend of Drs. Howard and Bartol), Dr. John B. Hawes (a friend of Dr. Hugh Cabot and of Dr. Howard, the latter promising him a reward for working against me), Dr. Henry Jackson (a friend of Dr. Bartol and of Dr. Channing), Dr. George B. Shattuck (chairman of the Consulting Board of the Danvers State Hospital and member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts

School for the Feeble-minded), Dr. Fred C. Shattuck (member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded), Herbert Parker (member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded and employed by the medical cabal as their attorney), J. Otis Wardwell (a well-known lobbyist employed by the cabal to influence certain members of the Governor's Council against me), James J. Storrow (who received letters discrediting me from Dr. Hugh Cabot, and apparently believed them), Dr. Arthur K. Stone (a member of the Board of Consultants of the Tewksbury State Infirmary for Insane and Paupers), Dr. Walter E. Paul (a member of the Board of Consultants of the Tewksbury State Infirmary for Insane and Paupers), Frank B. Sanborn (member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded), Mrs. Lilla Cabot Perry (a friend and relative of Drs. Bartol and Hugh Cabot and a friend of Dr. Bradford), and Simon Swig (an associate of Drs. Channing, Stedman, and Bradford).

A petition was also sent to the Governor by Dr. Francis D. Donoghue, Ex-President of the Massachusetts Society of Examining Physicians, Dr. George Whitehouse Ryan and Dr. Frank E. Allard, President of the Massachusetts Society of Examining Physicians, and others, endorsing me for the State Board of Insanity. It stated:

> He is well qualified by reason of his high professional standing and sympathetic nature to render the best kind of service to the State.

Some of my friends prepared a letter which they sent to members of the Massachusetts Medical Society at this time. It read as follows:

DEAR DOCTOR: — The following petition has already been signed by many physicians:

To His Excellency, Governor EUGENE N. FOSS:

If the name of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs is to be presented by you to the Executive Council to fill the vacancy that exists on the State Board of Insanity, we, the undersigned, members of the medical profession of Massachusetts, respectfully endorse Dr. Briggs for the same, believing as we do that he is eminently qualified to fill the position.

Dr. Briggs has devoted himself for many years to the problems of insanity, especially the prevention and cure. He is a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, American Medico-Psychological Association and many other medical societies of the State and country. He is, and has been for more than ten years, physician to the Mental Department of the Boston Dispensary. He is a member of the Commission of the Alien Insane, representing the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

If his appointment to the State Board of Insanity meets with your approval will you kindly sign the card and mail it at once in the enclosed stamped envelope.

Respectfully yours,

JOEL E. GOLDTHWAIT, M.D.
VINCENT Y. BOWDITCH, M.D.
GEORGE O. CLARK, M.D.

The card, with envelope addressed to Dr. Vincent Y. Bowditch, read as quoted in the letter. It was signed and returned by over 1,700 physicians. The starred names are those of physicians who signed for Dr. Howard earlier, not realizing he was opposed to me, but when they were presented with the petition bearing my name on a post card on which to sign they endorsed me unqualifiedly.

To His Excellency Governor EUGENE N. FOSS:

If the name of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs is to be presented by you to the Executive Council to fill the vacancy that exists on the State Board of Insanity, we, the undersigned, members of the medical profession of Massachusetts, respectfully endorse Dr. Briggs for the same, believing as we do that he is eminently qualified to fill the position.

Vincent Y. Bowditch, Boston.
Henry O. Marcy, Boston.
Henry M. Chase, Boston.
Charles G. Cumston, Boston.
Channing Frothingham, Jr., Boston.
J. W. Elliot, Boston.
Harold W. Dana, Boston.
Thomas Amory De Blois, Boston.
Rockwell A. Coffin, Boston.
J. Payson Clark, Boston.
George Stedman, Boston.
William S. Boardman, Boston.

Theo. Chapin Beebe, Boston.
Walter M. Boothby, Boston.
Wm. Pearce Coues, Boston.
Walter G. Chase, Boston.
Charles Hunter Dunn, Boston.
William H. Davis, Boston.
Minot F. Davis, Boston.
R. L. Emerson, Boston.
W. E. Fay, Boston.
Edmund D. Spear, Boston.
John B. Swift, Boston.
Townsend W. Thorndike, Boston.
*Thomas Morgan Rotch, Boston.
George S. Derby, Boston.
A. F. Christian, Boston.
H. C. Clapp, Boston.
John T. Bottomley, Boston.
Walter C. Bailey, Boston.
James G. Mumford, Boston.
F. B. Talbot, Boston.
Frank E. Allard, Boston.
W. E. Ladd, Boston.
Frederick W. Johnson, Boston.
Everett D. Hooper, Boston.
Freeman Allen, Boston.
John Bergeson, Boston.
Howard W. Buck, Boston.
Frederick M. Briggs, Boston.
Joel E. Goldthwait, Boston.
James C. White, Boston.
David D. Scannell, Boston.
Paul Thorndike, Boston.
G. M. Garland, Boston.
Benjamin Tenney, Boston.
Edward L. Twombly, Boston.
Geo. H. Washburn, Boston.
*J. Collins Warren, Boston.
Conrad Wesselhoeft, Boston.
Edward O. Otis, Boston.
Richard F. O'Neil, Boston.
F. S. Newell, Boston.
Leroy M. S. Miner, Boston.
Edwin E. Locke, Boston.
Luther G. Paul, Boston.
Harry W. Goodall, Boston.
F. H. Davenport, Boston.
T. Chittenden Hill, Boston.
Henry Lee Morse, Boston.
John H. Blodgett, Boston.
*George S. C. Badger, Boston.
Gardner W. Allen, Boston.
Henry B. Chandler, Boston.
Frederick S. De Lue, Boston.
Robert B. Dixon, Boston.
Henry I. Bowditch, Boston.
J. Dellinger Barney, Boston.
Maynard Ladd, Boston.
George O. Clark, Boston.
Edgar Garceau, Boston.
Stella M. Taylor, Roxbury.
C. L. Overland, Boston.
Harry C. Holmes, Boston.
G. P. Towle, Boston.
W. A. Brooks, Boston.
Harry A. Barnes, Boston.
Stanley W. Blanchard, Boston.
William J. Brown, Boston.
Frank L. Burt, Boston.
Henry J. Barnes, Boston.
J. Emmons Briggs, Boston.
G. A. Morrill, Boston.
Andrew P. Cornwall, Boston.
F. E. Roberts, Boston.
Thos. Reilly, Boston.
Carlisle Reed, Boston.
A. Kidder Page, Boston.
Chas. E. Page, Boston.
Geo. O. Jenkins, Boston.
*L. P. Felch, Boston.
Marion Coon, Boston.
Herman W. Marshall, Boston.
*Harris P. Mosher, Boston.
Clara C. Austin, Boston.
Samuel C. Mintz, Boston.
James B. Fitzgerald, Boston.
George McEvoy, Boston.
M. Russell MacAusland, Boston.
Frank P. Williams, Boston.
Frederic A. Williams, Boston.
Albert E. Webb, Boston.
C. R. Vinal, Boston.
John H. Urick, Boston.
Albert H. Tuttle, Boston.
Sidney S. Carruth, Dorchester.

Joseph Lewandowski, Boston.
Geo. Whitehouse Rogers, Boston.
Robert P. Fair, Boston.
Calvin B. Faunce, Jr., Boston
Chandler Robbins, Boston.
Arthur W. Fairbanks, Boston.
A. L. Flanders, Boston.
Katherine A. Fenelon, Boston.
G. C. Smith, Boston.
G. E. Richards, Boston.
F. R. Tower, Boston.
Maurice Vejux Tyrode, Boston.
S. S. Carpenter, Boston.
Oliver G. Tinkham, Boston.
E. Theodore Thurlow, Boston.
Eliza B. Cahill, Boston.
John A. Tenney, Boston.
Wm. R. P. Emerson, Boston.
P. S. McAdams, Boston.
Geo. F. Eames, Boston.
Honore J. Cote, Boston.
Martin W. Moran, Boston.
James C. McKenna, Boston.
Sylvester F. McKeen, Allston.
Charles Ober Kepler, Boston.
*Walter R. Mansfield, Boston.
Martha E. Lovell, Allston.
C. Augusta Pope, Boston.
Edward L. Parks, Boston.
Charles L. Pearson, Boston.
Edward F. O'Shea, East Boston.
Walter F. Nolen, Boston.
Caroline E. Hastings, Boston.
W. F. Noyes, Roxbury.
E. C. Hebbard, Boston.
Earl E. Bessey, Boston.
Wm. W. Bellamy, Boston.
Geo. W. Clement, Boston.
George W. Goode, Boston.
Alfred W. Rogers, Boston.
Max C. Groppner, Boston.
John H. Russell, Boston.
Henry J. Perry, Boston.
J. D. Robertson, Boston.
Cleaveland Floyd, Boston.
A. B. Emmons, 2d, Boston.
Miles Martin, Boston.
Margaret T. Finneran, Boston.
George M. Muttart, Boston.
R. G. Wadsworth, Boston.
Frederick K. Williams, Boston.
Albert Evans, Boston.
George G. Smith, Boston.
Henry V. McLaughlin, Boston.
Hugh Williams, Boston.
Agnes C. Victor, Boston.
Geo. H. Littlefield, Boston.
Lucia F. Vickery, Boston.
Henry Tolman, Jr., Boston.
Augustus L. Tallman, East Boston.
E. L. Rogers, Boston.
*Carrie Innes Felch, Boston.
Frederick W. Rice, Boston.
Edwin T. Rollins, Jamaica Plain.
Anna G. Richardson, Boston.
F. L. Taylor, Boston.
Richmond Favour, Jr., Boston.
John F. Fennessey, Boston.
James T. Gallagher, Boston.
F. L. Richardson, Boston.
E. P. Tripp, West Roxbury.
E. C. Thompson, Boston.
E. Heath Clark, Boston.
Edwin W. Smith, Boston.
Arthur L. Chute, Boston.
Peter Hunter Thompson, Boston.
T. P. Fitzgerald, Brighton.
J. Danforth Taylor, East Boston.
Julia Lombard Moriarty, Boston.
E. T. Easton, Boston.
John F. Casey, Allston.
Herbert McIntosh, Boston.
G. C. Moore, Boston.
M. E. Mann, Boston.
Hannah G. Myrick, Boston.
Nathaniel R. Mason, Boston.
L. R. G. Crandon, Boston.
Carl A. Lindquist, Boston.
John S. Phelps, Boston.
Henry P. Leonard, Boston.
C. Frank Osman, Dorchester.
Wilfred E. Harris, Boston.
Albert J. Shaw, Boston.
Margaret L. Noyes, Boston.

F. I. Proctor, Boston.
I. L. Roberts, Boston.
Warren A. Rodman, Boston.
Samuel J. Harris, Boston.
Henry T. Hutchins, Boston.
W. Holbrook Lowell, Boston.
Malcolm Dean Miller, Boston.
J. Herbert Johnson, Boston.
Henry V. Reynolds, Dorchester.
George Hopkinson, Boston.
W. H. Tobey, Boston.
Edith Francis Child, Boston.
Jacob D. Snyder, Boston.
Henry B. Stevens, Boston.
M. P. Smithwick, Boston.
Thos. I. Deacon, Boston.
Chas. H. Williams, Boston.
Roger S. York, Boston.
John J. Howard, Boston.
Francis E. Carroll, Boston.
C. D. Jenkins, Boston.
G. F. Walker, Boston.
Charles H. Winn, Boston.
S. Myers, East Boston.
N. Louise Lawrence, Boston.
Oliver A. Lothrop, Boston.
Willis H. Sawyer, Dorchester.
J. H. Sparling, Boston.
John Perrins, Boston.
John H. Payne, Boston.
Edmund W. Clap, Boston.
D. Pearce Penhallow, Boston.
John Therrier, Boston.
J. L. Plunkett, Boston.
H. Sterling Pomeroy, Boston.
John Duff, Boston.
Richard F. Chase, Boston.
Wm. A. White, Roxbury.
Edmund F. Walsh, Boston.
Franklin Welles, Boston.
Gilman A. Wheeler, Boston.
Wyman Whittemore, Boston.
P. E. Deehan, Boston.
Wm. Worthy, Boston.
Laurence F. Cusick, Boston.
Grace Atkins Jordan, Boston.
J. J. Corbett, Boston.
Charles D. Jones, Boston.
John E. Kinney, Boston.
Ellis Preston Jones, Boston.
Ernest M. Jordan, Boston.
J. Frances Ford, Roslindale.
Bradford Kent, Dorchester.
Wm. W. Bellamy, Dorchester.
Wm. H. Bennett, Hyde Park.
William H. Briard, Allston.
Allen Greenwood, Boston.
Charles B. Darling, Boston.
J. H. Devenny, Dorchester.
Arthur M. Dodge, Boston.
Samuel H. Durgin, Boston.
R. H. Gilpatrick, Boston.
S. Martel, Boston.
R. H. Houghton, East Boston.
Edward Hartshorn, Boston.
Charles R. Morgan, Boston.
Francis W. Reid, Boston.
W. Alvan Hitchcock, Jr., Boston.
Albert E. Rogers, Boston.
Thos. J. McCormick, Roxbury.
S. E. Crocker, Boston.
Jos. E. Sternberg, Boston.
T. M. Strong, Boston.
Edward C. Streeter, Boston.
Frederic W. Sherburne, Boston.
Charles A. Berry, Boston.
Edmund S. Young, Boston.
George F. Harding, Boston.
Eliza Taylor Ransom, Boston.
James H. Payne, Boston.
DeWitt G. Wilcox, Boston.
Franklin W. White, Boston.
John T. Williams, Boston.
E. Sam'l Eastman, Boston.
Arthur T. Legg, Boston.
C. C. Simmons, Boston.
L. M. Spear, Boston.
Malcolm Seymour, Boston.
Marcellus Reeves, Boston.
Joseph E. Ingoldsby, Dorchester.
Geo. H. Powers, Jr., Boston.
William H. Trayes, Boston.
Michael Chirurg, Boston.
Emily F. Pope, Boston.

John H. Cunningham, Jr., Boston.
Elizabeth T. Gray, Boston.
Frederick Cheney, Boston.
G. Frederick Whelpley, Boston.
Arthur W. Weysse, Boston.
Carl L. Watson, Boston.
Nathaniel K. Wood, Boston.
Hilbert F. Day, Boston.
John Dane, Boston.
E. W. Daniels, Boston.
Joel Ginsburg, Dorchester.
F. H. Cleaves, Brighton.
James Krauss, Boston.
W. W. Journeay, Boston.
L. M. Crosby, Boston.
J. H. Grimes, Boston.
Everett Jones, Boston.
Edward B. Kellogg, Boston.
N. M. Goodman, Boston.
H. F. Brackett, Brighton.
James H. Gettings, Boston.
Fred Gowing, Boston.
Frederic J. Denning, South Boston.
Edwin A. Daniels, Boston.
Joseph W. Grady, Boston.
Geo. W. Galvin, Boston.
J. M. Dutton, Boston.
Fred Drew, Boston.
Annie M. Gannon, Boston.
Edmund Scott Dow, Allston.
Wm. W. Dodge, Boston.
Perley F. Gardiner, Boston.
Frank A. Davis, Boston.
Clarence M. Casselberry, Boston.
Annie Lee Hamilton, Boston.
Edgar M. Holmes, Boston.
Daniel Lawrence Hunt, Boston.
Freeman C. Hersey, Boston.
Henry R. Higgins, Allston.
Geo. W. Holmes, Boston.
S. Willard Coy, East Boston.
Edwin C. Hixon, Boston.
F. R. Bowman, Boston.
Harold W. Baker, Boston.
W. E. Boardman, Boston.
C. R. C. Borden, Boston.
William F. Brown, Roxbury.
John T. Bowen, Boston.
John T. Sullivan, Boston.
Ernest S. Bisbee, Boston.
Edw. P. Starbird, Boston.
Arthur J. Shaw, Boston.
Malcolm Storer, Boston.
Ellen Bird Nott, Boston.
Daniel A. Sullivan, Boston.
Herbert H. Sawyer, Boston.
Lucy Appleton, Boston.
Edward K. Ellis, Boston.
H. H. Hartung, Boston.
Michael J. Hart, Boston.
I. Eugene R. Reid, Boston.
G. W. Cutler, Boston.
C. Deletang Ebann, Boston.
John B. Moran, Roxbury.
Norman St. George, Boston.
Francis Coffin Martin, Boston.
Benzion G. Wernick, Boston.
Hubert J. Williams, Boston.
Manoug G. Yardume, Boston.
Geo. S. Wilson, Boston.
A. Siegfried Von Sonnebery, Boston.
Timotheus Taminosian, Boston.
L. Porsenna Solsness, Boston.
J. H. Sherman, South Boston.
Peter M. Smith, Boston.
Wm. E. Simmons, Boston.
William H. Regan, Boston.
William H. Ruddick, South Boston.
Alva E. Poole, Boston.
Burton H. Proctor, Boston.
Frank Piper, Boston.
Robert H. Nichols, Boston.
Wm. H. Mitchell, Boston.
John F. McCormick, Boston.
W. J. McNally, Charlestown.
John F. Martin, Boston.
Fishel T. Muitz, Boston.
C. D. Gibson Mack, Boston.
F. L. Lowell, Boston.
R. O. Dodge, Hyde Park.
W. W. Goodwin, East Boston.
Samuel Delano, Boston.
C. B. Doane, Boston.
John W. Dewis, Boston.

Arthur P. Chadbourne, Boston.
James W. Hinckley, Boston.
Columbus W. Harrison, Boston.
M. E. Halsall, East Boston.
Edward R. Williams, Boston.
E. Hitchcock, Jr., Boston.
Noble H. Hill, Boston.
S. F. Curran, Boston.
I. D. Carl, Boston.
David N. Bloom, East Boston.
G. V. Buehler, Boston.
Francis H. Browne, Boston.
Edward E. Bancroft, Wellesley.
Edward H. Baxter, Hyde Park.
William E. Chenery, Boston.
R. A. Hatch, Boston.
Horace K. Boutwell, Boston.
Charles F. Stacey, Boston.
A. C. Sherwin, Boston.
George W. Spears, Boston.
S. A. Kimball, Boston.
Maude G. Furniss, Boston.
A. R. Kimpton, Boston.
W. A. Earle, Boston.
Mary F. Hobart, Boston.
Jno. B. Hall, Boston.
Sarah E. Palmer, Boston.
Mark H. Wentworth, Boston.
M. S. Crockett, Boston.
R. C. Gwin, Allston.
S. E. Courtney, Boston.
P. J. Timmins, South Boston.
E. A. Carleton, Boston.
Henry C. Williams, Boston.
Dwight F. Willis, Boston.
Ernesto Weinert, Boston.
Robert W. Power, Boston.
Luigi Verde, Boston.
A. G. Trafton, Boston.
Charles S. Stone, Boston.
M. D. W. Stone, Boston.
J. H. Stewart, Boston.
E. P. Reid, Boston.
John C. Rogers, South Boston.
Gaetano Praino, Boston.
Thomas W. Patrick, Boston.
Ralph Waldo Place, Boston.
Fred G. Philbrick, Boston.
Daniel J. McSweeney, Boston.
Francis Matulaistis, South Boston.
George P. Morris, South Boston.
Mary Morey, Boston.
Samuel W. Meyers, Boston.
Theo. E. A. McCurdy, Boston.
Nathan N. Levins, Boston.
Charles Otis Loomis, Boston.
John G. Lane, South Boston.
F. M. Johnson, Boston.
Arthur P. Janes, Boston.
Edward D. Hartnett, East Boston.
Albert A. Hoag, Boston.
John F. Harvey, Boston.
Simon Hurwitz, Boston.
Saverio Greco, Boston.
Paine FitzGerald, Boston.
Daniel F. Ford, Boston.
Wm. H. Emery, Boston.
Frank P. Dyer, Boston.
Edwin W. Dwight, Boston.
Frederick F. Doggett, Boston.
Frances H. Drew, Boston.
John G. Dearborn, Charlestown.
D. A. Costa, Boston.
W. C. Clarke, Boston.
O. F. Cushing, Boston.
Elmer L. Brine, Boston.
Harry Belin, Boston.
Frank F. Bernard, Boston.
R. Brindisi, Boston.
John S. Brownrigg, Roxbury.
E. L. Booth, East Boston.
Enos E. Bowen, East Boston.
H. W. Adams, Boston.
Winfield H. Ames, Boston.
James C. Ady, Boston.
P. A. Adamian, Boston.
Wm. A. Watkins, Boston.
E. A. Gilman, Boston.
John E. Mayers, South Boston.
Grace E. Cross, South Boston.
Wm. F. Patterson, Charlestown.
Joseph C. Stedman, Jamaica Plain.

Francis H. Slack, Hyde Park.
D. T. O'Keefe, Jamaica Plain.
J. S. H. Leard, Jamaica Plain.
O. R. Chadwell, Jamaica Plain.
B. H. Calkin, Jamaica Plain.
Burt N. Bridgman, Jamaica Plain.
Edward G. West, Roxbury.
Charles R. Whitcombe, Roslindale.
H. Warren White, Roxbury.
Joseph Williams, Dorchester.
Henry C. Towle,[1] Boston.
Robert Swift, Roslindale.
F. S. Schmidt, Roxbury.
Joseph L. Sullivan, Boston.
Max Sturnick, Dorchester.
Charles F. Stack, Hyde Park.
Frederick M. Sears, Dorchester.
Rudolph E. T. Rhames, Roxbury.
A. De Robertis, Boston.
Eugene C. Peck, Hyde Park.
D. F. O'Callaghan, Dorchester.
W. H. Milliken, Roxbury.
David McIntyre, Dorchester.
D. Harley Kent, Boston.
Howard James, Boston.
L. M. Holmes, Boston.
W. P. Hammond, Charlestown.
Charles O. Hart, Boston.
Joseph Holzman, Boston.
Thomas E. Galvin, Roxbury.
O. R. T. Lesperance, Boston.
H. Howard Flagg, Charlestown.
Edwin S. Foster, Boston.
Dan'l P. Doyle, Boston.
Bennett F. Davenport, Boston.
Bernard T. Daly, Boston.
Richard F. Daly, Charlestown.
Arathena B. Drake, South Boston.
Alfred T. Dalrymple, South Boston.
Willett S. Connors, Boston.
Richard Currier, Boston.
L. A. Cliff, Boston.
William H. Boodro, South Boston.
Eugene M. Brown, Boston.
James F. Brady, Boston.
John A. Barry, Charlestown.
Charles E. Buck, Boston.
Harry N. Broadbridge, Boston.
Alfred M. Allen, Boston.
John Adams, Boston.
Adelaide N. Abbott, South Boston.
N. L. Allen, Boston.
Modestino Acone, Boston.
George H. Stone, Boston.
James E. Prior, Boston.
Alexander Kohan, Roxbury.
Frank A. Hamilton, Boston.
C. N. Garland, Boston.
Albert H. Tompkins, Jamaica Plain.
C. H. Pfefferkorn, Jamaica Plain.
Leon Newman, Jamaica Plain.
Henry M. Emmons, Jamaica Plain.
Laurence H. Collier, Jamaica Plain.
Fred S. Bennett, Jamaica Plain.
S. A. Bond, Jamaica Plain.
John Wallace, Roxbury.
W. H. Winslow, Roxbury.
Adeline W. Wildes, Roxbury.
John P. Treanor, Dorchester.
Madison T. Thurber, Dorchester.
E. F. Spaulding, Boston.
Robert T. Stearns, Mattapan.
Joseph Shohan, Roxbury.
John W. Sanborn, Boston.
Frederick W. Stetson, Boston.
S. Richmond, Roxbury.
Frederick Reis, Dorchester.
W. T. Patch, Roxbury.
Joseph J. O'Brien, Dorchester.
John M. Martin, Boston.
John S. Mahoney, Roslindale.
John H. Murphy, Dorchester.
G. M. Mason, Dorchester.
John Malone, Roxbury.
Charles H. Miller, Dorchester.
Alex. A. Macdonald, Dorchester.
James J. Lynch, Dorchester.
Lucy A. Kirk, Dorchester.
J. T. Kendricken, Dorchester.
Nicholas J. King, Roslindale.

[1] Dr. Towle later withdrew his name. He was on the Consulting Board of the State Infirmary, Tewksbury.

Harris Kennedy, Roxbury.
Franklin C. Jillson, West Roxbury.
Hubert J. Holland, Jamaica Plain.
C. T. Hurley, Boston.
E. V. Hardwick, Dorchester.
W. A. Ham, Dorchester.
Samuel Goodman, Roxbury.
Edward J. Fitzgibbon, Dorchester.
John L. Flynn, Dorchester.
C. J. Douglas, Dorchester.
W. W. Duckering, Dorchester.
N. D. Drummey, Dorchester.
Peter J. Dervin, Dorchester.
Chas. C. Carroll, Dorchester.
Francis B. Conway, Dorchester.
Percy W. Carr, Hyde Park.
F. A. Crossman, Dorchester.
B. L. Bernard, Roxbury.
Wm. B. Batchelder, Dorchester.
William P. Bolles, Boston.
F. R. Abbe, Dorchester.
Harry F. MacLeod, Dorchester.
James A. Honey, Cambridge.
J. Arnold Rockwell, Cambridge.
Florence F. Rice, Cambridge.
Roswell Wetherbee, Cambridge.
H. M. Gardner, Cambridge.
A. Moll, Cambridge.
Angus MacOdrum, Cambridge.
J. A. Wolcott, Cambridge.
Augustus W. Dudley, Cambridge.
William P. Derby, Cambridge.
Geo. S. Cahill, North Cambridge.
Daniel MacKillop, Cambridge.
John F. Fair, Cambridge.
George F. McIntire, Cambridge.
N. V. Shannon, Cambridge.
Thos. E. Cunningham, Cambridge.
Herbert B. McIntire, Cambridge.
Julius S. Clark, Melrose.
Anna M. D. Bryant, Melrose.
Thomas W. Green, Chelsea.
F. S. Garrett, Chelsea.
F. S. Ruddin, Chelsea.
Charles Leeds, Chelsea.
David Smorgonsky, Chelsea.
William S. Schley, Everett.
John M. Homan, Everett.
J. S. Morris, Revere.
Harvey A. Kelly, Winthrop.
Eunice D. Kinney, Revere.
Geo. H. French, Winthrop.
Mary E. Mosher, Roxbury.
Louis Mendelsohn, Dorchester.
David L. Martin, Dorchester.
Henry N. Longfellow, Boston.
Frederic L. Kellogg, Roxbury.
Walter H. Kelley, Boston.
W. B. Keeler, Roxbury.
Charles L. Knight, West Roxbury.
David J. Johnson, Roxbury.
L. J. Hunt, Roxbury.
Fred'k C. Hemeon, Dorchester.
Richard Hogner, Boston.
William Hall, Dorchester.
Benj. A. Graves, Dorchester.
Alice M. Gray, Roxbury.
Harvey A. Field, Mattapan.
Wm. C. Emery, Dorchester.
Alexis L. Draper, Dorchester.
Lena H. Diemar, Dorchester.
Gyrdil W. Dickinson, Roxbury.
I. D. Clapp, Dorchester.
Aubrey J. Collins, Boston.
Frank S. Parsons, Dorchester.
J. Tucker Cutler, Roxbury.
John W. Bosworth, Roslindale.
Fred P. Broidrick, Jamaica Plain.
Frederick J. Bailey, Dorchester.
Fred'k W. Beering, Jamaica Plain.
Peter J. Wright, Hyde Park.
Sara E. Stevens, West Roxbury.
Joseph S. Lockhart, Cambridge.
Archibald T. Davison, Cambridge.
Chas. H. Thomas, Cambridge.
George P. Cogswell, Cambridge.
Geo. G. Averill, Cambridge.
F. E. Lane, Cambridge.
John M. Crocker, Cambridge.
M. Garcia Monteiro, Cambridge.
Charles P. Freeley, Cambridge.
Bessie D. Davis, Cambridge.
William Milton Rose, Cambridge.
Edward R. Cogswell, Cambridge.

Charles W. Adams, Cambridge.
Daniel E. Chase, Cambridge.
Stephen Wm. Driver, Cambridge.
Leonora Fletcher Lathe, Cambridge.
C. W. Harlow, Melrose.
Ernest S. Jack, Melrose.
Paul H. Lorandie, Melrose.
Wm. R. Chipman, Chelsea.
John E. Kenney, Chelsea.
George B. Fenwick, Chelsea.
Frances C. James, Chelsea.
Chas. H. Downing, Everett.
W. Lewis Howe, Everett.
Wm. Walker, Revere.
Fred F. Andrew, Revere.
Orville E. Johnson, Winthrop.
Albert B. Dorman, Winthrop.
Chas. E. Price, Malden.
Lawrence D. Chapin, Springfield.
H. C. Martin, Springfield.
Geo. C. McCleary, Springfield.
Arthur M. Clapp, Springfield.
Daniel F. Keefe, Springfield.
T. J. Putnam, Springfield.
Geo. H. Finch, Springfield.
Irving R. Calkins, Springfield.
S. A. Lewis, Springfield.
Clarice J. Parson, Springfield.
G. T. Lamarche, Springfield.
F. M. Carl, Springfield.
Fred C. Brigham, Springfield.
Richard S. Benner, Springfield.
Lawrence J. McCarthy, Springfield.
C. F. Spaulding, Springfield.
Chas. J. Spaid, Springfield.
Alvin M. Cushing, Springfield.
W. W. Loomis, West Springfield.
J. L. Bliss, Holyoke.
Edward H. Tierney, Holyoke.
Alice E. Hunt, Holyoke.
H. E. Chaput, Holyoke.
F. H. Allen, Holyoke.
William J. Parris, Holyoke.
R. F. Morrison, Holyoke.
W. J. Mercer, Pittsfield.
I. S. F. Dodd, Pittsfield.
John B. Thomas, Pittsfield.
E. S. Pixley, Pittsfield.
J. D. Howe, Pittsfield.
Frank D. Stafford, North Adams.
C. W. Wright, North Adams.
A. H. McCormack, Northampton.
James C. Fahey, Northampton.
Edward W. Brown, Northampton.
Clifford H. Chapin, Great Barrington.
Orville W. Lane, Great Barrington.
W. D. Cavanaugh, Great Barrington.
B. P. Croft, Greenfield.
E. G. Best, Greenfield.
Louis E. Manning, Chicopee Falls.
Geo. C. Gerter, Chicopee Falls.
P. A. Hoyt, Ludlow.
Archibald J. Douglas, Westfield.
G. H. Janes, Westfield.
Edward D. Williams, Easthampton.
F. H. Howard, Williamstown.
O. R. Fountain, Southampton.
D. M. Wilcox, Lee.
S. J. Broock, Orange.
C. C. Messer, Turners Falls.
C. D. Cudworth, Millers Falls.
A. J. Bonneville, Hatfield.
Dudley Leavitt, West Stockbridge.
Edward P. Hale, Lenox.
Paul W. Goldsbury, Warwick.
Wm. P. Stutson, Cummington.
N. G. Wood, Northfield.
John P. Russell, Springfield.
Delia L. Chapin, Springfield.
F. Lincoln Hogan, Springfield.
Albert R. Rice, Springfield.
Geo. D. Weston, Springfield.
Charles F. Lynch, Springfield.
W. H. Deane, Springfield.
David Wagnor, Springfield.
R. E. Camfill, Springfield.
E. K. Parker, Springfield.
G. S. Stebbins, Springfield.
Sarah M. Wilbur, Springfield.
M. T. Mayes, Springfield.
Clarke Hill, Springfield.
O. W. Roberts, Springfield.

H. E. Rice, Springfield.
Lawton S. Brooks, Springfield.
David E. Harriman, Springfield.
John P. Shine, Holyoke.
John Hughes, Holyoke.
F. F. Celce, Holyoke.
S. A. Mahoney, Holyoke.
Arthur B. Wetherell, Holyoke.
J. J. Cande, Holyoke.
W. E. Ruillard, Holyoke.
Lorenzo Waite, Holyoke.
J. J. Flynn, Pittsfield.
A. P. Merrill, Pittsfield.
R. A. Woodruff, Pittsfield.
R. H. Blanchard, Pittsfield.
Alfred J. Giguere, North Adams.
Martin M. Brown, North Adams.
Henry J. Millard, North Adams.
Louis B. Niquette, Northampton.
Geo. D. Thayer, Northampton.
William J. Collins, Northampton.
W. W. Jones, Great Barrington.
Hugo Schultes, Great Barrington.
Charles F. Canedy, Greenfield.
Willard H. Pierce, Greenfield.
P. G. Davis, Greenfield.
J. O. Beauchamp, Chicopee Falls.
J. E. N. Bohemier, Chicopee.
Albert J. Triechler, Ludlow.
G. W. Bran, Westfield.
J. J. Burke, Easthampton.
Frank W. Olds, Williamstown.
S. Louis Lloyd, Williamstown.
John G. Corcoran, South Hamilton.
E. W. Markham, Lee.
H. F. M. Smith, Orange.
R. A. McGillienddy, Turners Falls.
P. W. McLaughlin, Mittineague.
Chas. A. Byrns, Hatfield.
Jos. Jones, Stockbridge.
Willard B. Segur, Enfield.
Paul A. Hudnut, Chesterfield.
H. A. Suitor, South Deerfield.
L. W. Combs, Becket.
William F. Wright, Fall River.
Harold L. Wallace, Fall River.
Oliver H. Clark, Fall River.
W. Trudean, Fall River.
Joseph A. Barie, Fall River.
Geo. H. Hicks, Fall River.
Samuel W. Gibbs, Fall River.
E. A. McCarthy, Fall River.
Charles W. Connell, Fall River.
George W. Blood, Fall River.
John H. Doyle, Fall River.
Thomas F. Warren, Fall River.
John W. Coughlin, Fall River.
J. Arthur Archambault, Fall River.
Joel P. Bradford, New Bedford.
A. W. Croacher, New Bedford.
C. D. Briggs, New Bedford.
J. J. H. McAllister, New Bedford.
Frank E. Stetson, New Bedford.
Alfred J. Nixon, New Bedford.
Julien E. Fortin, New Bedford.
J. P. St. Germain, New Bedford.
Benj. S. Winslow, New Bedford.
Milton H. Leonard, New Bedford.
Wm. A. Nield, New Bedford.
H. J. Lupien, Brockton.
Harry R. Cloudman, Brockton.
Charles S. Millet, Brockton.
J. E. Bacon, Brockton.
A. D. Avesdisgan, Brockton.
F. T. Burnett, Brockton.
Arthur V. Lyon, Brockton.
W. F. Holmes, Brockton.
Edward R. Cutler, Bridgewater.
Albert F. Hunt, Bridgewater.
A. O. Belmore, West Bridgewater.
George Osgood, Cohasset.
T. F. Hanna, Plymouth.
Samuel M. Beale, Sandwich.
C. E. Howland, North Dartmouth.
H. B. Hart, East Dennis.
Samuel H. Spaulding, Hingham.
C. D. Dorr, Hingham.
N. V. Hutchinson, Whitman.
Albert C. Cobb, Marion.
Frank A. Morrill, Somerset.
J. Allen Eldredge, Wareham.
James T. Walker, Falmouth.

Irving T. Tilden, Mattapoisett.
E. F. Curry, Sagamore.
Samuel T. Davis, Vineyard Haven.
Henry S. Swan, Lakeville.
John S. Grouard, Nantucket.
Wm. S. Birge, Provincetown.
William Goodell, Springfield.
Plumb Brown, Springfield.
H. W. Van Allen, Springfield.
Mary Saunders, Springfield.
J. E. Mercier, Fall River.
John H. Gifford, Fall River.
Thomas F. Gunning, Fall River.
James C. Bright, Fall River.
S. Virgil Merritt, Fall River.
Thomas A. Capen, Fall River.
Alanson J. Abbe, Fall River.
Geo. L. Richards, Fall River.
Thomas E. Boyland, Fall River.
Annie G. Doyle, Fall River.
A. F. Perron, Fall River.
Chas. D. Prescott, Fall River.
Marcus M. Hathaway, Fall River.
William G. Turner, Fall River.
Clarence E. Burt, New Bedford.
Jos. A. Benier, New Bedford.
J. Ubald Paquin, New Bedford.
Elmer E. Robbins, New Bedford.
Steven W. Hayes, New Bedford.
George C. Hale, New Bedford.
W. W. Nelson, New Bedford.
C. A. B. Peterson, New Bedford.
Edward W. Dehn, New Bedford.
Harry L. Stevens, New Bedford.
J. H. Averill, Brockton.
John R. Noyes, Brockton.
Jas. H. Drohan, Brockton.
Walter E. Caswell, Brockton.
W. W. Fullerton, Brockton.
E. E. Goodwin, Brockton.
N. E. King, Brockton.
Calvin Pratt, Bridgewater.
J. T. Kelley, Bridgewater.
Allan L. Shirley, East Bridgewater.
H. E. Fernald, Cohasset.
F. Hinchliffe, Cohasset.
Henry R. Hitchcock, Plymouth.
G. E. White, Sandwich.
Andrew B. Cushman, South Dartmouth.
E. S. Osborne, West Dennis.
John A. Peterson, Hingham.
Adolphus D. Rood, Whitman.
H. F. Copeland, Whitman.
Alger W. Rice, Marion.
T. A. Haley, Somerset.
Charles E. Morse, Wareham.
F. A. Binford, Hyannis.
Flavel S. Thomas, Hanson.
P. F. Miller, Harwich.
Charles W. Bartlett, Marshfield.
J. P. Leahy, Middleborough.
Hubert T. Dean, Oak Bluffs.
Gilman Osgood, Rockland.
Francis M. Bennitt, Springfield.
George L. Woods, Springfield.
Dudley Carleton, Springfield.
C. E. Hewitt, Springfield.
J. Wilmot Lawrence, Malden.
M. E. Cummings, Malden.
Louis F. McCarthy, Malden.
Julia A. B. Russell, Malden.
Chas. W. McClearn, Malden.
G. H. Fulton, Malden.
Walter B. Whiting, Malden.
George Francis Deal, Malden.
Nicholas A. Gallagher, Malden.
C. Clarke Towle, Somerville.
Alphonso H. Carvill, Somerville.
H. E. Buffum, Somerville.
D. F. Welch, Somerville.
Geo. E. Osgood, West Somerville.
Pat'k Jos. Fleming, Cambridge.
Carrol H. Liverpool, West Somerville.
George H. Francis, Brookline.
H. M. Cutts, Brookline.
George Hipkiss, Brookline.
G. E. Lothrop, Brookline.
Felix J. Levy, Brookline.
Fred B. Percy, Brookline.
Joseph Kittredge, Brookline.

J. E. Connelly, Brookline.
Edmund A. Rogers, Brookline.
Silas D. Presbrey, Taunton.
F. A. Hubbard, Taunton.
O. S. Deane, Taunton.
Daniel Joseph Mehegan, Taunton.
John F. Welch, Quincy.
C. J. Lynch, Quincy.
S. W. Ellsworth, Quincy.
Eugene D. Whitehouse, Wollaston.
D. A. Bruce, Atlantic.
Joshua W. Clarke, Attleboro.
Arthur C. Como, Attleboro.
A. B. Shoemaker, North Attleborough.
William O. Hewitt, Attleboro.
Ida F. Barnes, Attleboro.
Hugh McCoy, North Attleborough.
Laura V. Gustin Mackie, Attleboro.
Henry M. Field, Norwood.
Clement H. Hallowell, Norwood.
B. M. Latham, Mansfield.
D. T. Sullivan, Mansfield.
Chas. W. Pease, Needham.
Isabel Livingston, Needham.
Florence F. Poole, Foxborough.
Benton P. Crocker, Foxborough.
George C. Anthony, Wellesley.
Thos. M. Proctor, Walpole.
Charles C. Farnham, Randolph.
E. N. Mayberry, South Weymouth.
J. William Watson, South Braintree.
Ambrose J. Gallison, Franklin.
Fred C. Drew, Dedham.
Edwin P. Linfield, Avon.
Ernest C. Hill, Millis.
John H. Wyman, Medway.
H. J. Soule, Winthrop.
Antoinette F. Konikow, Malden.
Richard J. P. Goodwin, Malden.
E. H. MacMichael, Malden.
Victor Bychower, Malden.
Chas. S. J. MacNeil, Malden.
Emoy L. White, Somerville.
William W. Hartwell, Malden.
H. Ashton Downs, Malden.
A. Waldo Forbush, Somerville.
Geo. W. W. Whiting, Somerville.
Frank E. Bateman, Somerville.
Maud Carvill, Somerville.
Henry F. Curtis, Somerville.
W. J. Hatchett, Somerville.
*Herbert Cholerton, Somerville.
H. Lincoln Chase, Brookline.
Francis F. Whittier, Brookline.
Frederick E. Jones, Brookline.
John H. Kennealy, Brookline.
S. W. Langmaid, Brookline.
Francis P. Denney, Brookline.
Anna M. Cornwall, Brookline.
Benjamin S. Blanchard, Brookline.
Sylvina A. Abbott, Taunton.
C. A. Atwood, Taunton.
Fred'k W. Abbott, Taunton.
Wm. Y. Fox, Taunton.
Edward J. Galligan, Taunton.
R. McLennan, Quincy.
E. H. Bushnell, Quincy.
William G. Curtis, Wollaston.
Chas. S. Adams, Wollaston.
Newell C. Bullard, North Attleborough.
Edward Sanford, Attleboro.
R. P. Kent, Attleboro.
Edward S. Ward, North Attleborough.
M. E. Vance, North Attleborough.
M. H. Battershall, Attleboro.
F. J. Carley, North Attleborough.
Frederick H. Nutting, Norwood.
A. S. Hartwell, Norwood.
Irving S. Fogg, Norwood.
Frederick S. Griffin, Mansfield.
William H. Allen, Mansfield.
William Mitchell, Needham Heights.
D. W. Livermore, Foxborough.
Carleton Sawyer, Foxborough.
Isaac H. Hazelton, Wellesley Hills.
Frederick H. Fuller, Walpole.
F. C. Granger Randolph.
William A. Drake, North Weymouth.
F. Herbert Gile, Braintree.

G. A. Martin, Franklin.
Walter A. Lane, Milton.
John W. Pratt, Dedham.
Geo. I. Ross, Canton.
Daniel C. Rose, Stoughton.
Walter A. Griffin, Sharon.
Henry H. Dearborn, Becket.
George A. Crittenden, Huntington.
Justin G. Hayes, Williamsburg.
Wm. Archibald, Cheshire.
Geo. A. Cooke, Montague.
Percy A. Shurtleff, Blandford.
Geo. E. Emery, Worcester.
Louis A. Cottle, Worcester.
George S. Clark, Worcester.
M. J. Halloran, Worcester.
Roscoe W. Swan, Worcester.
Wm. T. Souther, Worcester.
William F. Carmody, Worcester.
G. M. Albee, Worcester.
Geo. W. Reid, Worcester.
Andrew Benfies, Worcester.
Charles S. Sargent, Worcester.
W. Irving Clark, Worcester.
Edward Soaper, Worcester.
Wm. C. Fogerty, Worcester.
George Otis Ward, Worcester.
M. G. Overlock, Worcester.
Matthew N. Nahigan, Worcester.
Clara P. Fitzgerald, Worcester.
J. F. Gendron, Worcester.
Henry L. McClusky, Worcester.
W. McKibber, Worcester.
Hannah C. Simmons, Worcester.
A. W. Atwood, Worcester.
Archie E. Perkins, Fitchburg.
Clarence L. Chandler, Fitchburg.
Robert F. Burns, Fitchburg.
George A. Grieumard, Fitchburg.
John H. Kearney, Fitchburg.
Charles L. French, Clinton.
Philip T. O'Brion, Clinton.
E. Hinakay, Clinton.
Herbert W. Ellam, Gardner.
J. R. Greenleaf, Gardner.
Geo. B. Underwood, Gardner.
F. D. White, Milford.
J. O. Geneveux, Webster.
G. C. Littlefield, Webster.
Charles H. Harriman, Whitinsville.
C. J. Huyck, West Brookfield.
Wilbur F. Witter, North Brookfield.
Geo. T. Little, Uxbridge.
William G. Reid, Southbridge.
Joseph A. Smith, Athol.
George J. Bassow, Athol.
Worthington W. Miner, Ware.
William Pariseau, Ware.
M. H. Chrystat, Leominster.
H. A. Hoit, Holden.
C. W. Stickney, Holden.
P. L. Couillard, East Douglas.
J. G. Henry, Winchendon.
Francis H. Lally, Milford.
F. J. Sanborn, Spencer.
Edw. A. Murdock, Spencer.
John W. Cram, Colrain.
John T. H. Powers, Conway.
O. J. Shepaneson, Chester.
Judson W. Hastings, Agawam.
Chas. Moline, Sunderland.
Thomas I. Fyfe, Greenfield.
Ralph C. Fish, Worcester.
Walter S. Bieberback, Worcester.
Alston H. Lancaster, Worcester.
Helen A. Goodspeed, Worcester.
Joseph Charbonneau, Worcester.
Chas. A. Peabody, Worcester.
H. F. Holt, Worcester.
Kendall Emerson, Worcester.
Walter C. Seelye, Worcester.
D. B. Lovell, Worcester.
Mary V. O'Callaghan, Worcester.
H. Gilford MacKerrow, Worcester.
Caroline A. Osborne, Worcester.
William H. Rose, Worcester.
Frederick Bryant, Worcester.
P. J. Carney, Worcester.
F. L. Magune, Worcester.
Chas. H. Brockway, Worcester.
T. K. Serijan, Worcester.
Anna F. Murphy, Worcester.
Henry J. Jordan, Worcester.
Geo. E. Adams, Worcester.

E. L. Fiske, Fitchburg.
Hector Jacques, Fitchburg.
H. H. Cornforth, West Fitchburg.
Charles H. Rice, Fitchburg.
D. S. Woodworth, Fitchburg.
Raymond C. Jones, Fitchburg.
S. L. Tobey, Clinton.
J. J. Goodwin, Clinton.
Walter P. Bowers, Clinton.
Oren Andrews, Gardner.
Lawrence L. B. Lundwall, Gardner.
Edward A. Sawyer, Gardner.
W. J. Clarke, Milford.
Louis J. Papineau, Webster.
H. A. Brown, Whitinsville.
Mary H. Sherman, Brookfield.
Emerson A. Ludden, North Brookfield.
William L. Johnson, Uxbridge.
Jos. G. E. Page, Southbridge.
Francis H. Olin, Southbridge.
Maron E. Bowker, Athol.
B. W. Gleason, Athol.
Harry D. Gafney, Ware.
H. R. Nye, Leominster.
Charles E. Bigelow, Leominster.
Frank H. Washburn, Holden.
Paul D. Ela, East Douglas.
Peter S. W. Geddes, Winchendon.
J. M. French, Milford.
Perry E. Joslin, Milford.
Joseph Houle, Spencer.
W. F. Robie, Templeton.
Granville R. Johnson, Templeton.
George N. Laphane, Rutland.
Walter S. Bates, Barre.
Harry C. Keay, Sterling.
Richard S. Ely, West Townsend.
G. M. Sunby, Northborough.
Roland S. Newton, Westborough.
J. R. Lincoln, Millbury.
Chas. S. Smith, Sutton.
A. Arthur Gage, Lowell.
C. J. Clark, Lowell.
William B. Jackson, Lowell.
Adelard Bayette, Lowell.
R. J. Meigs, Lowell.
George C. Osgood, Lowell.
Thomas P. Shaw, Lowell.
T. G. McGannon, Lowell.
Albert Gregoire, Lowell.
William P. Lawler, Lowell.
Wm. I. Wiggen, Lowell.
Ralph C. Stewart, Lowell.
Mary G. Hood, Newton Center.
W. O. Hunt, Newton.
Lincoln R. Stone, Newton.
Caroline Y. Wentworth, Newton Highlands.
Leonard J. Maskell, Newton.
Roberteo Guiler, Newton.
Jas. F. Bothfeld, Newton.
Frances V. Westergrew, Newton Lower Falls.
F. E. Porter, Newton.
M. E. Gleason, Newton.
S. P. Strickland, Waltham.
*O. L. Dascombe, Waltham.
*John W. Willis, Waltham.
J. A. Day, Waltham.
Eugene G. Hoitt, Marlborough.
Edward H. Ellis, Marlborough.
Frances W. Potter, Framingham.
Sanford O. Baldwin, South Framingham.
Daniel L. Healy, South Framingham.
Charles Andrew Keegon, Arlington.
Roy D. Young, Arlington.
*Edwin P. Stickney, Arlington.
Franklin E. Campbell, West Medford.
James S. Kennedy, West Medford.
J. Walter Bean, West Medford.
Geo. Henry Packard, Medford.
Chas. R. Draper, Medford.
Hector J. MacLean, Medford.
Mary C. Hodgson, Stoneham.
Charles G. Heald, Pepperell.
Edward L. Salmon, Maynard.
Norman W. Hunter, Hudson.
Thomas F. Tierney, Hudson.
H. J. Olmsted, Winchester.
*George H. P. Mead, Winchester.

J. P. Bixby, Woburn.
Daniel S. Coles, Wakefield.
Joseph W. Heath, Wakefield.
*Leonard B. Clark, Belmont.
Hobart E. Warren, Ashburnham.
Bayard T. Crane, Rutland.
Kenneth I. Balcom, Boylston Center.
Byron Stone, North Oxford.
Alexander McNeish, Leicester.
Chas. S. Knight, Westborough.
J. L. McAuslan, Berlin.
Olney W. Phelps, Warren.
T. J. Halloran, Lowell.
Clarence A. Viles, Lowell.
Alfred E. A. McKann, Lowell.
Edward O. Tabor, Lowell.
J. Hamouren, Lowell.
James B. Field, Lowell.
Emma E. Young Slaughter, Lowell.
C. Stoyle Baker, Lowell.
Mary A. Carpenter, Lowell.
Geo. A. Lavallee, Lowell.
Theophilus Laurier, Lowell.
George L. West, Newton Center.
Perez B. Howard, Newtonville.
J. F. Freisbie, Newton.
Henry Watters, Newton Center.
Geo. Ediay, Newton.
Frank M. Sherman, West Newton.
C. A. Thompson, Newton Highlands.
Lewis H. Jack, West Newton.
Frederick W. Webber, Newton.
William H. McOwen, Newton Upper Falls.
Ernest F. Robinson, Auburndale.
*Charles A. Willis, Waltham.
Arthur A. Lahue, Waltham.
Conrad Bell, Waltham.
John J. Kelly, Marlborough.
J. T. Buckley, Marlborough.
Edward J. Therrien, Marlborough.
Frank W. Patch, Framingham.
Lewis M. Palmer, Framingham.
R. F. Banett, Saxonville.
Charles A. Dennett, Arlington.
Guy E. Sanger, Arlington.
John H. Cheever, Arlington.
Frederick R. Ilesley, Medford.
Katherin T. Driscoll, Medford.
N. F. Chandler, Medford.
Lincoln F. Sise, Medford.
James E. Cleaves, Medford.
James Blenkhorn, Stoneham.
Arthur B. Jenney, Stoneham.
L. R. Qwa, Pepperell.
Daniel Goodenow, Maynard.
F. P. Glazier, Hudson.
Henry Lescadre, Hudson.
A. B. Church, Winchester.
Benj. T. Church, Winchester.
C. T. O'Brien, Woburn.
John J. Loughlin, Wakefield.
Ernest W. Small, Belmont.
Charles E. Hosmer, Billerica.
John B. Tyler, Billerica.
Chas. E. Woods, Lunenburg.
Frank S. Bulkeley, Ayer.
S. Sanford Orr, Weston.
Geo. E. Poor, Sherborn.
Thomas E. Lilly, Shirley.
I. C. Pope, Holliston.
Jos. S. Hart, Lincoln.
Harry H. Nevers, Lawrence.
George L. Black, Lawrence.
R. W. Forster, Lawrence.
Frank A. Conlon, Lawrence.
A. L. Siskind, Lawrence.
Geo. W. Dow, Lawrence.
Maurice Fishman, Lawrence.
F. C. L. Pfefferkorn, Lawrence.
Herbert W. Manahan, Lawrence.
L. G. Beeley, Lawrence.
Carl H. Eidam, Lawrence.
John B. Bain, Lawrence.
John Parr, Methuen.
Roy V. Baketel, Methuen.
Geo. W. Haywood, Lynn.
George F. Woodill, Lynn.
Arthur E. Harris, Lynn.
Edward T. Manix, Lynn.
Emil F. Ruppel, Lynn.
Walter L. Burns, Lynn.
Geo. Henry Musso, Lynn.

Nathaniel Pope Breed, Lynn.
Wilmot L. Marden, Lynn.
W. Y. Shepherd, Lynn.
Butler Metzger, Lynn.
Chas. A. Lovejoy, Lynn.
Geo. W. Longee, Lynn.
Herbert W. Newhall, Lynn.
C. A. Ahearne, Lynn.
Harry C. Clarke, Lynn.
Francis G. Stanley, Beverly.
Peer P. Johnson, Beverly.
Charles W. Haddock, Beverly.
Marion W. Bliss, Beverly.
Clarence D. Day, Newburyport.
John W. Shaw, Newburyport.
Abbey Noyes Little, Newburyport.
Frederick Tigh, Newburyport.
F. A. Sullivan, Haverhill.
Timothy F. Cotter, Haverhill.
Alice G. Symonds, Haverhill.
Israel J. Clark, Haverhill.
Charles J. Carden, Haverhill.
A. M. Hubbell, Haverhill.
Louis A. Woodbury, Groveland.
H. Poirier, Salem.
Ara N. Sargent, Salem.
A. T. LeBoeuf, Salem.
M. Lesses, Salem.
J. Frank Donaldson, Salem.
George Z. Goodell, Salem.
Mary E. Gaffney, Salem.
G. W. Gaston, Medway.
W. H. Sylvester, Natick.
Arthur Mitchell, Medfield.
Geo. F. Dodge, Wilmington.
Augustine J. Donnelly, Hopkinton.
Ellen Eastman Schenck, Shirley.
*Winsor M. Tyler, Lexington.
Emile E. Cyr, Lawrence.
Stella W. Boylston, Lawrence.
Patrick J. Hughes, Lawrence.
John A. Marget, Lawrence.
Alfred E. Chesley, Lawrence.
John C. Bowker, Lawrence.
David J. Khourg, Lawrence.
M. S. McGauran, Lawrence.
O. T. Howe, Lawrence.
Geo. D. McGauran, Lawrence.
S. Wendell Abbott, Lawrence.
H. L. Cushman, Methuen.
John J. Maney, Methuen.
Geo. A. Lyons, Lynn.
Arthur E. Joslyn, Lynn.
Frances G. Lamb Johnson, Lynn.
Frank L. Whipper, Lynn.
Jos. Armand Bedard, Lynn.
W. F. O'Reilly, Lynn.
Arthur W. Tucker, Lynn.
Leland M. Baker, Lynn.
Frank E. Stone, Lynn.
Edette C. Varney, Lynn.
M. H. Couture, Lynn.
W. Reginald Marshall, Lynn.
Orrin C. Blair, Lynn.
George W. Heaslip, Lynn.
J. G. Pinkham, Lynn.
Michael R. Donovan, Lynn.
O. F. Swasey, Beverly.
Norman M. MacLeod, Beverly.
Harry E. Sears, Beverly.
Luther G. Eastman, Beverly.
Rudolph C. Hurd, Newburyport.
A. C. Nason, Newburyport.
Ernest H. Noyes, Newburyport.
Warren W. Pillsbury, Newburyport.
W. D. Holden, Haverhill.
F. B. Pierce, Haverhill.
E. P. Laskey, Haverhill.
John Sproull, Haverhill.
John E. Bryant, Haverhill.
H. L. Conner, Haverhill.
Lionel Archambault, Haverhill.
Walter G. Phippen, Salem.
Edward K. Burbeck, Salem.
George K. Blair, Salem.
Hardy Phippen, Salem.
Thomas F. Henry, Salem.
D. Coggin, Salem.
John H. Dearborn, Salem.
William J. Sheehan, Salem.
F. D. Towle, Salem.
Edward S. Eveleth, Gloucester.
Parker Burnham, Gloucester.
C. H. Morrow, Gloucester.

Wm. Rowley, Gloucester.
S. F. Quimby, Gloucester.
Harry D. Abbott, Danvers.
W. G. Frost, Danvers.
J. F. Jordan, Peabody.
John E. Webster, Peabody.
A. H. Pierce, West Newbury.
P. L. Sanborn, Marblehead.
George W. Blaisdell, Manchester.
A. M. Tupper, Rockport.
Edward W. A. Holt, North Andover.
Herbert T. Penny, Cliftondale.
J. R. Giroux, Linwood.
Thomas L. Jenkins, Topsfield.
S. H. Parks, Reading.
George D. Bliss, Dorchester.
Charles M. Whitney, Boston.
Nathan Addelson, Boston.
John Allan McLean, West Somerville.
William J. Gallivan, South Boston.
William B. Robbins, Boston.
Z. B. Adams, Boston.
Enos H. Bigelow, Framingham.
Myrtle Smith, Worcester.
W. J. Middleton, Quincy.
W. H. Bliss, Shrewsbury.
A. D. Kingsburg, Needham.
Emma F. Wheeler, New Bedford.
Edward C. Rochette, Worcester.
Joseph N. Landry, Fall River.
Fred J. Ripley, Brockton.
Charles B. Hall, Rockport.
John T. Gatsopodlo, Lowell.
Max D. Bier, Lawrence.
Thos. F. Godfrey, Springfield.
A. H. Pierce, Leominster.
G. B. Underwood, Mattapan.
Alton J. Choate, Gloucester.
Harold A. Johnson, Lynn.
T. J. Daly, Lawrence.
William C. Newton, Revere.
Seth W. Kelley, Woburn.
W. G. Hanson, Everett.
J. D. Lucas, Roxbury.
James H. McCooey, Blackstone.
F. W. Macpherson, Lynn.
W. T. La Fortune, Fitchburg.
James H. Barry, Boston.
Wm. W. Burnett, Wrentham.
A. C. Cummings, Newton.
Geo. B. Sargent, Lawrence.
T. F. Goulding, Boston.
H. S. Card, Boston.
C. M. Hutchinson, Wellesley.
Henry L. Elliot, Salem.
Philip Mooney, Gloucester.
William Hale, Gloucester.
P. C. Procter, Gloucester.
S. P. F. Cook, Gloucester.
Earl M. Smith, Danvers.
Harry C. Boutelle, Danvers.
Edward J. Magee, Danvers.
Ralph E. Foss, Peabody.
Horace K. Foster, Peabody.
Orin Warren, West Newbury.
H. J. Hall, Marblehead.
E. E. Cleaves, Rockport.
Thomas N. Roche, Amesbury.
George G. Bailey, Ipswich.
Stephen A. Pedrick, Rowley.
Loring Grimes, Swampscott.
W. Alonzo Ellis, Essex.
Henry D. Lloyd, Boston.
John Jay Smith, Cambridge.
C. W. Macdonald, Boston.
A. H. Thomasson, Boston.
Charles E. Williams, Roxbury.
Sarah R. Stowell, Jamaica Plain.
Robert Rice, Haverhill.
William J. Cochran, Natick.
Peter W. Colberg, Worcester.
George W. Nickerson, Stoneham.
Orlando W. Charles, Bryantville.
Albert A. F. Clark, Westborough.
L. F. Playse, Hopkinton.
Harvey T. Shores, Northampton.
William E. Dolan, Worcester.
W. L. Hallet, Brockton.
J. C. Austin, Spencer.
Ellen R. Canney, New Bedford.
O. Draper Phelps, Worcester.
W. A. Brosseau, North Adams.
Francis J. Canedy, Shelburne Falls.

W. Burton Thorning, Winchendon.
James A. Jones, Lynn.
D. C. Dennett, Winchester.
*Joseph H. Saunders, Everett.
A. McRobbie, Lynn.
H. M. Lowd, Swampscott.
Chas. H. Colgate, Jr., Rockland.
John F. McCooey, Blackstone.
Chas. B. Sullivan, Roxbury.
E. B. Denham, New Bedford.
Winfred C. Pike, Boston.
F. H. Whipple, Boston.
F. F. Pillsbury, Lowell.
Howard C. Jewett, Haverhill.
Edward H. Niles, Danvers.
A. E. Mossman, Westminster.
John J. Cummings, Worcester.
Willard A. Putnam, Cambridge.
Charles C. Henin, Springfield.
J. P. Alph. Garceau, Fall River.
Walter S. Brainerd, Haverhill.
Edward P. Worth, Edgartown.
Mary E. Barrell, Worcester.
C. D. Kinsley, North Adams.
W. C. Latimer, Brookfield.
Chas. F. Nichols, Boston.
Howard W. Jewett, Lowell.
Frederick W. Cowles, West Brookfield.
Walter F. Sawyer, Fitchburg.
Frank J. McCabe, North Easton.
O. Lancey Rochester, Lee.
Chas. A. Oak, Lynn.
John G. MacPhail, Chelsea.
John A. Donner, Holyoke.
J. F. Shurtleff, Rockland.
John C. Fraser, Weymouth.
Franklin H. Merriam, Holbrook.
M. C. Smith, Lynn.
James H. Stevens, Boston.
L. Marie Tilton, Boston.
Charles E. Montague, Wakefield.
Harriet L. Harrington, Dorchester.
Eugene C. Wylie, Dorchester Center.
Franklin L. Warren, Bridgewater.
W. D. Madden, Boston.
Horace M. Locke, Sturbridge.
J. J. Shanahan, Peabody.
George F. Hughes, Somerville.
Joseph Chase, Jr., East Weymouth.
C. D. McCosky, Malden.
John F. Ash, Quincy.
Frank L. Doray, Worcester.
A. C. Peckham, Fall River.
Alfred G. Bolduc, Fall River.
Chas. A. Church, Millbury.
David D. Brough, Boston.
John F. Lambert, Boston.
Sylvester E. Donovan, New Bedford.
Ezra Palmer, Boston.
Gilbert N. Jones, Wellesley.
Guy Holbrook, Boston.
James A. Keown, Lynn.
A. H. Bruckshaw, Fairhaven.
F. L. Babcock, Dedham.
William C. Leary, Springfield.
J. B. Hammersly, Chicopee.
Arthur M. Worthington, Dedham.
P. E. Robinson, Boston.
Lester C. Miller, Worcester.
Edw. R. Gookin, Boston.
R. R. Stratton, Melrose.
Geo. C. Parcher, Saugus.
Elizabeth E. Ritter, Brookline.
Francis H. Barnes, Boston.
G. H. Gray, Lynn.
W. M. Stevenson, North Easton.
E. Frank Guild, Chelsea.
Mary W. Walker, New Bedford.
Alva H. Warren, Everett.
W. F. Phillips, Dorchester.
R. W. Fletcher, South Boston.
Ernest E. Doble, Quincy.
Franklin T. Beatty, Boston.
Augusta S. Winchester, Boston.
J. P. Lobo, Fall River.
Joseph H. Kelly, Worcester.
E. Harris, Fall River.
A. C. Wilbur, Middleborough.
R. D. Canedy, North Adams.
Ella M. Davis, Holyoke.
A. Nobile, Boston.

To his Excellency, Governor Eugene N. Foss:

If the name of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs is to be presented by you to the Executive Council, to fill the vacancy that exists on the State Board of Insanity, I the undersigned, member of the Medical Profession of Massachusetts, respectfully endorse Dr. Briggs for the same, believing as I do, that he is eminently qualified to fill the position.

_____ M. D.

Street and No. _____

City or Town _____

Please add my name to the petition for the reappointment of Dr. Herbert B. Howard to the State Board of Insanity.

Signed,

See page 129

Walter E. Harvey, Cambridge.
W. T. Millot, Attleboro.
Francis Geo. Curtes, Newton.
Myron L. King, Cambridge.
Joseph N. Bayer, Springfield.
Rufus K. Noyes, Boston.
Jennie Bernard, Roxbury.
G. F. Weed, Saxonville.
Frank L. Newton, Somerville.
J. R. McPeake, Mattapan.
Howard W. Beal, Worcester.
Frederick A. Brown, Webster.
R. H. Thompson, Malden.
F. G. Barnum, Hyde Park.
J. C. Pothier, New Bedford.

Under date of October 22, 1912, Dr. Edward N. Brush, Superintendent of "The Sheppard and Enoch Pratt Hospital" for the mentally ill at Towson, Md., and Editor of the "American Journal of Insanity" of Baltimore, wrote me:

> I had not heard about either the petition for Dr. Howard's reappointment or in regard to your own campaign in the matter, and now it is too late to say anything about it in the October Journal. . . . I congratulate you upon the number of signatures which have been sent to the Governor.

It will be seen that this petition could only be signed conscientiously by those who knew me personally or by reputation, while those who signed the appeal for Dr. Howard simply asked for his reappointment without being obliged to state anything as to his qualifications. Of the physicians who signed the above petition three subsequently changed their minds and wrote to Dr. Bowditch requesting that their names be stricken off. These were Dr. Harvey P. Towle, a member of the consulting board of the Tewksbury State Infirmary, Dr. Ernest B. Young and Dr. G. A. Suffa, one of the Trustees of the Westborough State Hospital. I received a letter from Dr. Frank G. Wheatley of the Tufts Medical School, saying that he had not signed a card petitioning for my appointment to the Board, for the reason that he had previously signed one requesting the reappointment of Dr. Howard, and his

signature on both petitions might seem inconsistent to the Governor; but he added:

I am perfectly willing, however, that you should say to His Excellency that I know of no reason why your appointment to the position is not a suitable one. Personally, as I think you know, I have a high opinion of your ability and attainments.

Other petitions by citizens of the First, Fourth and Fifth Councillor Districts, represented respectively by Councillors Eben S. S. Keith, Alexander McGregor and Edward C. Frothingham, were signed by residents of the towns of Hanover, Abington, Pembroke, Norwell, Brockton, Whitman, Hanson, Campello, Kingston, East Bridgewater, Rockland, Chelsea, Brighton, Methuen, Lawrence, Andover, Haverhill, Lynn and Revere. In the town of Hanover, where I had resided since boyhood, virtually every voter signed the petition.

The undersigned citizens of the First Councillor District respectfully request His Excellency, Governor Eugene N. Foss, to appoint Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity and the members of the Executive Council to confirm the appointment if made, more particularly Eben S. S. Keith, representative from this district.

In making this request the signers of this petition have in mind the high standing of Dr. Briggs in his chosen profession as an expert in the care and treatment of mental disease (insanity), and his devotion to these unfortunates regardless of their standing in life, race, color or creed.

Horace S. Tower, Washington Street, Hanover.
William F. Bates, Washington Street, Hanover.
William S. Curtis, Broadway, Hanover.
C. T. Kennedy, Main Street, Abington.
Daniel Rielly, Washington Street, Hanover.
Charles A. Howard, Washington Street, Hanover.
George E. Ramsdell, Hanover.
Jakey Morehardt, Hanover.
Charles A. Bryant, Hanover.
George C. Jones, Hanover.
Harry W. Bowker, Hanover.

AT A MEETING OF THE

Executive Committee

of

Boston Typographical Union No 13,

HELD SEPTEMBER 10, 1912,

THE FOLLOWING

RESOLUTION

was passed and I was instructed to send a copy of the same to you.

The Executive Committee, representing fifteen hundred members of the Boston Typographical Union, in meeting assembled, most respectfully and earnestly petition Governor Eugene N. Foss to appoint, and the members of the Executive Council to confirm the appointment of

L. VERNON BRIGGS, M.D.

as a member of the State Board of Insanity.

We believe his experience and great interest in the treatment of mental diseases would immeasurably advance the work the State is doing in its institutions for the Insane.

Very Truly Yours

J. J. Dallas.

SECRETARY.

R. E. Dwelly, Broadway, Hanover.
Daniel A. Sherman, Broadway, Hanover.
Wm. K. Sylvester, Oakland Avenue, Hanover.
Reuben C. Donnell, Elm Street, Hanover.
Charles Hammond, M.D., Washington Street, Hanover.
Jas. C. Waterman, Church Street, Hanover.
C. L. Howes, M.D., Church Street, Hanover.
Freeman Walker, Broadway, Hanover.
Nelson P. Spinney, Church Street, Norwell.
Joshua R. Barker, Church Street, Norwell.
M. C. Bailey, Broadway, Hanover.
J. T. Ford, Centre Street, Pembroke.
K. S. Ford, Centre Street, Pembroke.
Charles C. Pratt, Elm Street, Norwell.
G. J. Cross, Broadway, Hanover.
H. A. Farrar, Washington Street, Hanover.
Frank H. Waterman, Broadway, Hanover.
Frank W. Jones, Main Street, Norwell.
Alonzo N. Josselyn, Hanover.
Herbert Torrey, Elm Street, Hanover.
Charles A. Totman, Spring Street, Hanover.
John H. Flavell, Washington Street, Hanover.
L. Tolman, Oakland Avenue, Hanover.
Henry N. Magoun, Washington Street, North Pembroke.
Robert G. Henderson, Tiffany Road, Norwell.
Arthur H. Dyer, Elm Street, Norwell.
Charles Turner, Cross Street, North Pembroke.
E. E. Stetson, Tiffany Road, Norwell.
I. H. Slatcher, Circuit Street, South Hanover.
James Jones, Broadway, Hanover.
Frederick T. Rouillard, Hanover Street, Hanover.
Edward M. Angell, Broadway, Hanover.
Walter D. Sawyer, Schooset Road, Pembroke.
Herbert T. Kemp, Broadway, Hanover.
F. A. Tower, Broadway, Hanover.
J. G. Fisher, Washington Street, Pembroke.
J. Fred Tower, Broadway, Hanover.
Charles E. Tower, Broadway, Hanover.
H. H. Howland, Washington Street, Hanover.
Joseph A. Tripp, Broadway, Hanover.
Chas. P. French, M.D., Broadway, Hanover.
Fred W. Bowker, Broadway, Hanover.
Henry J. Tolman, River Street, Norwell.
C. S. Deane, River Street, Norwell.
Charles F. Stearnes, Broadway, Hanover.
W. C. Tower, Broadway, Hanover.
Morrill A. Phillips, Broadway, South Hanover.

P. W. Bonney, Washington Street, Hanover.
E. E. Ells, Elm Street, Hanover.
Maurice F. Wyman, Broadway, Hanover.
Carl L. Morehardt, Barstow Avenue, Hanover.
Chas. D. Bonney, Broadway, Hanover.
Martin Mullin, Cross Street, Hanover.
W. F. Johnson, Water Street, Hanover.
Herbert F. Cook, Broadway, Hanover.
Jas. W. Turner, Spring Street, Hanover Center.
Alex H. Chester, West Elm Street, Hanover.
Enoch Johnson, Centre Street, Hanover.
W. E. Harris, Hanover.
A. S. Whyman, Broadway, Hanover.
John McCue, West Elm Street, Pembroke.
A. P. Oldham, Broadway, Hanover.
Thomas F. Smith, 537 Montellio Street, Brockton.
John F. Donahue, 14 River Street, Brockton.
Edward McSkell, 73 Mulberry Street, Brockton.
J. Albert Sullivan, 71 East Ashland Street, Brockton.
Arthur Dorgan, 29 Arch Street, Brockton.
John F. Lynch, 11 Standish Street, Brockton.
M. J. Cohan, 29 Park Street, Brockton.
Thos. F. Kearns, 15 Johnson Court, Brockton.
P. T. McEvoy, 361 Crescent Street, Brockton.
John P. Meade, 52 Centre Street, Brockton.
Frank W. Gifford, 195 Park Avenue, Whitman.
T. Fred Donoghue, 34 Day Street, Whitman.
David M. McLaughlin, 22 Broad Street, Whitman.
Elmer A. Wright, 302 Beulah Street, Whitman.
Geo. H. Bates, 174 Washington Street, Whitman.
Frank P. Adams, 276 Field Street, Brockton.
Joseph Dion, 199 High Street, Abington.
N. C. Besse, 73 High Street, Hanson.
E. M. Chase, 188 Perkins Avenue, Campello.
J. R. Quinlan.
C. D. Ford, Whitman Street, Hanson.
Chester Sturtevant, Washington Street, Whitman.
Charles McManus, Main Street, Kingston.
Arthur F. Hatch, Washington Street, East Bridgewater.
Elias Gustafson, Hancock Street, Whitman.
Chas. E. Bunker, Arthur Street, Whitman.
Chas. T. Spooner, Carlton Street, Whitman.
T. Burns, Abington.
Jas. Syndon, Summer Street, Abington.
Cyril Fortuen, Vaughan Street, Whitman.
James Johnson, Broad Street, Whitman.
William H. Collins, Whitman.

F. Major, 31 Kingman Street, Brockton.
Matther J. Teahan, 782 Bedford Street, Whitman.
C. Lundquest, 8 East Nelsson Street, Brockton.
Jas. H. Keran, 308 South Pove Street, Whitman.
Hugh Walls, Liberty Street, Rockland.
William Hunt, Liberty Street, Rockland.
M. D. Donovan.
M. J. Costello, 128 Liberty Street, Rockland.
W. J. Campion, 50 Reed Street, Rockland.
P. Maloney, 354 Liberty Street, Rockland.
C. J. Higgin, 457 Union Street, Rockland.
Henry S. Healy, 25 Belmont Street, Rockland.
F. R. Snow, 19 Clyfton Street, Plymouth.
Patrick A. Gallagher, 30 Belmont Street, Rockland.
James Mansfield, 52 Webster Street, Rockland.
Thos. F. Young, 9 Union Square, Rockland.
John P. Barry, 15 Bigelow Avenue, Rockland.
William H. Reardon, 19 Charles Street, Abington.
Fred Johnson, 42 Platt Street, Abington.
Jas. F. Donahue.
W. A. Brown, 382 Adams Street, North Abington.
J. B. Cullinan, 4 East Street, North Abington.
Ed. J. Bombardin, North Abington.
John H. Mackins, 264 Oak Street, North Abington.
Edw. C. Cole, 56 Centre Avenue, Abington.
W. P. Mackey, 300 Spere Street, North Abington.

Also endorsed by the Executive Board of Local No. 371 Boot and Shoe Workers Union, North Abington, Mass.

The undersigned citizens of the Fourth Councillor District respectfully request His Excellency, Governor Eugene N. Foss, to appoint Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity and the members of the Executive Council to confirm the appointment if made, more particularly Alexander McGregor, representative from this district.

In making this request the signers of this petition have in mind the high standing of Dr. Briggs in his chosen profession as an expert in the care and treatment of mental disease (insanity), and his devotion to these unfortunates regardless of their standing in life, race, color or creed.

Philip Mekelburg, Chelsea.
James H. Hearne, Chelsea.
James Blyth, Chelsea.
Arthur M. Huddell, Chelsea.
Michael McDonough, Chelsea.
John M. A. Higgins, Revere.
Gerald J. Newman, Chelsea.
Joseph Z. Greenman, Chelsea.
John J. Diamond, Chelsea.
F. C. Gamick, Jr., Brighton.

Endorsed by Painters' Union, No. 44, October 7, 1912, Albert Noble, President.

The undersigned citizens of the Fifth Councillor District respectfully request His Excellency, Governor Eugene N. Foss, to appoint Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity and the members of the Executive Council to confirm the appointment if made, more particularly Edward G. Frothingham, representative from this district.

In making this request the signers of this petition have in mind the high standing of Dr. Briggs in his chosen profession as an expert in the care and treatment of mental disease (insanity), and his devotion to these unfortunates regardless of their standing in life, race, color or creed.

Thomas B. Yates, Methuen.
James F. Kivelle, Methuen.
James H. Chittick, Lawrence.
Sidney T. Cowperthwaite.
M. W. Stevenson, Lawrence.
John Lockarg, Lawrence.
John Jacobs, Methuen.
Walter B. Shaw, Andover.
Albert Noble, Lawrence.
Peter Valcourt, Lawrence.
C. F. Petzolce, Lawrence.
Geo. Lilly, Methuen.
James Curran, Lawrence.
James O'Rielly, Haverhill.
Charles H. Ryan, Haverhill.
Martin J. Fenlon, Haverhill.
Edward W. Bowlen, Haverhill.
John E. Doe, Haverhill.
Benjamin P. Rich, Haverhill.
Kendall Jenkins, Haverhill.
Edwin F. Sargent, Haverhill.
Henry J. Linehan, Haverhill.
Christopher G. Lafferty.
James C. Stragton, Haverhill.
Patrick J. Delaney, Haverhill.
John W. Carey, Haverhill.
Dolphis Canter, Haverhill.
Perley G. Weeks, Haverhill.
F. Forrest Maynard, Haverhill.
Irving Lewis, Haverhill.
Simon J. Linehan, Haverhill.
John T. Donovan, Haverhill.
Harry A. Ellis, Haverhill.
Jeffny Ducharme, Haverhill.
James W. Staples, Haverhill.
Patrick W. Carey, Haverhill.
Dennis Moran, Haverhill.
Charles H. Collwyn, Haverhill.
Wm. L. Bass, Haverhill.
Henry Short, Haverhill.
William T. Dwyer, Haverhill.
John S. Cox, Haverhill.
Willie A. Weymouth, Haverhill.
Edward M. Tracy, Haverhill.
Herbert H. Thompson.
Fred A. Whitman, Haverhill.
Harry Kingson, Lynn.
Chas. L. Archibald, Lynn.
Chas. R. Lawrie, Lynn.
Wm. Durnan, Lynn.
John E. Casey, Chelsea.
Albert T. Winch, Revere.
Henry Girard, Lynn.
Geo. A. Taylor, Lynn.
H. W. McKenny, Lynn.
Elisee Sauliner, Lynn.
Nellie Barry, Lynn.

Another petition was circulated by my friends in the Sixth Councillor District, represented by Councillor Herbert G. Fletcher, and it was signed by citizens of Natick, Waltham, Concord and Townsend.

The undersigned citizens of the Sixth Councillor District respectfully request His Excellency, Governor Eugene N. Foss, to appoint Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity and the members of the Executive Council to confirm the appointment if made, more particularly Herbert E. Fletcher, representative from this district.

In making this request the signers of this petition have in mind the high standing of Dr. Briggs in his chosen profession as an expert in the care and treatment of mental disease (insanity), and his devotion to these unfortunates regardless of their standing in life, race, color or creed.

James McManus, Natick.
Fred J. Lucey, Natick.
Michael F. McGrath, Natick.
Michael F. Kennedy, Natick.
Francis B. Burns, Natick.
Joseph P. Murphy, Natick.
J. A. Mahon, Natick.
John H. Craig, Natick.
A. P. Derby, Natick.
Harry M. Ferguson, Natick.
Geo. Davis, Natick.
Wm. V. McGrath, Natick.
John J. Ahern, Natick.
Harry F. Chandler, Natick.
Roger B. Farwell, Natick.
Edw. A. Ringer, Natick.
Louis E. Clark, Natick.
Frank B. Twitchell, Natick.
Hallett E. Jones, Natick.
John A. Donahoe, Natick.
H. S. Robbins, Natick.
Thomas B. Everett, Natick.
William J. Mahoney, Waltham.
Michael J. Egan, Waltham.
Walter C. Kingsbury, Waltham.
John J. Sculley, Waltham.
H. M. Welch, Waltham.
Thomas Regan, Waltham.
John I. Sormey, Waltham.
H. S. Bartlett, Waltham.
Thomas Shepley, Waltham.
T. F. Murphy, Waltham.
David Carey, Concord.
Daniel F. Hennessy, Concord.
James C. Ferguson, Concord.
John Jennings, Concord.
James M. Russell, Concord.
Philip T. Flavin, M.D., Concord Jct.
Harold W. Chase, Concord Junction.
James Nagle, Concord Junction.
Robert J. Stevenson, Concord Junction.
J. William Byron, Concord.
Michael J. Collins, Concord Junction.
William D. Cross, Concord.
Edward McKenna, Concord.
John G. Loring, Concord Junction.
Ever Lorentsen, Concord Junction.
Ralph W. Roundy, Concord Junction.
Edward B. Coiger, Concord.
Thomas F. Giblin, Concord.
H. B. Boynton, M.D., Townsend.
Henry A. Hill, M.D., Townsend.
C. B. Willard, Townsend.
Geo. A. Wilder, Townsend.
John A. Arlin, Townsend.
F. J. McGuire, Townsend.
Milo Spaulding, Townsend.
H. F. Bowley, Townsend.
H. A. Wilson, Townsend.
H. C. Felch, Townsend.
E. R. Cook, Townsend.
R. S. Misner, Townsend.
E. B. Bomernan, Townsend.
W. F. Culin, Townsend.
F. N. Powell, Townsend.
A. E. Wright, Townsend.
George R. Ward, Townsend.
Geo. Hartford, Townsend.
Chas. Wright, Townsend.
N. J. McGuire, Townsend.
F. A. Woods, Townsend.

G. S. Gilchrest, Townsend.
Harrie Dustin, Townsend.
Arthur D. Barber, Townsend.
E. B. Morse, Townsend.
G. P. Estes, Townsend.
C. A. Thayer, Townsend.
W. Powell, Townsend.
H. C. Coudrey, Townsend.
J. A. Tyler, Townsend.
S. M. Farrar, Townsend.
Wm. Bush, Townsend.
H. Warren Seaver, Townsend.
Geo. E. Gates, Townsend.
F. E. Parker, Townsend.
L. C. Richards, Townsend.
A. L. Dow, Townsend.
A. Richards, Townsend.
T. J. Coffey, Townsend.
C. H. Abbott, Townsend.
John Dobson, Townsend.
Asa K. Tyler, Townsend.
Frank M. Warren, Townsend.
William O'Brien, Townsend.
Charles B. Kendall, Townsend.
M. L. Whitcomb, Townsend.
J. R. Arlin, Townsend.
H. L. Spofford, Townsend.
S. A. Allen, Townsend.
W. N. Wyeth, Townsend.
H. R. Morse, Townsend.
E. J. Wyeth, Townsend.
W. A. Wright, Townsend.
W. O. Curley, Townsend.
H. L. Whitcombe, Townsend.
C. E. Moulton, Townsend.
C. G. Allen, Townsend.
A. F. Burtt, Townsend.
C. P. Mudgett, Townsend.
E. A. Flagg, Townsend.
A. J. Shattuck, Townsend.
F. J. Tenney, Townsend.
C. W. Hildreth, Townsend.
W. L. Bruce, Townsend.
E. A. Blood, Townsend.
Roy E. Wright, Townsend.
G. E. Van Etten, Townsend.
G. H. Tarbell, Townsend.
Fred Whitney, Townsend.
Thomas Copeland, Townsend.
John E. O'Brien, Townsend.
H. J. Miller, Townsend.
Robt. E. Smith, Townsend.
O. L. Drake, Townsend.
A. F. Huse, Townsend.
F. J. Piper, Townsend.
J. W. Livingston, Townsend.
N. L. Wood, Townsend.
P. O. Powell, Townsend.
Thos. H. Grimes, Townsend.
S. A. Woods, Townsend.
F. L. Spring, Townsend.
Timothy Coffy, Townsend.
L. U. Clement, Townsend.
T. E. Flarity, Townsend.
Alexander Reed, Townsend.
F. B. Higginson, Townsend.
H. E. Buckly, Townsend.
John O'Brien, Townsend.

At this time David P. Keefe of Fall River was a candidate for re-election to the Legislature, and I addressed a letter to the "Daily Herald," "Daily Globe" and "Daily News" of that city, which was published in the issues of September 20, commending the work of Mr. Keefe while a member of the Committee on Public Charitable Institutions. He was always on the side of the unfortunates in our public

Regular Meeting, 1st and 3rd Sunday — Executive Board Meeting, 2nd and 4th Tuesday

OFFICE OF

BOSTON CENTRAL LABOR UNION

WILLIAM H. O'BRIEN, President
FRANK H. McCARTHY, Vice Pres.

HENRY ABRAHAMS, Secretary
JAMES R. CROZIER, Treasurer

987 WASHINGTON STREET
Telephone 612 Tremont

Boston, Mass., May 18 1911

Dr L. Vernon Briggs
208 Beacon Street

Dear Sir

At a special meeting of the Executive Committee of the Boston Central Labor Union held this evening Senate Bill #142, An Act to prohibit certain forms of restraint in Public or Private Hospitals or Sanatoriums was thoroughly discussed and the committee unanimously voted to indorse the measure

I was instructed by the committee to notify you of our action and to again thank you for your able ~~act~~ presentation of this most vital matter.

Yours Very Truly
G. Harry Dunderdale
Secretary of Committee.

P.S. I have also been instructed to forward a letter to the President of the Senate & the speaker of the House of Representatives.

institutions, and I recommended his return to the Legislature.

On September 13, 1912, Mr. Daniel B. Hallett, President of the Boston National Bank, wrote me that he had seen Councillor McGregor ("who says I can have anything I want"), and that the latter had told him that candidates' names were presented by the Governor to the Council for endorsement.

I have presented your name in a letter to him to-day. I have also written to J. Stearns Cushing, Esq., and the Hon. E. S. Frothingham, Haverhill, Mass.

The "Boston Herald" of September 19, 1912, reported a convention of the State Federation of Labor at Fitchburg on September 18, at which "the delegates decided to petition Governor Foss, asking that he appoint Dr. L. Vernon Briggs to the State Board of Insanity."

A letter from Dr. Adolf Meyer, dated September 16, 1912, from Baltimore, commented upon the situation, as follows:

I hope you had a satisfactory talk with Dr. Howard. It is a delicate issue, but the circular on the one hand and the attitude of the Governor on the other make it clear that it is best to go to headquarters. Channing should be reached somehow, but I am afraid he cannot change his ways.

This letter of Dr. Meyer's refers to an interview with Dr. Howard, upon which I made the following note in my diary at the time:

Governor Foss came in his automobile to Manchester-by-the-Sea where I was spending the summer with my family. He said he had come to visit me to ask me if I would allow him to put my name again before the Council for confirmation as a member of the State Board of Insanity. I answered, yes, if he was sure that I would be confirmed. He answered, "I think we had better start right this time. You had better see Howard for me and tell him that I have asked you to allow your name to be used, and ask him if there is any objection on his part." I later made an appointment with Dr. Howard at

the Brigham Hospital, and told him that the Governor had asked me to allow my name to be used again; that he wanted a man to give his whole time to the work, which he felt sure Dr. Howard could not do; and that the Governor had suggested that I should find out whether there would be any feeling on his, Dr. Howard's, part. Dr. Howard assured me that there would not be any feeling; that he had not intended to take up the work, but after he had received a petition signed by over 100 physicians, some of whom were his best friends, he had decided to return to the Board for a while. I asked him whether, if I were appointed and confirmed, it would be agreeable to him if I consulted with him, as his experience on the Board would be valuable. He answered, "You are free to come to me at any time," shook hands with me, and we parted.

Later Dr. V. Y. Bowditch described an interview which he had had with Dr. Howard in which the latter paced up and down the room, shaking his fists in the air in an excited manner, because of Dr. Bowditch's loyalty to me, and stating that I had called upon him and tried to make a trade with him for a position on the Board. He told Dr. Bowditch that I had "pulled the wool" over his (Dr. Bowditch's) eyes.

In a letter written to me on September 18, 1912, Dr. Henry J. Berkley said:

It is pleasant news to hear that you are to allow your name to be used for the position Dr. Howard now holds, and I trust you will win out.

On October 11 he wrote again from Baltimore:

Among other things that Dr. Neff and I talked over was your appointment to the Board of Insanity this fall. Dr. N. wished me to write a letter to the Governor, and after I get a little time I think I will do so, and for this reason: while I have not the slightest influence with him, I think I can make him aware of the sentiment in this region, which is universally in favor of the man who had sufficient influence to cause an amendment in the lunacy laws of the State of Massachusetts. From the look of things throughout the country it is more than possible that Governor Foss may go back this fall — in fact, it would be a fairly safe bet to say so.

What have you and the Governor done about the alien immigration laws? I am rather interested and wish you would send me what information and literature you happen to have on the subject, and possibly some time during the winter I may take it up with Governor Goldsborough for the State of Maryland.

CHAPTER VI

Newspaper Comments. — Governor Foss, November 13, 1912, again sent my Name to the Council, this Time to succeed Dr. Herbert B. Howard

Governor Foss was preparing his campaign for re-election in the Autumn of 1912. There had just been a sensational exposure of certain unpleasant happenings at Worcester, and a newspaper reported that Governor Foss was —

going to renew his campaign on the conduct of the insane asylums of the State. He has made up his mind, because of the recent Worcester Insane Hospital happening, that a new and sharper law is required, which will make punishment more certain. He also believes that commitments in this State are too easy.

The "Boston American" of September 26, 1912, stated:

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Beacon Street will be named again by Governor Foss for a place on the State Board of Insanity. During the past ten years Dr. Briggs has been foremost in advocating reforms in insane asylums, before successive Governors and Legislatures. Until the advent of Governor Foss, the appeals of Dr. Briggs fell upon deaf ears. Governor Foss, advised by Dr. Briggs, recommended remedial measures to the Legislature for the care of the insane. Physical restraint and punishment torture were made illegal. Dr. Briggs has a home on Beacon Street and a summer residence at Manchester-by-the-Sea. He has given years of study and effort to asylum reform in Massachusetts. He practically gave up his private practice, and became a leader in movements to improve the condition of the insane by changes in the law. He led hearings at the State House last year that commanded the attention of the medical world. Crowds at the State House hearings cheered Dr. Briggs. Now the Governor says he will name Dr. Briggs again. The Governor's Council meets Wednesday of next week.

A prominent physician, superintendent of one of the State hospitals of Massachusetts, wrote to me on October 10, 1912, as follows:

I learned to-day that Dr. Owen Copp had been in Boston since last Tuesday. He was at the Psychopathic Hospital this morning. I do not know what he is looking up, but his appearance at this time looks as if he were not here to help your case.

Following is an extract from a letter from Dr. Adolf Meyer, dated November 1, 1912:

Many thanks for your interesting letter. The interview with Dr. Howard was just the thing to do; and while, of course, everything will be done by him and his friends to retain him in his services, I hope that action can soon be taken to put in some one who has enough energy to make impossible such outlandish procedures as these methods of punishment at the Lancaster School.

My visit to the Boston Hospital was put off because Dr. Southard told me that they were not as far along in their organization as I had expected they might be. I therefore shall wait until some time when it seems more profitable.

On November 13, 1912, Governor Foss sent my name to the Council to succeed Dr. Herbert B. Howard as chairman of the State Board of Insanity. Naturally the newspaper comments were numerous and varied. Among other things, the "Boston Daily Advertiser" said:

The unlikelihood of Dr. Briggs' confirmation stands out stronger when it is remembered that when the Governor nominated him a year ago the Council went very thoroughly into his qualifications, and the political complexion of the Council remains unchanged. It is understood, however, that, while 500 endorsements by physicians and surgeons of Dr. Howard have been filed, 1,800 for Dr. Briggs have been turned in.

The following editorial of the "Boston Herald" of November 14 was not a surprise:

The Governor's nomination of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as chairman of the State Board of Insanity is one which the Council should promptly decline to confirm. Dr. Briggs is an excellent gentleman of high professional attainments and of altruistic purposes, but his theories on insanity are out of harmony with the existing work of the State. While they do credit to his kind-heartedness, they are not, in the opinion of the larger body of reputable alienists, practical. No overturn in Massachusetts methods of caring for the insane is either necessary or desirable. Dr. Briggs' confirmation to that office would be a move in that direction and a most unfortunate one.

It was not to be expected that either the "Herald" or the Board would wish an overturn in the methods of caring for the mentally ill. It is interesting to note that the next day, November 15, the "Herald," under heavy headlines, published nearly a column more or less commendatory of my work, and stated my qualifications for office and the reasons why I desired an overturn. Thus the "Herald," while really recognizing my work, could not stand the pressure from the "reputable alienists," who, I was informed by the best of authority, even wrote some of the "Herald" editorials on this subject.

"Practical Politics" of November 16, 1912, said:

While the excuse given for turning down Dr. L. Vernon Briggs when he was appointed to succeed Henry T. Field on the State Board of Insanity, viz., that a lawyer was needed on the Board, and Mr. Field was the only lawyer member, may have been a reasonable one, there can be no excuse for turning down the appointment of Dr. Briggs to succeed Dr. Herbert B. Howard, chairman of the Board. The medical clique, who do not want their control interfered with, advance the argument that Dr. Briggs would be a disturber of the Board, which is ridiculous if you know Dr. Briggs. If he would disturb the medical clique which controls all the city, State and private hospitals, he would be performing a valuable public service. The State would be a distinct gainer in acquiring the services of Dr. Briggs.

Dr. Briggs is an alienist of wide reputation and the originator of some of the best legislation that has passed the Legislature in recent years for the benefit of the insane, among which is the regulation of restraint in public and private hospitals for the mentally sick, and a bill which resulted in the now publicly commended Psychopathic Hospital for the speedy treatment of the mentally sick.

More than 1,700 doctors, many of them leading alienists and specialists in their particular line, residing in every section of the Commonwealth, have signed a petition endorsing Dr. Briggs for the position. He also has the endorsement of 200,000 members of labor organizations, men and women, which has been presented to His Excellency by a vote of the State Branch of the American Federation of Labor held recently at Fitchburg. He is also endorsed by the Boston Typographical Union, representing 1,300 members of the printer's trade of Boston, and by the Allied Printing Trades Council, representing 3,000 members of organized labor. He is also highly endorsed by many of the leading citizens of the Commonwealth, regardless of party affiliations.

Dr. Briggs is Director of the Puritan Trust Company, a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, Boston Medical Library, Boston Society for Medical Improvement, Trustee of the Sharon Sanatorium, a member of the Suffolk District Medical Society, National Hospital Association, American Medical Association, American Medico-Psychological Association, is Alienist on the Board of Consulting Physicians of the Children's Aid Society, is a member of the Massachusetts Society of Examining Physicians, American Association for the Advancement of Science, a member of the staff of the advisory committee of the Boston Dispensary, National Conference of Charities and Corrections, late Director of the New England Hospital for Women and Children, was formally associated with Dr. William S. Whitwell in his sanatorium for mental diseases in San Francisco, and also formerly associated with Dr. Walter Channing at the Channing Sanitarium for mental diseases at Brookline. Dr. Briggs has visited and made a study of hospitals for the insane in England, Scotland, Germany, Austria, Holland and Switzerland at different times. He is also a member of the Massachusetts Consistory, a 32d Degree Mason.

Here I am tempted to quote freely from the opinions of the many newspapers of the day which I have collected, but I will content myself with an excerpt from the "Boston Sunday Post" of November 17, 1912, an illustrated article, entitled "Water Cure Newest Treatment for Insanity in Hospitals here," resulting from a visit of their reporter to the Boston State Hospital and an interview with Dr. Frost, its superintendent. The following extracts are made from that report:

The water cure is the very lastest and most advanced method of treating mental ills, and it has been adopted in the insane hospitals of Massachusetts as a humane and scientific substitute for the old-time strait-jackets, straps and similar means of restraint in the case of violent, or, as the hospital phrase goes, "highly disturbed" patients.

The modern method of treatment has been demonstrated at Pierce and Austin Farms of the Boston State Hospital. The percentage of cures since the inauguration of a bath treatment has greatly increased, whereas under the old régime of force, few violently insane persons fully recovered after being subjected to the torturing restraint which their condition was thought to make necessary. . . .

The people of Massachusetts ought to appreciate the fact that strait-jackets have become obsolete in their institutions. The strait-jacket never was a cure, and yet it had been used for centuries to the harm of insanity patients. It is a matter of pride that the State of Massachusetts has placed its institu-

AT THE 27TH CONVENTION OF THE

Massachusetts Branch,

American Federation of Labor,

HELD AT FITCHBURG THE WEEK OF SEPTEMBER 16TH. 1912.

THE FOLLOWING RESOLUTION WAS UNANIMOUSLY ADOPTED,

WHEREAS,

The working class should have the greatest interest in the management of our state departments and public institutions, more particularly those for the care and treatment of the mental sick, and as such should be represented on the Board of Insanity by one in whom they have the utmost confidence and whose standard of ability as a physician with reference to the treatment of the insane is pre-eminent, and in view of the fact that

DR. L. VERNON BRIGGS

was appointed a member of the Board of Insanity by His Excellency Governor Eugene N. Foss in 1911, to fill the place made vacant by the expiration of the term of office of Henry P. Field, attorney at law, of Northampton, but whom the Executive Council refused to confirm, giving as their reason that the western part of the Commonwealth should be represented and that there was necessity for a lawyer to be a member of said Board, and for the further reason that the medical profession had liberal representation on the Board, and in view of the fact that the reason above cannot operate this year, as the vacancy that will exist on September 18th, 1912, is now held by a physician who is a resident of Boston;

RESOLVED,

That the Massachusetts Branch of the American Federation of Labor, composed of delegates from affiliated bodies representing a membership of approximately 200,000, in convention assembled, hereby petition His Excellency Governor Eugene N. Foss that he appoint as a member of the State Board of Insanity, to fill said vacancy Dr. L. Vernon Briggs Specialist on Mental Diseases, and respectfully ask the members of the Executive Council of such appointment is made to confirm the same, as we recognize Dr. Briggs' devotion to those afflicted people, not only as an expert in the care and treatment of the insane, but in his capacity as a man as well and for the further reason that by holding such position he will be of increased value to the State. By bring brought in closer touch in an official way with the afflicted humanity who are inmates of the state hospitals for the care and treatment of the insane.

Respectfully Yours,

Martin T. Joyce

SECY. TREAS. MASS. BRANCH A. F. OF L.

tions on the non-restraint basis, a mark of progress that as yet characterizes only 24 per cent of the insane institutions of the country.

A letter from my good friend, Dr. Frank G. Wheatley, stated that he had spoken to Councillor Keith in regard to my nomination, and that as he had agreed to vote for confirmation, it appeared that my nomination would be confirmed by a majority of the Council; and, Dr. Wheatley added, "I congratulate you on having won a hard fight."

Dr. Edward H. Wiswell, of Wellesley, Mass., on the same date, wrote me as follows:

Congratulations on your nomination to the head of the State Board of Insanity. I trust that your appointment will be confirmed by the Governor's Council. Any assistance within my power I shall be pleased to render.

CHAPTER VII

Simon Swig becomes an Associate of Drs. Channing, Stedman, Howard, Bradford, Hawes, Hugh Cabot and Others of the Medical Cabal, and is invited to the Meetings held at Dr. Stedman's Office. — He becomes disgusted at the Methods employed by these Men, the Lies circulated by Some of Them and the Deceit used to persuade Him to spread Untruths to discredit Dr. Briggs. — On November 27, 1912, the Council, 6 to 2, again voted not to confirm Governor Foss' Appointment of Dr. Briggs. — Newspaper Comments and Letters

On November 14, 1912, Governor Foss sent for me and told me he thought I ought to know that the most active agent employed by the medical coterie against my confirmation by his Council was Simon Swig, who had an office in Pemberton Square. He told me that Simon Swig was circulating stories defamatory to my character, — stories which were backed up by certain of the medical men who had been enlisted by those opposed to my appointment. The Governor said:

> Here is my card. Take it to Mr. Swig and tell him I want him to state to you all the things he said about you to the members of my Council, and give him a chance to affirm or deny them.

I went at once to the office of Simon Swig and presented the Governor's card with mine. He received me with the question, "What can I do for you?" I then told him that I understood that he had been circulating stories derogatory to my character among the members of the Governor's Council, and I told him that they were not true. He answered:

"What can I do when I am told by your brother physicians, some of them your connections by marriage,

that what I am saying is true? In fact, they were the ones who told me what to say."

I asked him who had been responsible for his information, and he said that his informants were Dr. John B. Hawes (who was one of the Trustees of Massachusetts Hospitals for Consumptives, on which Board Simon Swig was also a trustee), Dr. Bartol (my wife's brother-in-law), Dr. Hugh Cabot (my wife's cousin), Dr. Channing, Dr. Stedman and Dr. Edward Bradford (Dean of the Harvard Medical School); and he said that with assurances from such men that the things they told him were true, he had seen and talked with, not only members of the Council, but Lieutenant Governor Luce, and that Dr. Hawes had specially asked him to use his influence with Lieutenant Governor Luce against my confirmation.

I was very indignant, and said that I could not believe it possible that these men would go so far as to invent the outrageous stories which had no foundation whatsoever in fact. I doubted Mr. Swig's statement, and so berated him that he offered to call up Dr. Hawes on the telephone, and have me listen in on a telephone connected with Judge McManus's desk, in the same office. Judge McManus and James A. Watson were also present in the office where they could hear what we said. At first I declined, and Mr. Swig suggested that I should call Dr. Hawes and that he would listen in, as I had told him that only the night before Dr. Hawes had sat at the same table with me at dinner at the St. Botolph Club and had been most friendly and cordial. I called Dr. Hawes at his office, and was told that he had left his office and would arrive at his house in about twenty minutes; it was then about 5

o'clock in the afternoon. I waited until later and called him at his house, Mr. Swig and the others listening at the other telephone.

I told Dr. Hawes that I had called on Simon Swig to ask him to use his influence with Lieutenant Governor Luce for my confirmation, and that Mr. Swig said it would be impossible for him to do so because of the things that he, Dr. Hawes, had told him. Dr. Hawes thereupon denied to me that he had told Mr. Swig anything, excepting that there were a certain number of physicians in favor of Dr. Howard, and that there were a certain number in favor of Dr. Briggs, and that each had a right to their own opinion and that there was nothing more to it than that. He said that while Simon Swig was a big man, he was a Jew, and that anything he said must be taken with a grain of salt — that he was likely to exaggerate. He further said that he had the best opinion of me, and knew nothing in any way to disqualify me for the position. I then asked him if he would correct the impression he had made upon Mr. Swig, so that Mr. Swig would know that the only reason he opposed me was because he wanted Dr. Howard. Dr. Hawes promised to do so. This ended our conversation.

It is needless to say that Mr. Swig was entirely taken aback and that he was indignant at what Dr. Hawes had said to me. I naturally thought that Mr. Swig had invented his stories, and for half an hour we discussed the matter. Mr. Swig finally demanded that he be allowed to call up Dr. Hawes and that I listen in, as he had originally proposed.

He called Dr. Hawes on the telephone. I took the receiver from Judge McManus's desk. Mr. Swig said,

"Dr. Hawes, I had a caller this afternoon." Dr. Hawes answered, "I bet I could tell you who he was — it was Dr. L. Vernon Briggs. He has called me up and wants me to use my influence with you in his favor, but I told him that I could not do it." Mr. Swig replied that if the things he, Dr. Hawes, had said about me were true, neither could he. Dr. Hawes immediately reiterated that they were all true and that there were other things which were hearsay, but which he was going to find out about and let Mr. Swig know, but that on no account was Mr. Swig to support Dr. Briggs, as he had no standing among physicians and was in no way worthy of any appointment of honor or trust.

On the next day, November 15, I again went to Mr. Swig's office, and he called up Dr. Hawes on one telephone while Judge McManus and I took the other. In answer to questions, Dr. Hawes reiterated all the charges which he had previously made against me, and said that he would telephone the surgeon who was giving him the information in the evening and find out more about it, but on no account was Mr. Swig to tell me, as, Dr. Hawes said, "Dr. Briggs is rather a powerful man in a way, and we have to be careful about him, especially as he is a brother physician. Dr. Bowditch talked with me to-day concerning Dr. Briggs. Dr. Bowditch is a very lovable man. Dr. Henry Jackson and I both think Dr. Bowditch has queer judgment and is likely to be fooled. Dr. Henry Jackson thinks exactly as I do concerning Dr. Briggs."

On May 15, 1913, I was amused to receive a letter from Dr. Henry Jackson of 380 Marlborough Street, who was one of the doctors who had opposed my

appointment on the ground that I was not suitable for the position, referring a patient to me for treatment, and winding up with this statement:

> It is a pretty bad case, but perhaps you can handle her better than I can.

Dr. Jackson also wrote, on July 30, 1913, a letter to another physician in regard to a patient whom I had treated, and who came under Dr. Jackson's care at my request:

> I cannot express to you sufficiently my appreciation of Dr. Briggs' skill in handling his diet.

One of the charges made against me at this time was that I owned houses in the South End of Boston which were used for improper purposes, when in fact I never owned or rented a house up to this time except for my own occupancy. Reflections were also made upon my professional standing.

Dr. Walter Channing Bailey, in spite of his being named for Dr. Channing's father (who was at one time a patient of mine), undertook to defend me, but I soon came to realize that he was trying to smooth things over in a manner which would have left me discredited and in just the position in which my medical enemies would have desired to place me. Such advice of his as I followed brought me only trouble and did not help me or my cause.

According to Dr. Bailey's statements to me, he had told Dr. Hawes he would rather have me as an alienist than any one else in the State of Massachusetts; that he considered me far ahead of other men; that while my medical education had been late, he thought I was

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

TRUSTEES OF HOSPITALS FOR CONSUMPTIVES
3 JOY STREET, TEL. HAYMARKET 2127
BOSTON

TRUSTEES
DANIEL L. PRENDERGAST, CHAIRMAN
WALTER C. BAILEY, M.D.
ARTHUR DRINKWATER
GEORGE A. DUNN
ALBERT C. GETCHELL, M.D.
SYLVIA B. KNOWLTON
SIMON SWIG
JOHN B. HAWES, 2ND, M.D., SECRETARY

Oct.1,1913

Dr.L.Vernon Briggs
Hancock,N.H.

My Dear Doctor:

I received your postal and letter,and wish to thank you for same.

I told Louis to send you the newspaper which contains the report of his banquet.

Dr;Stedman called me up this morning and told me that you were seen with the Governor about a week ago,in the St.Botolph Club.

I want to see you personally,to talk over regarding the appointment.Dr.Stedman said to be sure that no layman be appointed,as "any doctor of any eminence,we shall be able to reach,but not a layman."

Yours very truly,
Simon Swig.

NOTE THE ASSOCIATES OF MR. SWIG IN THE LIST OF TRUSTEES APPEARING AT THE HEAD OF THIS LETTER

at the top in mental medicine. He said that when Dr. Hawes told him I kept a bucket shop he answered that he knew my father, a notary public for most of the banks down town, had had an office on Devonshire Street for many years, and that he had been there to get a passport, and he was sure there had never been any semblance of a broker's office or of any one selling stocks in my father's office, and that he was writing a letter to this effect to Mr. Swig and one to the Lieutenant Governor, and that he hoped Dr. Hawes would go to these people and correct his statements. Dr. Bailey at this time tried to persuade me to withdraw my name as appointee to the State Board of Insanity.

Through Mr. Swig, the following information came to me of a conversation he had had with Dr. Hawes after Dr. Hawes had read a letter that Mr. Swig had received from Dr. Bailey. Dr. Hawes told Mr. Swig that he had seen Dr. Bailey since Mr. Swig had received this letter, and he stated that Dr. Bailey had only written the letter for personal reasons. He said that Dr. Bailey had told him that Dr. Briggs did not understand medicine, and that Dr. Bailey knew about the bucket shop down town, as did also Mr. Prendergast of the State Tuberculosis Board. Mr. Swig said that at a later interview Dr. Hawes repeated these statements in the presence of Mr. Drinkwater, also of the Board, and that he had also said that Dr. Hugh Cabot had written a letter reiterating these statements about Dr. Briggs to Lieutenant Governor Luce. Dr. Cabot's letter had been dictated to a stenographer on November 16, and the Lieutenant Governor must have received it by November 18.

I soon proved to Mr. Swig that I never owned any

real estate in the South End or elsewhere in Boston, except what I was using at the time I owned it for my residence, and that I never "ran" or had any interest in any bucket shop. When Mr. Swig had satisfied himself as to the truth of my statements, and after he had listened to Dr. Hawes' conversation with me on the telephone, he was disgusted that the medical cabal had used him as a tool to carry out their nefarious purposes, and he said that if I would stand by him he would stand by me, and that we would get to the bottom of their schemes. It was then arranged that he should continue his relations with them and that I was to keep in touch with him. I was to employ detectives to watch the detectives who he said were being employed especially to watch me and to investigate my character and the history of my entire life, which I did, and I also arranged for Dr. Stedman and his cabal to employ one of my detectives, who thereafter reported to me their activities, even attending one or more of their meetings. Mr. Swig told me that they had sent detectives to the towns where I had lived, — Hanover, Hancock, etc., — in their endeavor, as he said, to "get something on me" which they could use to discredit me with the Governor's Council. It did not take me long to become convinced that all Mr. Swig had told me was perfectly true, and that he was intimate at that time, not only with Dr. Hawes, but with Drs. Stedman, Channing and Bradford, and that he had the confidence of Drs. John W. Bartol, Hugh Cabot, J. G. Blake and others of their coterie. Mr. Swig told me that he had obtained information from Dr. Bradford that they had sent a detective to Hancock, N. H., who was going to try to prove that I had

taken a friend of the opposite sex to my house there, alone and surreptitiously.

At this time Dr. Vincent Y. Bowditch addressed a letter to Lieutenant Governor Luce, similar to the one he had written in 1911 to Lieutenant Governor Frothingham, urging my appointment:

506 Beacon Street, Boston, November 19, 1912.

Hon. Robert Luce, *Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts.*

My Dear Mr. Luce: — In your position as chairman of the Executive Council, I am desirous of expressing my opinion to you and the Councillors, regarding the appointment of a gentleman well known to me for almost a lifetime for a position on the Board of Insanity. I refer to Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Boston. I have known Dr. Briggs almost from boyhood, and in all these years I have never known him to fail in devotion either to his friends or to any cause in which he felt he could aid humanity.

The plea of his lack of administrative ability has been brought up against his nomination, I understand. As a contradiction of this I can only cite his long and valuable experience in a private institution for the insane, and his constant study and interest in all work of this nature, including visits to the most celebrated institutions here and abroad.

It has recently been brought to my notice also that charges of a personal nature have been brought to members of your Council against Dr. Briggs, — charges which are so absolutely false and unjustifiable that I simply mention them to dismiss them as utterly unworthy of the sources from which they arise.

As a specimen of how he is regarded elsewhere than in Massachusetts I cite Dr. Macpherson of Edinburgh, President of the Royal Association of Alienists, a man respected and loved all over the United Kingdom of Great Britain, who has told me personally of his great respect for Dr. Briggs, both as a man and as a specialist, using to me the expression, "Dr. Briggs is ahead of his time." Dr. Adolf Meyer of New York, probably the foremost alienist in the United States, has also the highest opinion of Dr. Briggs' work for insane patients and of Dr. Briggs as a man. I could state other proofs, also, but refrain from so doing, merely stating from absolute knowledge that I know of no man who is a more indefatigable worker in any cause which interests him for humanity.

In all of his recent endeavors to better the condition of patients in our asylums, I can only testify to his absolute disregard of self in all that he has done, at a sacrifice of no one knows how much of his time and strength.

I beg to call your attention to the recent public utterances in print of Dr. Frost, Superintendent of the Boston Insane Hospital, regarding the work done by Dr. Briggs in favor of the establishment of detention hospitals in Boston. I also wish to call your attention to the fact that the purposes of

the bills recently passed and introduced by Dr. Briggs are now being furthered by various institutions in this State.

In conclusion, I wish to state that I write this as a citizen of Massachusetts, in behalf of what I consider the welfare of our State institutions, not as a personal matter for Dr. Briggs. I believe that his appointment to the State Board of Insanity will be a distinct benefit to our State institutions.

I trust that my views may be given to the whole Executive Council.

Believe me,

Respectfully yours,

VINCENT Y. BOWDITCH.

The "Boston Globe" of November 20, 1912, reported "Uncertain Situation on Dr. Briggs," while the "Herald" headed a column with "Briggs Looks Like Winner." Action by the Council was postponed on November 20 for one week, owing to the mistake of the Governor in nominating me as "chairman" instead of "member" of the State Board of Insanity. The State Board had the right to elect its own chairman. The "Globe" gave much space to my appointment and concluded with this statement:

This much is sure — there has not been a nomination to an important State post in recent years on which stronger and more influential forces have been brought to bear, for and against, than on this one. Of course these "forces" have been confined to medical ranks.

All the newspapers of this date, including the "Globe," "Herald," "Transcript," "Record," "Post" and "Journal," agreed that my confirmation by the Council was only delayed and would take place the following week. Little did they know the methods of the forces that were at work at the State House to prevent the appointment; and my having been so nearly confirmed seemed to make the cabal renew their efforts with all their might.

Meanwhile letters came to me from many friends. Dr. William Burgess Cornell, on the staff of the Danvers State Hospital, wrote on November 23, 1912:

Please accept my congratulations on your appointment to the State Board of Insanity, and I trust there will be no delay in confirmation by the Council. If I could be of assistance to you in any way, I wish you would command me.

On the following day Dr. Charles T. LaMoure, Superintendent of the Gardner State Colony, wrote to me:

From what I hear, you are pretty sure of being confirmed as a member of the State Board of Insanity next Wednesday. I sincerely hope you will be, as it will be a good thing for the institutions. I tried to see you yesterday to consult you about some changes at the Colony, but will probably see you this week. Have written Senator Greenwood in your behalf and have a friend who has written Mr. Cushing.

At the next meeting of the Governor's Council, Wednesday, November 27, 1912, my name was again rejected by a vote of 6 to 2. The Councillors who voted for me were Collins and Keith. Those opposed to me were Lieutenant Governor Luce[1] and Councillors Cushing, Frothingham, Fletcher, McGregor and Goetting.

The "Boston Post" of November 28 said:

The large vote against Dr. Briggs was a surprise. The story of the second refusal to confirm is a continuation of the differences existing between two schools, the physicians and the alienist experts. Dr. Briggs has a wide reputation as an alienist expert. He was one of the Governor's advisors on the Richeson case, and the Governor has repeatedly said that the State was sure to have in Dr. Briggs one of the most eminent specialists in the world on the State Board of Insanity.

I learned that at a meeting of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology, held on November 21, 1912, a vote of protest was passed against my confirmation as a member of the State Board of Insanity. I also

[1] Showing that Mr. Luce considered the stories derogatory to my character only political, and that his opposition was political, I quote from a letter he wrote on January 20, 1913, resigning office in a Massachusetts corporation, as follows: "Certainly I shall have to give up the treasurership. . . . I would suggest that you be considering the desirability of substituting for me Mr. Glidden or Dr. Briggs."

learned that this was a special meeting, attended only by men known to be unfriendly to me.

The "Boston Herald" expressed its well-known position as follows:

The failure of the Council to confirm the nomination of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs does not wholly clarify the situation. Dr. Howard, whom he was named to succeed will doubtless continue to serve as a "holdover." Judge Field of Northampton, whom the Governor attempted to displace last year, is also hanging by the same thread. This is unsatisfactory all around. Some effort should be made to get our well-meaning Governor and the friends of scientific medicine in this State together, so that such an important Board as this may be effectively constituted, with an assured continuity of policy.

The "Herald" does not criticize Dr. Briggs personally. He is a man of high professional attainments and excellent purposes, but his confirmation would have been a vote of "no confidence" in the existing management of the insane hospitals of Massachusetts. No facts of the situation warrant that, and so the rejection of his ill-advised nomination was the only proper course for the executive advisors to take.

Letters began to come to me from many directions. Dr. Cornell of the Danvers State Hospital again wrote me on November 28:

I am quite disappointed that the Council fell down on the confirmation of your appointment. I hope you will keep at it, for surely you will land it eventually, and that at no distant date.

Dr. Arthur L. Chute of 350 Marlborough Street, Boston, wrote on November 28, 1912:

My Dear Vernon: — I was very sorry to see in this morning's paper the action of the Council in refusing to confirm your appointment to the State Board of Insanity. Of course I know one source of opposition, but I did not think it was as powerful as it seems to be. You must take what comfort you can in the fact that you have a lot of staunch supporters, but just at present they do not seem to have as much influence with the Council as the opposition. Next time you will win; you deserve to, I am sure.

Sincerely,

Arthur L. Chute.

Dr. William Sturgis Bigelow wrote:

Red Dog

60 BEACON STREET.

Dear Dr.

I see by the Transcript that it went against you. — Well, it has got to go against somebody in every election. — I recommend Lowell's advice. — "And if the first throw fails,

Why, up and try
agin — thats all. —
The coppers aint
all tails." —

Don't take it too
hard. —

Very truly yours

A. J. Begelow

60 Beacon Street, Wednesday Evening.

Dear Doctor: — I see by the "Transcript" that it went against you. Well, it has got to go against somebody in every election. I recommend Lowell's advice —

"And if the first throw fails,
Why up and try again — that's all —
The coppers ain't all tails."

Don't take it too hard.

Very truly yours,

W. S. Bigelow.

Mr. C. W. Barron, Manager of the Boston News Bureau, wrote on December 3, 1912, while on the train to New York:

My Dear Doctor: — I was more grieved than I can tell you over the action of the Council. I have talked with Governor Foss and urged him to fight the battle through. I hope you and Mrs. Briggs remember what Emerson says: "Oppositions, calamities and weights are wings and means."

The Governor told me that you were anxious for the work in the interest of the State and humanity, and that the action of the Council was outrageous. I told him he should fight and demand a legislative investigation and go before the people, if necessary, for soon this commission would be nothing but a lot of hold-overs, and their very obstinacy showed there was need of an investigation and a thorough housecleaning somewhere.

Very truly yours,

C. W. Barron.

In the meantime I received letters addressed to me at the State Board of Insanity and forwarded to me from there, which had been opened and resealed — by whom I do not know.

Councillor Keith had been convinced of the falseness of the stories circulated by the medical opposition, as my good friend Daniel G. Wing, President of the First National Bank, had been able to enlighten him. He told him the truth, and thereafter Councillor Keith always voted for me.

The following is quoted from the November 30, 1912, issue of "Practical Politics":

Rejection of Dr. Briggs

After having practically decided to confirm Dr. Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity, the Council did a flop in the week intervening between its last two meetings, and on Wednesday there were only two votes in the Doctor's favor. The Councillors who voted against him all had splendid reasons, apparently, in the form of letters from the medical clique which has opposed every effort at progress in the State and municipal hospitals. The Councillors are not to be blamed, perhaps, for taking these letters at their face value, except one particularly vicious one from the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology, which condemned Dr. Briggs for being instrumental in putting "unnecessary legislation" on the statute books. That was a fine tribute to the committee which gave serious deliberation to Dr. Briggs' bills of 1911 and reported them, and to the members of both branches who passed them, in the face of the opposition of this same crowd which is fighting to keep the State Board of Insanity ring intact.

The "unnecessary legislation" consists of the prohibition of the application of instruments of restraint in insane asylums by subordinate employees, who are generally non-citizens, and who already have a few deaths to their credit in Massachusetts insane institutions. Dr. Briggs is opposed by those who do not regard insane persons as human beings. He is favored by practically everybody who has a knowledge of conditions in our asylums, and wishes to remedy them in the interest of humanity.

So far as Dr. Channing is concerned, the fight is entirely personal, for he doesn't like Dr. Briggs, and has had no hesitancy in times past about letting the fact be known. With most of the opposition, though, it was a question of Harvard's prestige, and Dr. Briggs has the demerit of having been graduated from the Medical College of Virginia. Postgraduate courses in other famous institutions cut no figure. That Medical College of Virginia, though, sounds altogether too plebeian to be tolerated, and especially so as the Doctor happens to be proud enough of his former connection with it to give it as his *alma mater* when he passed the registration examinations in Massachusetts.

Everybody, even members of the Council, if their talk on the subject was any criterion of the thoughts, believed that Dr. Briggs was going to be confirmed this time, but there was an eleventh hour shift on the part of the cabal, and the way the letters of protest came to the Councillors was a caution. Eddie Collins was the only member who was not flooded with them. No doctor would think of writing to a man named Collins, and especially if the particular Collins came from South Boston. The high-brow editors were fooled up to the last minute, and even Robert Lincoln O'Brien of the "Herald" had not the hardihood this time to write any of those scathing editorials proving that the country was menaced by Dr. Briggs' nomination, and Robert Lincoln is one of the sturdy boys who never fall down when the cabal decides its prestige is in the balance.

It is claimed, though, that the cabal had little to do with the matter this time, but that the cause of Dr. Briggs' failure was due to the miscarriage of a

"deal" between Governor Foss and Henry P. Field of Northampton, who has held over since last year. According to the story, the Field adherents were assured that if Dr. Briggs was confirmed the Governor would at once nominate Mr. Field to succeed to himself. Then, as the story goes, the Field people took a notion that they were due to be double-crossed, and they at once threw their support to the cabal, and Dr. Briggs fell by the wayside when the Council met on Wednesday. Anyway, it was Ex-Councillor Glidden who passed the word to defeat Dr. Briggs.

CHAPTER VIII

Lawyer in Rôle of Detective employed by the Medical Cabal to investigate Dr. Briggs in Hancock, N. H. — Dr. Hugh Cabot and Dr. J. W. Bartol confer with Simon Swig. — Judge Mason appointed December 4, 1912, and later confirmed to succeed Henry P. Field. — Labor endorses Dr. Briggs. — The Cabal meet regularly at Dr. Stedman's Office. Simon Swig invited and attends. — Dr. H. R. Stedman and Dr. E. H. Bradford confide in Simon Swig and urge Him to work against Dr. Briggs. — Notes taken at the Meeting of the Cabal on December 18, 1912

The shift of the Council could be easily explained by the following incidents: While I was at the Governor's office on Tuesday evening, November 26, 1912, Charles H. Innes, a loyal friend, called me up on the telephone and said that he had just received word that five of the members of the Council had pledged themselves to lay my name on the table for another week, but that Keith was going to stand firm and vote for me. Councillor McGregor afterwards told me that one of the reasons he later voted for me was because a man who said he was interested in the opposition came up to him in the lobby of the Parker House and said that if he would vote persistently against me $1,000 should be paid him. Mr. McGregor said that he was very indignant, and told the man to look across the street to the store of Houghton & Dutton, whence he told this man he received all the money that he needed, and that to be offered money for his influence or vote was

the greatest insult he had ever suffered. After relating this story he said, "Briggs, I am with you from now on. The opposition has gone too far."

Mr. Innes[1] told me that the members who were pledged to vote against me were Luce, Frothingham, Fletcher, Goetting and one other. He said that he had dined with Councillor Cushing at the Parker House that evening, and that Cushing said he wanted to make some investigations as to my character and transactions in New Hampshire, and that it might take until January 1 for a detective to investigate. I soon after received a telephone call from Hancock, N. H., and learned that a man, evidently sent to investigate me, had been there. This man arrived in Hancock on Monday evening November 25, two days before Council meeting. He was described as a young, smooth-faced man. He inquired of Mr. Taylor, the station agent, if I had recently got off the train accompanied by a lady. Mr. Taylor told him he had not seen me, and referred him to Thomas Manning, who drove the station team. He then went to Mr. Manning with the same question, and was told by Mr. Manning that he did not recollect my ever having arrived with any woman not a member of my own family. He asked Mr. Manning if it was not possible for me to get off the rear end of the train and walk across lots or through the woods to my house. Mr. Manning replied that it would be a difficult thing to do, as one would have to go through two miles of woods without paths or roads and cross two swamps, one of which would be over

[1] I later thanked Mr. Innes for his interest and asked if there was not something I could do in return. He immediately wrote to me: "I appreciate your letter very much. Considering the time, thought and patience which you have so unselfishly given to the cause of the mentally afflicted, the least I can do is to respond when you ask for advice or help."

one's rubber boots. He had never heard of any one going "cross lots" to Dr. Briggs' house, adding "They would be damned fools to walk across lots when they could ride for 50 cents apiece."[1]

This stranger then went to Mr. Woodward, the proprietor of Woodward's Hotel, and asked him the same question and received a negative answer. He also called on Lewis Hunt, who later told me that he "gave the man a piece of his mind and told him to mind his own business." He then repaired to the Hancock House, kept by J. F. Eaton. Mr. Eaton asked to see me the next time I came to Hancock, and I will give his own story in his own words:

A man representing himself as Frank Carter came into my hotel and found me sitting in the office alone. He greeted me, and said, "You perhaps remember my coming in April and putting up at this hotel?" I said I did not, but asked him what I could do for him, at the same time saying I hoped they took good care of him, to which he replied "Yes." Continuing, Mr. Eaton said, "This amused me, for my hotel was not open in April. He then asked me if Dr. Briggs was in the habit of going to some place he had up in the woods with any woman. I told him that I did not know that he was. He asked me if I would know, and I replied that everybody in the village would know, as everybody knew Dr. Briggs. After a few more questions I thought it was time I began to ask one or two myself. In answer to my questions, he said he was a lawyer with offices in Providence and Boston; that he represented a firm in Providence that Dr. Briggs had applied to for a position; that they had heard some scandal about him, and as he was on his way to Keene, he thought he would stop over and make some inquiries for this concern before making Dr. Briggs an answer for the position he wanted. He voluntarily said once or twice that he was not a detective, he was a lawyer. I suggested that he see me in the morning before he went to Keene, as the Keene train leaves at 11 o'clock, but the man said, "No, my train leaves at 8, and I won't have time to see you." Mr. Eaton added, "As the man had told me at least three lies, — first, that he had been entertained at my hotel last April, though I didn't open the doors until July; second, that Dr. Briggs was seeking some position in Providence, which I knew was not true; and third, that he was leaving on the 8 o'clock train, which did not go to Keene

[1] During one of the visits of this detective, Bert Manning telephoned me that some of the men in Hancock wanted me to come right up and go to my house and they would bring this man "Carter" up there to me and I could do anything to him I wanted to.

but to Boston, — I told him that I knew nothing more that I could tell him and virtually sent him off.

The man then went to Almon Hill, the blacksmith, and asked much the same questions. He spent a good part of the evening with Lewis Hunt, to whom he introduced himself as a lawyer from Hartford, Conn. Mr. Hunt said that he did not know how many times the man told him he was not a detective, until finally Mr. Hunt said, "If you tell me that many more times I shall think you are a detective." Mr. Hunt, in telephoning me about the man's visit, said he would like to go "on any stand in court" and testify to what the man had said to him — that he thought it was outrageous.

After learning of the failure of the Council to confirm my nomination on Wednesday, November 27, 1912, I went to Simon Swig's office the same evening, and he called some of the medical coterie up on the telephone (among others, Dr. Hugh Cabot) while I listened in and took notes. Dr. Cabot immediately congratulated Mr. Swig on the good work he had done in defeating me for the Board. Mr. Swig said, "After talking about the stories that you put forth?" and Dr. Cabot answered "That was the cause of the defeat." Mr. Swig said, "Did you hear about the New Hampshire stuff?" Cabot answered, "I gave it to the Council just as soon as I got wind of it — I got it last Thursday or Friday."

On another occasion, Mr. Swig called Dr. John W. Bartol on my telephone at 64 Beacon Street while I was listening in and taking down what was said. I told Mr. Swig that perhaps Dr. Bartol would express himself as to my qualifications and character. Mr.

Swig told Dr. Bartol what Dr. Hawes had said, and then asked Dr. Bartol his opinion of Dr. Briggs. Dr. Bartol replied, "*This is confidential. I would say in strictest confidence that the protest against Dr. Briggs is perfectly justified. I feel the same way as Dr. Hawes does. I say this in strict confidence because I am married into the same family.*"

It is interesting here to note the fact that these men were endeavoring to influence my father-in-law against me and to discredit me with him in every way. This is evidenced by the fact that Louis Cabot, my wife's father, said at this time that Augustus Hemenway (member of the Corporation of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded) had been to him with these stories and had had a long talk with him about me. Neither Mr. Hemenway, who was Mrs. Louis Cabot's brother, nor Mr. Cabot ever gave me a chance to prove that the stories told them were false. Mr. Hemenway was very intimate with Dr. and Mrs. Bartol.

On December 4, 1912, Governor Foss sent to the Council the name of Judge John W. Mason of Northampton to succeed Henry P. Field on the State Board of Insanity. Judge Mason is a son of the late Chief Justice Mason of the Superior Court. He was born in Plymouth in 1861, and is a graduate of Harvard and Boston University Law School. His appointment was later confirmed.

The "Boston Sunday Record" of December 8, 1912, published the following:

> The local labor unions have been unanimous in their endorsement of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs to the State Board of Insanity, and all have held meetings relative to his third appointment.

Dr. Briggs has been appointed several times, but the Governor's Council each time has refused to confirm him. It is understood that he stands in line to be appointed again, and labor organizations throughout the State have taken this action to show the Council how they feel in the matter.

A letter came to me at this time from Dr. Charles W. Page, formerly Superintendent of the Danvers State Hospital. It read as follows:

94 Woodland Street, Hartford, Conn.,
December 18, 1912.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — Yours of the 17th is received. I seldom see Boston papers and was not aware of the situation in which you are placed, and cannot solve the mystery.

Danvers Hospital management was not popular with the Republican ring for years, and the reason was plain to those of us who knew the inside history. While I could maintain my self-respect as the superintendent, I continued my work regardless, but the pressure was not agreeable, so when my son broke down in health I gave up the work.

Some of those active ring managers are yet struggling with the conditions and their hopes, but I do not see how they could have become prejudiced against you.

Thinking the clippings may be of more value to you than to me, I return those you submitted, with especial thanks for the confidence you repose in me, and for the full explanation of your situation as far as you can fathom it. Better put the facts in writing as they develop. The story may be of great interest to us some day.

Very truly yours,

Charles W. Page.

The following letter appeared in the "Boston Journal" in December, 1912:

Dr. Briggs' Case

To the Editor of the "Boston Journal."

In no department of philanthropic effort is there more need of investigation and constant watchfulness than in regard to the management of our hospitals for the insane. There are no institutions in which abuse and oppression may be more easily practiced than in these asylums.

Dr. Vernon Briggs has been instrumental in producing some reforms, and his name is a familiar watchword of benevolence in fearlessly exposing abuses and recommending changes in the management of these hospitals, which,

even late in the last century, were "manufactories of insanity," with their grated cells, heavy manacles, ignorant and vicious attendants, and unfeeling and unscientific treatment.

There should be stringent laws enacted for the prevention of persons being suddenly seized, taken from their friends and homes by the advice of two or three so-called "experts," and thrown into the company of violent maniacs, in a crowded ward, for a few days or weeks, to be held under observation. Such a severe test would drive to distraction the best of regulated minds.

Dr. Briggs should have the public encouragement of the humane, and the official support of the State government in his efforts for more effective legislation for the insane poor. We may well be proud of our institutions for the alleviation of suffering, and here at least may be found the practical spirit of the Golden Rule. It is no longer true in Massachusetts that

"Man's inhumanity to man
Makes countless thousands mourn."

HENRY COYLE.

ROXBURY.

In the meantime the medical coterie were busy, and had formed themselves into a sort of self-appointed committee, which usually met at the office of Dr. Henry R. Stedman, 48 Beacon Street, before each meeting of the Governor's Council. Certain of them were delegated by the others or volunteered to see members of the Council or their friends and to communicate to them things derogatory to my character or professional standing, and detectives and legislative lobbyists or agents were employed to bring about my defeat.

On Thursday, December 12, 1912, Judge McManus and Simon Swig called at Dr. Hugh Cabot's office by appointment at 4 P.M. Judge McManus was a friend of Mr. Swig's and had been so incensed at what he had heard in Mr. Swig's office regarding the methods employed to discredit me that he offered to do anything he could to break down the false propaganda which was being put forth. Dr. Cabot, after talking to Judge McManus, saw Mr. Swig and told him that Dr. V. Y.

183 BEACON STREET
BOSTON, MASS.

BOSTON
JAN 9
5 PM
1913
MASS.

BACK BAY
STATION
1

Simeon Swig Esq.
618 Barristers Hall
Boston

183 BEACON STREET
BOSTON, MASS.

Jan. 9th 1913

Dear Sir

In reply to your letter of the 6th inst. I beg to say that I have communicated with the Chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Mass. General Hospital.

Very Truly Yours
George B. Shattuck

Simeon Swig Esq.
Boston

Bowditch was a friend of Dr. Briggs, but advised him to see Dr. Bowditch's cousin Alfred Bowditch, who he said could tell Mr. Swig a great deal about Dr. Briggs. Mr. Swig said that Dr. Cabot also told him to see Dr. E. H. Bradford, who, he said, knew about Dr. Briggs and the New Hampshire scandal. *He said that while Dr. Bradford cared nothing for Dr. Briggs, he did not want to make public what he knew, because it would involve others who were innocent; but that if making public what he knew was necessary to keep Dr. Briggs out of the State Board of Insanity, he would sacrifice the other people involved.* Dr. Cabot also advised Mr. Swig to see Dr. George B. Shattuck and Dr. Henry R. Stedman, who, Dr. Cabot said, would give him information which he could use against Dr. Briggs. He said that Dr. Stedman was very actively engaged in working for Dr. Briggs' defeat.

A few days previous to this interview, Mr. Swig said that he had called to see Dr. Cabot, but he was out. He however saw Dr. Cabot's secretary, who gave her name as Miss Hawkins, and told Mr. Swig much about Dr. Cabot, saying that since Dr. Maurice Richardson had died, Dr. Cabot had taken the first place among the surgeons of Massachusetts, and that he got most of his business through people upon whom he operated. Mr. Swig said that when he asked if Dr. Cabot had anything against Dr. Briggs, or what his reasons could be for working to defeat Dr. Briggs, she seemed unable to answer, but took down a letter file and voluntarily read to Mr. Swig the copy of a letter which she had written at Dr. Cabot's dictation to Robert Luce, Lieutenant Governor, stating, among other things, that I was interested in a "bucket shop,"

which of course was ridiculously false. Miss Hawkins had also an accurate description of me, which she gave Mr. Swig — even as to my height, etc.

On Saturday, December 14, 1912, Mr. Swig called upon Dr. Henry R. Stedman by appointment, at his office, 48 Beacon Street, at 11.30 A.M. Later in the same day he gave me the following account of his interview:

Dr. Stedman was very cordial to me and said that they had got to "do" that Briggs and prevent his going on the Board of Insanity. I then told him that he must have done a great deal of work. He answered, "I have not done anything compared with Dr. Channing — he has done the real work," and added that there was a man who was willing to spend $50,000 to prevent Dr. Briggs from being confirmed, and that he had spent some already. Dr. Stedman said, "You should see Ex-Attorney General Parker and Lieutenant Governor Frothingham, also Dr. Channing, if you want to find out facts about Dr. Briggs." Dr. Stedman further told me that Dr. E. H. Bradford could tell all about the New Hampshire matter, but that he (Dr. Stedman) thought they better be pretty careful how they used that, because Dr. Briggs might be after them and they ought to be careful not to let him get anything on them; and he warned me that I might even be sued by Dr. Briggs for what they were doing. Dr. Stedman said that Dr. Channing and Dr. Shattuck would tell a lot. He further advised me to see J. O. Wardwell, a lobbyist or legislative agent, of Haverhill, whom Dr. Stedman said they had employed to "get" a member of the Governor's Council for them, — Dr. Frothingham, — and also to do other work for them. He then gave me a slip of paper with Mr. Wardwell's name written on it, for me to use if I saw Mr. Wardwell. Dr. Stedman then told me that Dr. Briggs had the power of hypnotizing people; that he had hypnotized some of the Council, and, they thought, Governor Foss. It was the only way they could account for the forces standing by him so. They were sure that he had hypnotized Mr. Holman, the Governor's secretary, as he was a strong advocate of Dr. Briggs. Dr. Stedman said that he was chairman of the Trustees of the Taunton State Hospital, and that Mr. Boynton of the Taunton Hospital was working zealously to defeat Dr. Briggs; that he would arrange for me to see Dr. Channing to make further plans to thwart Dr. Briggs. Dr. Stedman told me that he knew Stearns Cushing, and had talked with him only yesterday, and that Cushing had told him that there was as much chance of Briggs being confirmed as there was of his walking to China. He said he also knew and had talked with Mr. Glidden, another member of the Governor's Council, and that he was "a darling" and was doing great work for them.

C. J. COUNTIE COMPANY
PHARMACISTS AND PRESCRIPTION SPECIALISTS
60 STATE STREET, BOSTON, MASS., U. S. A.
OPEN 7 A.M. TO 6 P M., SUNDAYS AND HOLIDAYS EXCEPTED
PHONES: 2820 AND 25285 FORT HILL

Mr. Wardwell

Haverhill

MEMORANDUM WRITTEN BY DR. HENRY R. STEDMAN

See page 166

Mr. Swig, continuing, said he had been with Dr. Stedman from 11.30 until after 1 P.M. At 3 P.M. the same afternoon he dictated the above statement at my house in Milton.

On the evening of December 16, 1912, Mr. Swig called up Dr. John W. Bartol from my house and Mrs. Briggs and I listened on an extension telephone set. Mr. Swig told him of the meeting of my medical opponents to be held on Wednesday the 18th, at Dr. Stedman's office, and *Dr. Bartol answered "I shall be very glad to attend a meeting which shall be held for the purpose of organizing some plan against Dr. Briggs' confirmation. I certainly do think Dr. Briggs an undesirable man." He further stated that he knew about Dr. Bradford's and Dr. Hugh Cabot's interest in the matter, and he said that he, Dr. Bartol, would be present at 11.30 in the morning at Dr. Stedman's office, but would first communicate with Dr. Stedman.*

The next day, December 17, 1912, I spent part of the morning at Mr. Swig's office, and listened in while he talked to the members of the medical coterie. *Calling Dr. Stedman, Mr. Swig asked him if Dr. Bartol was against Dr. Briggs, and he answered, "Thunder, yes! You bet he is, and so is another member of his family, Dr. Hugh Cabot."* (I wrote out the statements as they came over the telephone.) Mr. Swig then called up Dr. E. H. Bradford, who made an appointment to see him the following day, December 18, at 10.30 A.M., Dr. Bradford saying he would talk about Dr. Briggs, and would give Mr. Swig whatever information he could.

Mr. Swig then called up Dr. Walter Channing, who immediately informed him that he, Dr. Channing, had

already tried to get Mr. Swig by telephone in regard to preventing Dr. Briggs' confirmation. Dr. Channing appeared to be very anxious to talk with him, and offered to come to Mr. Swig's office to discuss the matter. Mr. Swig then suggested that it would be better for Dr. Channing to tell him what he had to say the next day at the meeting at Dr. Stedman's. Dr. Channing said he would be there; that Dr. Briggs must not get on the Board. Mr. Swig told him that Governor Foss had promised not to put any name before the Council on Wednesday. Dr. Channing answered, "Ha, ha! Promised, has he? But what is he going to do?" Mr. Swig convinced him that the Governor was not going to put Dr. Briggs' name in on Wednesday, and Dr. Channing expressed great relief, and said that this would give them a chance to work.

Mr. Swig then called up Dr. Stedman, for the third time during my visit to his office. I listened in and took notes each time. Dr. Stedman told Mr. Swig that the next meeting had been arranged for 4.30 P.M. the next day at his (Dr. Stedman's) office, and he said:

"*Drs. Channing, Gay, Blake, Knapp, Howard, Bartol and others are going to be there — in fact, so many that I have taken a larger room to get them all in.*"

He said that they had got some men after Councillor Denny at Worcester; that Councillor Frothingham was an uncertain man, but they thought Wardwell would get him. They were going to have a grand meeting. Mr. Swig asked if Dr. Stedman thought they would like him to be there among so many physicians, and Dr. Stedman answered, "*Yes, we will receive you with open arms. You are just the man we want. You are doing yeoman service.*" Dr. Stedman did not

seem anxious to have Dr. Bradford present. While he had room for all the other doctors and for Mr. Swig, he said he doubted whether he had room for Dr. Bradford — there would be so many others.

On Wednesday, December 18, 1912, Mr. Swig called by appointment to see Dr. Bradford, and the account of his visit, which he gave me immediately afterwards, follows:

Dr. Bradford began by telling him that he was Dean of the Harvard Medical School and Trustee of the School for Crippled Children, on which Board he said was a man named Sullivan, who was opposed to me. Dr. Bradford said that I must not know that he was working against me, for, as Dean of the Harvard Medical School, he must be careful — it might reflect upon the school if he came out in the open against me. From my notes made at that time from Mr. Swig's dictation, I quote the following:

He (Dr. Bradford), said he knew nothing against Dr. Briggs, but would come out against him and cause his defeat if possible. Dr. Bradford said that while talking about hiring a house in New Hampshire, a lady in his office said, "You do not want a house near Dr. Briggs," and made some disparaging remarks about him. "She was not a patient but a friend of my family, and referred me to her husband," said Dr. Bradford. Dr. Bradford said he then called up her husband on the telephone, who corroborated the statement she had made to him — that Dr. Briggs had been living in New Hampshire in a most immoral manner. Again Dr. Bradford said, "I do not want to come out, as Dean of the Harvard Medical School about these things, but if you want to send any one to me who is interested, or any of the Councillors, I will give them information." He further said that if Dr. Briggs was put on the State Board there were some good superintendents whom Dr. Briggs would immediately put out; that Dr. Stedman had received a letter from Dr. Shattuck against Dr. Briggs. He wound up his conversation by saying, "*You can see how his own cousin, Dr. Hugh Cabot, and his brother-in-law, Dr. Bartol, are against him.* He is no good morally and no good as a professional man."

On the afternoon of that same day, Wednesday, December 18, 1912, at 4.30 P.M., Simon Swig attended

a meeting at the office of Dr. Henry R. Stedman, 48 Beacon Street, Dr. Stedman and Dr. Channing both inviting him. There were present, beside Mr. Swig, Drs. Walter Channing, Henry R. Stedman, George W. Gay, John B. Blake, Philip Coombs Knapp, Herbert B. Howard and one other, whom Mr. Swig did not know. I again give an account of the meeting, as dictated by Mr. Swig about an hour after it was held:

The purpose of the meeting was stated to be to make plans to defeat Dr. Briggs' confirmation for the State Board of Insanity. Dr. John B. Blake was one of the first to speak. He said that Dr. Briggs was a horse thief, a blackguard, a contemptible scoundrel, and [used] other epithets, to which Drs. Channing, Stedman and Knapp said "Amen." Dr. Howard then related a conversation he had with Dr. Briggs, and said he had a stenographer present, who took down most of what Dr. Briggs said and all that Dr. Howard said. Dr. Howard further said that he would get out of the way if the Governor would appoint any one but Dr. Briggs; that the Brigham Hospital Trustees had voted to allow him to hold a position on the State Board, which vote was going to be presented to the Governor. Dr. Channing next spoke, and said that Dr. Briggs was with him one year and that was enough, that he was unfit medically, professionally and morally to hold a position on the State Board, and he would give $50,000 personally, if only to stop Dr. Briggs from getting his confirmation."[1] Then followed a conversation between Drs. Channing and Stedman, who talked freely regarding the detective they had employed, and Dr. Stedman said the people in New Hampshire were "Yankees and fools;" that they knew about Dr. Briggs but would not talk. From their conversation, it seems that Dr. Hugh Cabot telephoned Dr. Stedman in the afternoon the last time that Dr. Briggs went to Hancock, and Drs. Stedman and Channing arranged for a detective to follow him. Dr. Stedman then told Mr. Swig that if he could keep track of when Dr. Briggs was going to New Hampshire, they would send a detective. Dr. Knapp then related the fact of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology passing resolutions against Dr. Briggs' confirmation, and stated that he would mail a copy to Mr. Swig. After further discussion and talk by different members of the self-appointed committee, sub-committees were agreed upon as follows:

Dr. Howard was to look after Councillor Keith and to see President Mellen and Superintendent Byrnes of the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad, to induce them to use their influence with Keith, from whom they bought cars for the railroad.

---

[1] It is because of such statements by Dr. Channing that I feel it necessary to publish in this volume some of Dr. Channing's personal letters to me. (L. V. B.)

Dr. Channing was to see Herbert Parker, whom they were employing, and get him to see Captain Denny of the Council.

Dr. Knapp was to see Councillor Frothingham.

Dr. Blake was to write to one of his house officers in Haverhill, to see Councillor Frothingham and also to look after Walsh, and to get Dr. Sam. Woodward of Worcester to see Councillors Walsh and Denny.

Dr. Stedman was to see Councillor Simpson.

Dr. Gay and Dr. Bartol were to look after Goetting.

The meeting adjourned subject to call.

Dr. Stedman called up Simon Swig the morning of December 23, 1912, and told him that he had Wardwell working on Frothingham and Denny; that they must be careful, for if it got out that he (Stedman) and other doctors were working against Briggs, it would, he said, "react on us and be a boomerang." At 8 P.M. of the same day Mr. Swig called Dr. Stedman up and told him what Dr. Blake had said to him, and Stedman agreed to this, and when they spoke of the New Hampshire matter, Stedman said, "The New Hampshire matter is a ticklish affair and liable to be a boomerang. We must all be careful about it."

CHAPTER IX

Action of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology. — More Meetings of the Cabal at Dr. Stedman's Office. — Dr. Stedman proposes to use the Massachusetts Mental Hygiene Society to help discredit Dr. Briggs

The next move was made by Dr. Knapp in his official capacity as secretary of the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology.

The Charlesgate, Beacon Street,
Boston, 20 December, 1912.

My Dear Mr. Swig: — I enclose a copy of the resolutions passed unanimously by the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology at its meeting on November 21.

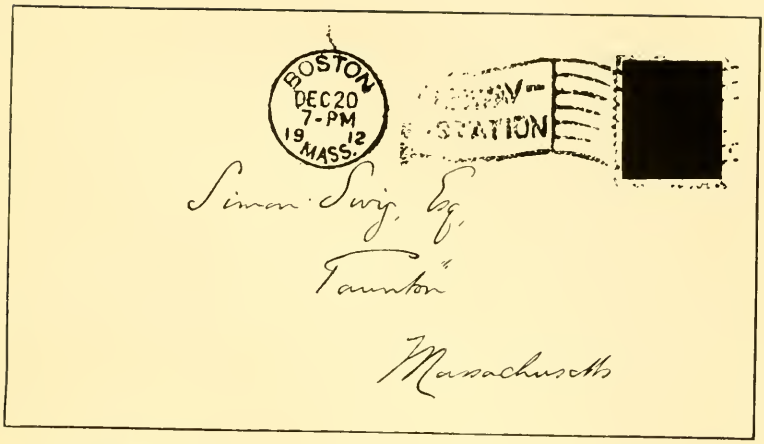
The Society, which has been in existence over thirty years, has a membership of about seventy, including all the leading specialists in nervous and mental diseases in Massachusetts representing all the large general hospitals and all the State hospitals for the insane, except the homeopathic hospital at Westborough. As a matter of fact, I know that the homeopathic specialists are also very strongly opposed to Dr. Briggs and have taken action against his nomination.

Yours very truly,

Philip Coombs Knapp.

A copy of the vote was enclosed. (It is interesting to note that its wording is almost exactly the same as that used in a letter already quoted, written in October, 1911, by Dr. Knapp to Lieutenant Governor Frothingham.) The vote, in Dr. Knapp's handwriting, read as follows:

The Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology wish to protest against the confirmation of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity, regarding him as unfit for the position on account of his sensational criticisms of the State institutions without foundation in fact, his efforts to promote unnecessary, impractical and ill-advised legislation, and his lack of judgment, experience and professional standing as an alienist. The Society therefore urges the Honorable Council to reject his nomination.



THE CHARLESGATE
BEACON STREET

Boston, 20 December, 1912

My dear Mr Swift,

I enclose a copy of the resolutions passed unanimously by the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology at its meeting on November 21

The Society, which has been in existence over thirty years has a membership of about seventy, including all the leading specialists in nervous and mental diseases in Massachusetts, representing all the large general hospitals and all the state hospitals for the insane, except the homoeopathic hospital at West Brookfield. As a matter of fact I know that the homoeopathic specialists are also very strongly opposed to Dr Briggs and have taken action against his nomination

Yours very truly,

Philip Coombs Knapp

On December 24, 1912, I visited Mr. Swig at his office. He called up some of the doctors while I listened in and took notes from the conversations. Mr. Swig talked about the meeting held the previous week, and spoke of the prominent men who were there. Dr. Blake, whom he called up first, answered:

"*You are getting among the swells and talking to the biggest men in the country. Don't you forget it! You are a bully boy! Don't you forget it, and we won't. We all feel grateful to you. We will lick Briggs, damn him! And we will lick him every time. I have got my back up and I will fight until I die. We will bury him so he will be beyond resurrection.*" (See pages 185, 257.) He then laughed heartily, and Mr. Swig shut off.

Mr. Swig then called Dr. Bradford, who said: "*I am glad to hear from you!*" Mr. Swig said he had learned the Governor was not going to appoint Briggs this year, anyway. Dr. Bradford evidently did not realize that there were only six more days in the year, for he answered, "*Good for you! You have done us good service.*" Continuing, Dr. Bradford said, "*Stedman has a letter he received from the woman's husband I told you about.*" (I was later told this referred to Dr. Bartol, whose wife and her cousin Lilla Cabot Perry and her husband had first been responsible for spreading the New Hampshire libel.) "*I sent the letter to Stedman. It contains the addresses of people in New Hampshire to be interviewed who will give information about Dr. Briggs.*" Some other conversation took place, much of it repetition of former interviews. In closing, Dr. Bradford said to Mr. Swig, "*I hope you will let me send an automobile some day, and take you up to the Medical School. I would like to show you*

about the Medical School, and later you must go to the club to dinner with me." (See page 240.)

I saw Mr. Swig again on December 27, 1912. I dropped into his office that morning, just as Dr. Stedman called him up on the telephone, and, as usual, I listened in. Dr. Stedman asked how things stood regarding the Briggs matter, and said:

> We have a man we would like to have in Dr. Howard's place, if it is absolutely decided that Dr. Howard cannot secure a reappointment. The man we refer to is superintendent of a leading hospital of the State; he is prominent in court cases, has been president of a national society, and has but one year more to serve as superintendent, when he will be sixty-three, and under the rules of the institution over which he is superintendent he will have to retire. And if it meant taking him away now to secure him, public-spirited men might take care of his salary.

(I made this note at the time: "Sounds very much like Dr. George Tuttle of Waverley.")

Mr. Swig then started to say that he was talking with — when Dr. Stedman interrupted him with the names of Channing, Blake, Gay and Bradford. "Yes," said Mr. Swig, "*Dr. Bradford said that he had sent you a letter containing the names of places for the detectives you are employing to look up in New Hampshire.*" Dr. Stedman said, "*Yes, I have received such a letter, but the name of the writer of the letter has been crossed out so I could not read it.*" Dr. Stedman then requested Mr. Swig to ascertain if it was possible to get Dr. Howard reappointed, and to find out if the Governor was positively against it, for if he was, they would try to get the man to whom they had referred appointed, or look up some other men.

In the afternoon of the same day I again called at Mr. Swig's office and he got Dr. Stedman on the telephone and told him that he had communicated with Governor Foss and that they might as well give

The Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology wish to protest against the confirmation of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as member of the State Board of Insanity, regarding him as unfit for the position on account of his sensational criticism of the state institutions without foundation in fact, his efforts to promote unnecessary impractical and ill-advised legislation, and his lack of judgement, experience and professional standing as an alienist. The Society therefore urges the Honourable Council to reject his nomination.

Copy of Vote in Dr. Knapp's Handwriting which he sent to Mr. Swig December 20, 1912

See page 172

up all idea of Dr. Howard's reappointment; that Governor Foss said he would not reappoint him if he was threatened with all the State and national troops; that he was going to put Briggs in a position of trust, even if he did not get him on the State Board. Stedman answered:

"We may as well take our medicine. We cannot do anything further about that. I think you had better get some affidavits, if you can. *You must get something in black and white against Briggs, in case he bobs up anywhere else. I do not know that I told you before that Dr. Fred Shattuck and a number of us chipped in and got a young lawyer to go to New Hampshire, but we could not get any foundation in fact for the stories we heard.* There is no one there who dares to speak against him. What we want is a man who will talk, and who would not be ruled by fear or favor."

On December 30, 1912, after Mr. Swig attended another meeting at Dr. Stedman's, and it came out that Dr. Tuttle *was* the man Dr. Stedman referred to, I decided to have Mr. Swig ask Dr. Channing about Dr. Tuttle, who had been discussed while Mr. Swig was at the meeting, Mr. Swig called Dr. Channing at 6 P.M. and I listened in. Mr. Swig said, "Do you personally approve of Tuttle? I noticed only one man at the meeting to-day spoke of him very enthusiastically. Do you think he would be as good as Dr. Howard?" Dr. Channing answered, "Yes, he would be as good a man as Howard — an extremely good man. He would be so regarded, I think, by the Governor himself, who recognizes him as an expert. The Governor selected him in the case of the minister, Richeson; then he was one of the men on the committee for the revision of the insanity laws. Dr. Howard

is a plain, simple man — no nonsense. *At first Howard did not consider the position seriously, but when an effort was made to put some one else in, Howard did not want Briggs to have it, and that is why he went in for it himself.*" After further conversation along the same lines, during which I wrote most of the questions for Mr. Swig to ask, as I usually did in these interviews, *Dr. Channing told Mr. Swig that they owed a great deal to him,* and that he would like to see him and talk to him very soon.

To show the cordial relations existing at this time between Dr. Channing and Simon Swig, I give a copy of one of Dr. Channing's letters to Mr. Swig:

WALTER CHANNING, M.D.
COR. BOYLSTON STREET AND CHESTNUT HILL AVENUE
BROOKLINE, MASS., January 9, 1913.

SIMON SWIG, Esq., *618 Barristers Hall, Pemberton Square, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR MR. SWIG: — The trustees of the Massachusetts General Hospital are as follows:

Trustees appointed by the Governor:

Henry S. Howe, Boston.
Henry S. Hunnewell, Wellesley.
David P. Kimball, Boston.
Charles P. Greenough, Boston.

Trustees appointed by the corporation:

Henry P. Walcott, M.D., Boston, *chairman.*
Francis H. Appleton, Boston.
Nathaniel T. Kidder, Boston.
C. H. W. Foster, Needham.
John Lowell, Boston.
George Wigglesworth, Boston.
Moses Williams, Boston.
Francis L. Higginson, Boston.

Yours very truly,
WALTER CHANNING.

P.S. — Enclosed please find letters of introduction to some of the Trustees.

At 12 o'clock on December 31, 1912, Mr. Swig was called on the telephone and told that a meeting was being held at 48 Beacon Street, and that his presence was desired. He attended this meeting, and immediately afterwards dictated what took place there. He said:

I found Drs. Stedman, Channing, Howard, Blake, Gay and Knapp there. They were enthusiastic about the rumored withdrawal of Dr. Briggs, and said they must celebrate with a banquet. Stedman said, "*I think we can get twenty to come to the banquet to celebrate Dr. Briggs's downfall.*" Mr. Swig asked if he should contribute to the expense, and he was told not by any means — that they would bear the expense. They then discussed the councillors, and claimed to be sure of Councillors Guy Ham, Denny, Simpson, Goetting and McGregor. *Dr. Channing said, "We will have another Thanksgiving Day, and we will see that Mr. Swig is invited every year after this to our Thanksgiving for doing away with Dr. Briggs."* They discussed Dr. Tuttle as a successor to Dr. Howard, but did not know how to put it up to the Governor. Dr. Stedman said that the Governor would not appoint any one that they sanctioned as a body — that he was suspicious of them. Then some one said, "Yes, he did appoint Walcott." It was then decided to get a politician like Lomasney to send the name of Dr. Tuttle to Governor Foss. Dr. Blake said, "Don't let Lomasney know that I am in it, for he hates me worse than the Devil hates Holy Water. He thinks I am associating with highbrows and past his level." Dr. Gay reported that he had seen two men in Worcester who had seen Councillor Denny and said that he was all right. Dr. Blake said to Dr. Howard, "Can you not get O'Meara to come out and say he is not an expert so we can get Governor Foss to appoint another alienist on the Board?" Howard answered that he had never spoken to Dr. O'Meara on that subject. Mr. Swig then discussed the Consumptives' Hospital Board, of which he was a member, and when asked who was going to be appointed on his Board, Mr. Swig answered, "Probably either Dr. Locke or Dr. Bailey." Immediately Stedman said, "No, not Dr. Locke." Channing asked why not. Dr. Stedman answered, "Foss does not appoint any one on insane matters without consulting Dr. Briggs. He has just appointed Locke to examine Davie. Don't you see the connection? We don't want Locke, for he must be a friend of Dr. Briggs."

About this time a Massachusetts Mental Hygiene Society was proposed, and I received the following letter on the last day of 1912:

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
STATE BOARD OF INSANITY

STATE HOUSE, BOSTON, December 30, 1912.

L. VERNON BRIGGS, M.D., *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I have personally for a long time been interested in preventive measures relating to the insane and allied conditions, and during the past several months have been talking up the subject of a society for mental hygiene, and find there is manifested a very great interest in the subject and that all believe that such a society should be formed. Some time ago I sent out numerous circulars, and almost without exception those written to believed that a society could do a great amount of good.

Since receiving these letters I have had a number of conferences with those interested, and one formal meeting to discuss the subject has been held.

It seems to me imperative that such a society be formed only after careful consideration of the subject, but, more important than anything else, that the permanency of the organization be assured.

I have invited a number to meet at this office on Thursday, January 2, at 3.30 P.M., to consider the formation of this society, and if possible arrange for its organization.

This is a very important subject. The society is bound to become an important factor in the community, working with existing organizations, but in a field not now covered by any, and I would be pleased to have you come to this meeting and assist in its organization.

Very truly yours,

CHARLES E. THOMPSON,
Executive Officer.

It is interesting to note what the medical coterie were planning to do with me when they proposed to make me a member of the Mental Hygiene Society. As the following interview and my reply to Dr. Thompson's letter will show, I was cognizant of their plans, and they were consequently not very successful.

On January 2, 1913, I visited Mr. Swig's office and listened in to a conversation on the telephone. I called in the morning, at a time when Dr. Stedman was likely to telephone Simon Swig, as he did every morning about the same time. Dr. Stedman did call him up, and immediately said, according to my notes taken at the time:

I have laid awake half the night and have thought out a great scheme. This Dr. Briggs — you cannot tell anything about him. A physician told me yesterday and again to-day that the Governor is still a great friend of Dr. Briggs. I have thought out a scheme of getting Dr. Briggs in a society — a mental hygiene society — with such men as Grafton Cushing, Sullivan of the Finance Commission, A. Shuman and other great men of the State, then having those men, who are members of the same society as Dr. Briggs, endorse Howard, and have it read in the papers that this society is endorsing Howard or Tuttle. We want to show the public that, although Briggs is a member, not a vote could he get from this society.

Later in the day Dr. Stedman again called up Mr. Swig, telling him that he and others had arranged some days earlier to have a letter written inviting Dr. Briggs to become a member of the Mental Hygiene Society, and that at the next meeting they were going to put him in as a director, and at the following meeting they were going to have the Society take action for the unanimous endorsement of Tuttle for the State Board of Insanity — that this would be the first action of the Society. "It would mean," said Dr. Stedman, "that Dr. Briggs would have to come in with us, or else, if he stood out, he would be the only one, and it would look bad for him." Dr. Stedman continued, "Dr. Briggs is a very resourceful man and may turn up again in some way, but if he does come up again for the State Board of Insanity, the Society will not endorse him, and will probably pass some resolution that they do not consider him fit for the office. So, if we get him into this Society, and then pass such resolutions, it will be pretty strong with the Governor and Council to have his own Society pass resolutions considering him unfit."

I attended the meeting to which I was invited, and on the following day, having in mind Dr. Stedman's conversations which I heard over the telephone, I addressed this letter to Dr. Thompson:

64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.
January 3, 1913.

Dr. Charles E. Thompson, *Executive Officer of the State Board of Insanity, Room 36, State House, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Dr. Thompson: — When I received your letter asking me to come to assist in the organization of the Mental Hygiene Society of Massachusetts, I had, of course, no idea that you had already organized, and that there was nothing to do but a matter of approval of by-laws and directors, else I should not have considered it important for me to be there.

To speak frankly, I do not like the by-laws. I feel that the Society is beginning at the wrong end, and it would be much better if it defined its objects and kept them within certain bounds which it can later broaden, as the work develops, than to cover almost everything under the sun, which Article II now allows the Society to do.

I believe that if there are certain physicians who wish to go into politics and to lobby, they should form an association of their own, which would enable them as a body if they wish more backing than individuals, to do what they choose in politics; but as I said yesterday, I do not believe that a mental hygiene society ought to be brought into politics. Why I speak in this way is because the handful of men who are actively forming this society are the same men who belong to the Society of Psychiatry and Neurology, which has become, in my opinion, a political body, dominating the appointments, institutions and policy for the insane of the State.

In a talk with Dr. Stedman and Dr. Knapp, after I had left the meeting, I found that they had no idea of accepting my suggestion, made on the floor, to the end that a mental hygiene society should declare itself free from the making of appointments, endorsements and recommendations to the Governor, as all appointments by the Governor and Council are under the head of political appointments. They maintain that the society should have the right and privilege of going into these matters.

I can see breakers ahead, and some of the appointments of the Board of Directors were so evidently for use politically later, that it is almost an acknowledgment that the society is going into politics.

On many accounts it would seem desirable to have a society organized outside of, or headed by officers outside of, the ranks of institutional men. The State Board of Insanity and each hospital organization is in a way a mental hygiene society or organization, and they are bound to be an integral part of any mental hygiene society of the State; and my feeling is that one of the most important functions of any mental hygiene society should be to create interest beyond the reach and scope of the present organizations, or, as it has been suggested, to open up a field not now covered by any existing organizations.

You are, of course, familiar with the present Mental Hygiene Societies and the allied societies here and abroad, beginning in the East, in Germany, with the Bureau of Discharged Lunatics, headed by Moeli, Chief of the Hertzberg Asylum, and ending in the West, in California, with the Psychopathic Parole Society. It seems that with all these societies, with their by-laws and

their work, this Society would not have to begin in such a primitive manner as the constitution and by-laws indicate. It seems like a confession on the part of the Society that they do not know what they are going to do or how they are going to do it, which at this late stage of mental hygiene work ought not to be acknowledged. It looks as if the Society had hurried its organization for some purpose, before they had given it careful thought and full discussion at several meetings, which would naturally be necessary for the organization of such important work as this should be.

I know you wanted a free discussion of this Society, else you would not have asked me to come to the meeting. As there was no opportunity yesterday for free discussion of an organization which had already been formed and the officers selected, I take this opportunity of offering my criticism at this late day, hoping that it may be of some help; and if later the suggestions can, in any way, be carried out, it may prevent discord and unpleasantness in a body of prominent people who stand before the public as working solely as a mental hygiene society and not as an organization that is going to take upon itself to pass upon the qualifications or disqualifications of the Governor's appointees or other appointments within the province of other people outside of the Mental Hygiene Society. Let the Society keep to the appointment of its own officers and committees, and not presume to run the affairs of the State. It will have more work on its hands looking after its own duties than it can well take care of without ever interfering, as a society, or demanding to dominate or control appointments.

A mental hygiene society with trained workers should be a large factor (1) in preventing the commitment of early cases by directing early medical treatment and improving social conditions, (2) in preventing other members of the patient's family or locality from similar breakdowns, and (3) in preventing the return to the hospitals for the insane of many discharged cases.

I should like to make just one more plea that something be added to the constitution or by-laws which, while it does not prevent the individual members' free action along the above lines, will prevent the Society from taking up these questions, to the detriment of the work which they are pledging to do. I am sure that something can be inserted that will cover the above.

Sincerely yours,

L. Vernon Briggs.

I have no record of any answer to this letter, but the following was received in reply to another letter on the same general subject:

The Commonwealth of Massachusetts
State Board of Insanity

State House, Boston, January 15, 1913.

L. Vernon Briggs, M.D., *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Doctor: — I received your letter this morning, enclosing suggestions for Directors of the Mental Hygiene Society. These names, at least those of

them that I know personally, are good suggestions, and I will submit them at the next meeting of the Executive Committee, which will be in two weeks.

I fully agree with you that this Society will do its best work not being tied up too tightly to our existing institutions. I rather feel, however, as I believe Mr. Beers has felt, that we must look to our alienists for assistance in furthering the work of this Society. It should be, to my mind, however, a society of the community, supported by it and largely directed by it.

In watching the Connecticut Society, it seems to me that Mr. Beers, and, in fact, I think he told me so himself, first believed that such a society could be operated without any assistance whatever from alienists, who might or might not be connected with existing institutions, but as he developed the work, he found, and now feels quite strongly, that a society of this kind, to be successful, should have the co-operation of our alienists. As I have stated above, however, I do not feel that it should be made another State department.

Sincerely,

CHARLES E. THOMPSON,
Executive Officer.

I wrote to him in reply on the following day, saying:

I agree with you that both alienists and some hospital men should be in some way connected with our Society. I did not mean that they should not be connected. I meant that the Society should be known as creating interest and support from outside the present institutions, rather than be dominated by the present institutions and alienists. We certainly need the help of alienists and institutional men.

Returning to Mr. Swig's interviews in regard to my appointment to the State Board of Insanity.

On January 3, 1913, Mr. Swig called at my house, 64 Beacon Street, and *told me that Dr. Bartol was still doing all he could to discredit me, and that while he might seem friendly to my face (as he did), he was "stabbing me in the back."* Mr. Swig, *to prove his statement,* said he *would* again *call Dr. Bartol* upon my own telephone, and that he and I would listen at one receiver, while another member of my family listened at the receiver on an extension set downstairs. This was arranged. Mr. Swig called and asked if he was speaking to Dr. John W. Bartol, and was answered by a

voice, familiar to me as that of my wife's brother-in-law, who said, "*This is Dr. Bartol.*" Mr. Swig then told him that he was surprised not to see Dr. Bartol at the last meeting of the committee, after he, Dr. Bartol, had said to Mr. Swig that he was going to be there. *Dr. Bartol answered, "There is a peculiar reason why I cannot go. I have a relationship with the person in question.*" (I was writing down each question and answer as made.) Mr. Swig asked him if he knew Dr. Turtle, whom they thought of endorsing. Dr. Bartol said he did not. I wrote out the name "Tuttle," and held it before Mr. Swig, who corrected the name. Dr. Bartol then answered, "Oh, Tuttle — he's a good man." *Mr. Swig said, "Dr. Howard doesn't care who gets it, so long as Dr. Briggs doesn't." Dr. Bartol answered, "I think that is the way every one feels. I do not think any one would consider Briggs' holding any public position.*" When asked if the opposition to Dr. Briggs was general, *Dr. Bartol answered, "I think the opposition is very great.*" Mr. Swig then *asked Dr. Bartol if he knew that the Society of Neurology had passed resolutions condemning Dr. Briggs. Dr. Bartol answered, "Yes, yes, yes," and added, "it won't do for me to speak too plainly, but I do not consider him a man for public office.*" Mr. Swig then said, "I understand that he is out of it at present." *Dr. Bartol answered, "It is a comfort to hear that. I was afraid he was still in it.*" Mr. Swig said, "Dr. Bradford tells me that even Dr. Briggs' father-in-law is against him." Dr. Bartol answered, "He doesn't seem to have many friends, does he?" (See page 246.)

On January 4 I called again at the usual hour at Mr. Swig's office, and soon afterwards Dr. Stedman

called Mr. Swig on the telephone to tell him of a proposed meeting of the Mental Hygiene Society on the following Monday, when he said he thought they would endorse Dr. Tuttle for the State Board of Insanity.

On the morning of January 6 Dr. Stedman did not call Mr. Swig until 11.15. I was at Mr. Swig's office waiting at the time for the expected call, and listened on an extension receiver to the conversation, much of which was a repetition of what I had overheard before. Speaking of the expenses incurred by the cabal against me, Dr. Stedman said that he doubted if he could get the committee to contribute again. He added, "We all chipped in before and it cost me considerable money. It cost me $50 or more for Howard's petition alone, and then I had to pay for other things — my share. We sent a young man up there (Hancock, N. H.) and *you know he could not find a thing against Briggs. I think we had better not go too far in that direction.* I do not think I could get the others to chip in, now that he is out of it." Mr. Swig then asked, "Do you not think Shattuck would help bear the expense?" Dr. Stedman answered that he doubted if they would put out any more money, now the thing was over.

After this conversation with Dr. Stedman was ended, Mr. Swig was anxious that I should call up Dr. Blake who had been so strong in his statements against me at the meetings, that he might listen in and hear what Dr. Blake would say to me. I did so, and asked Dr. Blake what he had against me — why he felt as he did about me. Dr. Blake told me that he had nothing personally against me whatsoever — that he only wanted Howard retained if possible. I then said that I understood that certain physicians

went to the Council to argue against my appointment. Dr. Blake answered, "But we went before the Council to argue for Dr. Howard. I went, Dr. Fred Shattuck went and there were others. But I was very particular not to say anything against you. I have never said anything against you personally, for there is nothing between us but friendliness — outside the matter of public office, which I naturally want Howard to have." (See page 173.)

Mr. Swig called Dr. Stedman again the same day and arranged to take up the nomination of Howard rather than Tuttle, and he also told Dr. Stedman that he thought Dr. Briggs might be going to Hancock, N. H., before very long. Dr. Stedman replied, "We have got to be very careful about that and anything we say about Briggs now. *We had a talk with our attorney, Herbert Parker. He says that when we had meetings and contributed money we had a right to do so as long as Briggs was seeking a public office. Now, as he is not a candidate and is down and out, he can show it was done with malice if we do anything now — that we are his enemies conspiring against him.* You see we are looking after you as well — protecting you. *If Dr. Briggs ever gets on to what we are doing he can make us trouble and we must look after ourselves and you.*" Before Parker's name was mentioned, Dr. Stedman had stated that they had employed the biggest lawyer in the State. Mr. Swig said, "William A. Morse is not the biggest lawyer in the State," whereupon Stedman caught him up at once, saying, "No, but *Herbert Parker is our lawyer.*" (See page 255.) Dr. Stedman said, "Walter Chamberlain, on the Board of Trustees at Taunton, is a great friend of mine, and his term

expires this year. I hope we can make the Governor reappoint him." In speaking of the Hancock matter, Mr. Swig asked for the *names in the letter that Dr. Stedman* had, and the *latter got the letter which Dr. Bradford had sent him*, and read off the following names: "Lewis Hunt, the leading citizen in Hancock; Station master; Mrs. Eaton, wife of former innkeeper." But Dr. Stedman said at this point, "It is useless, I think, to do anything about the Hancock matter. *The young man we sent did not find out a thing.*" I was present and heard all of this conversation over the telephone. (See page 240.)

My good friend Dr. Joel E. Goldthwait wrote me on January 6, 1913, a letter on various matters, concluding:

> As to your own affairs, just remember that I shall be very glad to meet with you whenever it is convenient, as I am fully convinced that you have been most unjustly attacked, and shall be glad to do anything that I can to help you.

On January 8, at 11.45 A.M., I was in the office of Henry D. Tudor, when I had Mr. Swig, who was also there, call up Dr. Stedman, with Mr. Tudor and myself listening on the double telephone, so that I might add another witness to what Dr. Stedman had to say. He asked Dr. Stedman if Fred Shattuck and his other friends would chip in and send a detective up to New Hampshire if Dr. Briggs went up. Dr. Stedman said, "Now that Dr. Briggs is out, I hardly think my friends would chip in." He then continued to talk about Dr. Briggs in a disparaging way, and when Mr. Swig referred to the names he had heard Dr. Blake call Dr. Briggs, Dr. Stedman said, "Yes, you even heard him called a horse thief." He spoke of Howard's

qualifications and said that Howard would not have taken the position he had taken in working for reappointment on the State Board if it had been anybody but Briggs who was trying for it — that when Briggs' name came up he decided to run for it just to defeat him. He said he thought that when Briggs was out of the field Dr. Howard would drop out also.

On the afternoon of the same day, when I returned to my house at 64 Beacon Street at 3 o'clock, I was told that Dr. Blake had called in my absence. I went to the telephone and called him up and started to tell him who I was, but Dr. Blake interrupted: "You don't need to tell me who this is. I know it is Dr. Briggs by his sweet voice — I should know his sweet voice anywhere. If you are going to be at home I will come right down." (See page 173.) I answered that I was going by his house, and would be glad to drop in about 4 o'clock. This I did, and was received very cordially by Dr. Blake, who spent half an hour telling me of incidents in his past life, of his service in the hospitals and in the Civil War. Then followed a conversation in substance as follows:

He said, "Oh, Dr. Briggs, you have an appointment, have you not, as Commissioner for Massachusetts — representing the State on the National Commission on the Alien Insane?" I answered, "Yes, I have." Dr. Blake said, "Well, this is a very honorable position. How long have you had it? I understand you have had it for some time?" I answered, "Yes, since last July." Dr. Blake said, "Now, Dr. Briggs, having that appointment, you probably won't care for another. Won't you, like a good fellow, join us and endorse Dr. Howard? You have a lot of influence with

Governor Foss, and you could undoubtedly get him to put Howard over — or, if he did not want to do that, perhaps you could persuade him to let the thing run along the rest of the year. This is his last year as Governor, and if he will let the thing run along this year, then Howard could remain in office and everybody be happy." I told him he rather overestimated my influence with Governor Foss. "But," said Dr. Blake, "You are trying to secure that position, are you not — with your influence?" I answered, "Certainly not," saying that Governor Foss had asked me to accept the position. I then told him the details of the two appointments by Governor Foss, of the Hawes episode, of the fact that I had been telephoned to from New Hampshire in regard to the young man who had been visiting Hancock asking questions that were an injury to myself and to others, and I said that Dr. Howard was working for reappointment because I was appointed, and for that reason only. I told him of my interview with Dr. Howard, when I had gone frankly and with honest purpose, at the Governor's suggestion, to ask him if there would be any ill feeling if I again allowed my name to be used, and he had replied that there would be none, while all the time, as he later stated to Dr. Bowditch, he had a stenographer sitting behind me taking notes surreptitiously, evidently hoping I might say something that could be used against me. During my statement of these facts, Dr. Blake appeared much excited, his face turning crimson at times, and he interrupted me frequently to assert and reassert his friendship for me. Before I left he also suggested the possibility of an appointment as superintendent of a hospital for me — or a trustee-

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
EXECUTIVE CHAMBER
STATE HOUSE, BOSTON.

July 22, 1912.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs,

64 Beacon St., Boston.

My dear Doctor Briggs:

In accordance with our recent conversation, it gives me very great pleasure to appoint you a commissioner to represent this Commonwealth in an investigation of the admission, care, maintenance and deportation of the alien insane in this country,- co-operating with the New York Commissioner and others who may be appointed from the several States in an endeavor to formulate and secure Federal laws which will adequately meet the present situation.

Yours very truly,

Eugene N. Foss

Governor of Massachusetts.

ship in a State Hospital, to which I replied that such appointments were always open to me. He reiterated several times that he had not said anything against me at any time and that when he had appeared with Fred. Shattuck and Dr. Gay before the Council it was for the purpose of urging Dr. Howard's reappointment only; and he said that when one of the councillors had asked him about me he had said that he had nothing to say about Dr. Briggs, as he was not there for that purpose.

I learned that same day that Dr. Hugh Cabot had written a letter to James J. Storrow, telling Mr. Storrow untruths about me, and urging him to see Councillor Guy Ham; and that Dr. Stedman had sent for Simon Swig and had read him a long letter which he had written to Mr. Storrow, in which he had told Mr. Storrow that Dr. Briggs was unreliable; that all the physicians were against him; that members of the various Boards would resign if he were appointed; that he was not responsible; and the gist of the letter was that I was virtually insane.

If we were not understood by our friends, life would be dark, indeed. I had many who stood strongly by me at this time, and many with whom I was in almost daily intercourse. The following letter from Dr. Henry Maudsley was a consolation to me, as showing that friendly sympathy was not confined to this side of the ocean.

12 Queen Street, Mayfair, London,
January 29, 1913.

Dear Dr. Vernon Briggs: — The hospital is safe at last. The plans have been approved and the money voted, so that building will, I hope, commence forthwith. It is expected to take two years at least, so that it is dubious whether I shall see it. Anyhow, it is to be called the Maudsley Hospital,

and I have secured my place among those duly nominated in the Latin hexameter as trying to perpetuate themselves; "*nomina stultorum semper parictibus haerent.*"

Since my wife's death two years ago, I am in solitude, with small interest in things, for nearly every one whom I was interested in or who was interested in me has passed away. That is one of the blessings in much disguise which nature adds to the infirmities of age, concerning which that poseur, Cicero, discoursed so prettily.

> "Which are the worst of woes that wait on age?
> What stamps the wrinkle deeper on the brow?
> To see each loved one blotted from the page,
> To be alone on earth, as I am now."

So wrote Byron, as in Childe Harold, he paraded his bleeding heart throughout Europe, consoling himself afterwards in a way that I, at my age (I enter upon my eightieth year next week), am not likely to imitate.

I condole with you in your struggles, knowing well from personal experience what obstacles and intrigues are to be encountered in doing things of value in this world. The Swedish Chancellor, Okenstirn, when he discovered *quam parva sapienta* the world is governed, might have been more amazed had he had to do with present-day boards, committees, officials, etc.

Believe me,

Sincerely yours,

H. Maudsley.

CHAPTER X

Dr. Briggs appointed on the Staff of the Boston Dispensary, 1900. — Establishes Social Service in the Mental Department. — Election of Dr. Briggs unanimous as President of the Medical Staff of the Boston Dispensary in 1913

It is necessary here to interrupt the narrative of the contest over my appointment to the State Board of Insanity in order to give a brief account of my experience at the Boston Dispensary, as the two matters were apparently related.

I had been connected with the Dispensary since my first appointment on the Medical Staff as physician to the Mental Department in 1900, and later I was chosen a member of the Advisory Committee of five physicians of the Staff composed of over one hundred physicians. Both of these offices I held in 1912.

The history of the Dispensary is well known, but it may be of interest to quote here a few sentences from a copy of the first report of the mental clinic, dated January 1, 1898, the original of which is in my possession. It was prepared by Dr. Channing, who was then head of the Mental Department.

This Department was opened December 2, and 5 females and 3 males applied for treatment during the month.

Of the 5 females, 1 was the subject of hypochondriasis, 1 of myxedema, 1 of incipient melancholia, 1 of acute delusional insanity, and 1 of senile dementia.

Of the males, 1 was the subject of post-traumatic depression, 1 of paralytic insanity, and 1 of retarded mental development.

The report concludes: We believe from our experience thus far that we can be of considerable service in the future, and we earnestly request the co-operation of all the Dispensary physicians. . . .

My appointment to the Dispensary came at about the same time as my first association with Dr. Channing in his sanitorium in Brookline, although my professional relations with him had commenced six years earlier. Soon after my appointment I found that Dr. Channing wished me to conduct his clinics at the Dispensary, also to teach his class from the Tufts Medical School, and this I did. Later I gave postgraduate courses at the clinic on my own account. Dr. Channing, Dr. Arthur C. Jelly and I alternated at the clinic for over two years, when Dr. Channing gradually dropped out, leaving the work for Dr. Jelly and me to do, although he maintained his official connection with the clinic. The last two years of his connection he did not visit the clinic at all, but got either Dr. Jelly or me to write the reports, which he signed, as if he had been active in the work. On June 2, 1903, he wrote me the following letter:

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — Your last letter at hand. I am sorry to have Dr. Jelly leave the Dispensary. Will you arrange at the Dispensary, both with Dr. Otis and the man at the door, to be promptly telephoned to if Dr. Jelly does not turn up about July 1. He may not.

The cases you detailed were very interesting. You have done good work in the clinic already. There is a meeting of the Staff of the Dispensary next Wednesday at 4.30. Why do you not come? I shall be there and have my case record on hand to show.

I am anxious to complete our future arrangements, and we will get together soon for the purpose.

Some day I will go to Hanover with you. Dr. Knowlton is away just now for two weeks until June 14, which leaves me, of course, much alone.

Last Sunday I passed in Albany with Walter.

Yours very truly,

Walter Channing.

The first notification of Dr. Channing's desire to retire from his official connection with the clinic was a telephone message to Dr. Jelly on March 6, 1905, to inquire the name of the superintendent of the Dis-

pensary, as he wished to send his resignation in at once, but he gave no reason for resigning.

Dr. Channing's resignation did not affect either the work or the morale of the Department, which continued steadily to grow under Dr. Jelly and myself and our assistants, who were always graduate physicians wishing postgraduate instruction and experience in mental diseases.

After the death of Dr. Jelly's uncle, Dr. George F. Jelly, Dr. Arthur Jelly succeeded to his practice and his duties, and this made it impossible for him to continue to take an active part in the clinical work. The work continued and I remained on active service, the clinic constantly growing and increasing its scope and becoming more interesting, so that in 1911 we had doubled the time given to this service and increased the number of our assistants.

In a letter written to Dr. Adolf Meyer on July 8, 1911, which I have quoted elsewhere, I said in regard to this work:

> My Dispensary work this winter, carried out along the lines which you suggested, has proved more successful than I really believed it would on the lines we had planned before talking the matter over with you. Mr. Davis and the managers at the Dispensary have been anxious to form some connection between our mental clinic, which had 87 new cases and nearly 500 visits during the first three months of this year, and the out-patient department of the Psychopathic Hospital [of whose Board of Trustees Dr. Channing was chairman], and also some connection with the social service work. I understood through Mr. Davis that Dr. Southard will be pleased to do so, but that Dr. Channing is probably a stumbling block, as usual. I do not know what can be done about Dr. Channing. It seems rather a serious thing for him to take the position he has without explanation to me or any one else. It is a most contemptible position for him to take and would not be tolerated in any other walk of life. I do not know why it should be tolerated now. He has kept this up for quite a number of years, and seems to lose no opportunity to throw his disfavor upon everything I am interested in. Personally I do not care, but I do care for the principles and the people I am working for who are the insane of the State.

During the latter part of my service at the Dispensary I became greatly interested in the development of social service, which was at that time comparatively new in connection with medical work of any kind, and practically unknown as an adjunct to the treatment of mental cases. Having tried out the efficiency of social service for my patients, with the assistance of the general workers in the newly created Social Service Department at the Dispensary, and with a volunteer in my own clinic, I became convinced that a full-time special worker was necessary in such a clinic as mine, not only to get social histories, which are so important in the psychiatric diagnosis, but to follow up the cases and insure their carrying out the treatment prescribed. In order to test out the value of this idea, Mrs. Briggs paid for the services of a special worker in my clinic. I have a number of letters from the Director, Mr. Michael M. Davis, written about this time, from which I quote the following, dated August 10, 1911:

> Since our telephone conversation the other day I have talked with Miss Richards. I am very much interested, indeed, in any plan of follow-up work with cases of mental diseases or organized effort for the improvement of their treatment, and I feel indebted to you for the generous proposal in your letter of July 25.
>
> It seems to me that, as the work is to be done, the opportunity is fairly clear. I have no doubt that there is need to do two things: first, to help as well as a trained social worker can do under the supervision of a competent specialist, numbers of patients who cannot now be adequately followed up and treated; second, a survey of the field could be made which would indicate needs, and the best points of application and methods of organizing to meet the needs. An important class of patients to be reached would be those just discharged from hospitals.

In his letter of August 22, 1911, he says:

> I am very glad that we were able to have a talk yesterday. . . . I am glad that you understand the reasons why it would seem best to begin the case work and a survey of the field in January.

I had at this time strong hopes that we might be able to form a mental hygiene society, and desired by this social work in my clinic to show the need for such an organization. The Massachusetts Society for Mental Hygiene was not formed until the following year, 1912. Mr. Davis continues in the same letter:

> I am sure that the body of cases that are collected during the first few months of the work and the preliminary results of the survey of the field will furnish the foundation for making more or less permanent plans for the work of a mental hygiene committee or society. That is one of the reasons why I believe it would be well to proceed more tentatively in the future, but this is merely a personal impression. The organization of the committee or society should, I am sure, be entirely independent of the Dispensary. That leaves the committee or society free to plan its policy and apportion its work or workers just where it may see fit, as its activities develop in the future. Such a policy does not in any way interfere with the work that is begun at the Dispensary, and what is done here will be to the credit of our institution as well as to that of the mental hygiene committee or society.
>
> As I said, I therefore see not the least reason from the Dispensary standpoint why there should be any delay on your part in approaching individuals whom you would like to interest or to draw into the initial group.[1]

In a letter quoted elsewhere, dated January 16, 1912, Dr. Adolf Meyer wrote me:

> The work you are planning at the Boston Dispensary is, to my mind, extremely important. It really is quite necessary to review seriously the effect of social service in our cases, so that we may know within what limits it has its best sphere, and perhaps also into what direction it had better branch off. For this we need a report of records which allow the reader to judge of all sides of the case.

Much difficulty was encountered in securing the services of a social worker of experience to undertake this pioneer work at the Dispensary and make the proposed survey. We tried, among others, to get Miss Edith Horton, who was then doing most interesting work for the Mental Hygiene Committee of the State

---

[1] See attempt to organize State Charities Aid Society in book, "Occupation Versus Restraint."

Charities Aid Association in New York, the State Hospital Administration having at that time but a faint glimmering of the importance of social workers, though these workers have since become part of the State hospital organization. Miss Horton being unable to leave her work in New York, my next choice fell upon Miss Kate McMahon, who has since become a leader in medical-social work, but was then beginning her career as assistant to Miss Helen Richards, at that time head of the Social Service Department of the Boston Dispensary. Miss McMahon later succeeded Miss Richards, who was married shortly afterward and retired from active professional work. It was then decided to relieve Miss Mabel Wilson, one of the best of the Dispensary workers, for special service in my clinic. Miss Wilson proved to be particularly well fitted by education and temperament for this work, and I am much indebted to her able assistance and to that of Miss McMahon for the result of my experiment, as published in my paper, "Three Months With and Three Months Without a Social Worker in the Mental Clinic at the Boston Dispensary," which appeared in the "American Journal of Insanity" of October, 1912.

This paper was read at the Eighty-sixth Annual Meeting of the American Medico-Psychological Association, in May, 1912.

As this study marked a comparatively new development in psychiatric work, and as it was largely discussed at the time, I am tempted to quote from it somewhat extensively. I know that the plan that is here discussed has now been generally accepted, and that none of the ideas are new to those interested

in what is known as "social psychiatry," but much still remains to be done in the way of carrying out these ideas in our out-patient clinics and in the various State hospitals. The following extracts, showing conclusions drawn from the statistics, will give some idea of the trend of the paper and of the development of the mental clinic at the Dispensary at this particular time:

The average number of visits per patient to the mental clinic in the three months without a social worker were 1.7. In the three months with, this average was raised to 5.17. Diagnoses were deferred in the first three months in 46 per cent of the cases; in the second three months, in only 6 per cent. The 46 per cent of non-diagnosed cases is largely accounted for by the fact that over half failed to report at the clinic more than twice. The following up of the social worker in the second three months reduced the percentage to 6 per cent, which is the average given in the reports of most insane hospitals. . . .

Since a social worker has been part of the mental clinic, a social history of each of the 86 new cases has been taken. The medical history and examination by the physician, reinforced by this social history, determined which cases were to be taken up for intensive social work. In each case, however, the social facts and conditions were considered by the physician in his treatment of the disease. . . .

The social history enables the physician to prescribe rational treatment, and prevents him from giving prescriptions for medicine, hygiene or change of employment or environment which the patient is unable to carry out. The social worker is present during the physician's examination of every new patient. If social service care is needed, she visits the home, interviews the persons in a position to give information pertinent to the case, notes the environment and standard of living, and decides what social action is to be taken. . . .

Just as the physician's knowledge of materia medica is his equipment in the control of physical symptoms, so the knowledge of the community resources is the equipment which the social worker relates to the conditions she has to meet. The subtlety and difficulty of her task in applying the right resources to the individual patient is comparable to the careful application of the medical knowledge of the physician. . . .

At the Boston Dispensary the present head of the Social Service Department is a graduate of Columbia College, besides being thoroughly trained in social service work. The social worker who was assigned to the mental clinic is a graduate of Radcliffe College, and also has had a thorough training in social service work. The work in the mental clinic is growing so rapidly that an assistant is now a question of a very short time.

I mention the preparation of these workers because I have previously had untrained volunteer workers, and I warn you against them. I am convinced that no person should be allowed to take up the responsibility of social service work until she has been thoroughly trained and accepted as efficient by one of the different social service organizations. Anything under a year's training is dangerous.

I believe that every hospital for the insane in this country should have a field worker, a eugenics worker and a social worker connected with its organization. . . . Such an arrangement would do much to stem the tide we are all seeking to check, — to control and lessen the increase of insanity. The field worker would have the advantage of watching the cases in the hospital and selecting the more hopeful ones for a trial outside. He could direct the medical life of the patients after they left the hospital, but would be untrained to bring about changes in social conditions, environments or surroundings, which would prevent a return to the hospital of the same patient or the coming to the hospital of other cases from the same family or locality. The social worker, in conjunction with the field worker, could, I believe, control conditions to a great extent and prevent much of the increase of insanity and educate public opinion to a new point of view concerning the insane, their care and treatment. The result of such an organization with trained workers would, I believe, be:

1. To prevent the commitment of the early cases by directing early medical treatment and improving social conditions.

2. To prevent other members of the family or locality from similar breakdowns.

3. To prevent the return to the hospitals for the insane of many discharged cases.

Mr. Everett S. Elwood, of the Committee on Mental Hygiene of the State Charities Aid Association in New York, wrote me the following letter in regard to this study.

State Charities Aid Association

United Charities Building

105 East 22d Street, New York,
February 4, 1913.

Dr. L. V. Briggs, *Boston, Mass.*

Dear Sir: — I wish to thank you for the report of your very interesting address which I received this morning, entitled "Three Months With and Three Months Without a Social Worker in the Mental Clinic of the Boston Dispensary." It is a very convincing argument in favor of social workers in connection with mental hygiene work. The clinic which we started in October on the lower East Side is progressing with very encouraging results. The

large number of patients coming to us as a result of our New York City Conference on Mental Hygiene prevented my assistant from being at the clinic at every session; consequently we have been obliged to add a second worker to our staff. Since this second worker has come on, the work of the clinic has been very satisfactory.

I am very pleased to know that a Massachusetts Society for Mental Hygiene has been organized.

With kind regards, I am,

Sincerely yours,

EVERETT S. ELWOOD,
Assistant-Secretary.

I also quote the following letters commending this paper:

ALBERT EVANS, M.D.
409 MARLBOROUGH STREET

BOSTON, MASS., February 3, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Thank you for reprint. I have read your paper "Three Months Without and Three Months With a Social Service Worker in the Mental Clinic at the Boston Dispensary."

Fortunate is your department if it has only trained helpers. I have no quarrel with any kind of honorable "worker," if he or she brings trained and disciplined power to bear. It is always a pleasure to lock hands with efficiency. No matter how honest the individual or how clean, the untrained workers in any field are veritable amateur boxers, and they do a whole lot of ineffectual sparring among themselves, wasting steam and power without landing blows that tell.

Best wishes,
As ever,

EVANS.

MASSACHUSETTS INSTITUTE OF TECHNOLOGY, BOSTON
DEPARTMENT OF BIOLOGY AND PUBLIC HEALTH.

FEBRUARY 7, 1913.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Travelling to New York yesterday, I took with me to read on the train your recent paper on experience "With and Without a Social Worker in the Mental Clinic of the Boston Dispensary." I found your paper extremely interesting, and as I had in mind the work which Simmons College is doing along the lines of training social service people, and also the general movement towards eugenics, I was doubly interested.

Accept my hearty thanks for the paper and also my congratulations upon the useful and eminently suggestive experience which you have gained and presented.

Cordially yours,

W. T. Sedgewick.

Dr. W. M. Knowlton, Assistant Physician in Dr. Walter Channing's sanatorium in Brookline also commended this paper and wrote me to "Keep up the good work."

I was pleased to see in the "Annales Medico-Psychologiques" of Paris, dated May 19, 1913, a short review of this paper, signed "A. C.," of which the following is a translation:

For some time efforts have been multiplied with a view to the prevention of insanity. In the mental clinic in Boston the alienist is assisted by a social collaborator, whose rôle is to study the condition of the resources of the patients, the influence of environment in the causes of their mental troubles, and to suggest necessary measures for the home care of the patients. The work of such an agent, the statistics show, has interesting results. The number of these assistants should be increased.

The author is of the opinion (1) that they would diminish the number of admissions to hospitals by urging the treatment of early symptoms, (2) preserve the neighbors from accidents of the same nature, and (3) lessen the number of recidivists and readmissions.

I have gone somewhat lengthily into detail in regard to my work at this time to show that while a certain group of physicians were trying to discredit me, my work at the Dispensary was receiving special commendation for its development and efficiency.

The "Boston Sunday Post" of February 9, 1913, carried the following news item:

GREAT SURPRISE AT DR. BRIGGS' ELECTION

SELECTION OF NEW DISPENSARY HEAD STIRS MEDICAL CIRCLES. UNEXPECTED BY DOCTOR HIMSELF.

Boston medical circles were deeply stirred yesterday by the news of the election of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs of Beacon Street to the Presidency of the Boston Dispensary.

How utterly unexpected by Boston doctors was the election of Dr. Briggs to the important post as their official head by the 118 members of the Boston Dispensary Staff is shown by the fact that Dr. Briggs himself had supposed that he had retired from all official connection with the Dispensary Staff, and had retired to his country home in Hanover, Mass., Friday to write some treatises. He had not even troubled to attend the meeting at the Thorndike Friday night, which elected him, and did not learn of his election until last evening.

Dr. Briggs said last night to a "Post" reporter, "I had just refused to continue any longer as a member of the Advisory Council of the Dispensary, on which I had served for six years. I was astonished when I learned that the members of the staff had chosen me their President. While I realize that there has been some criticism of changes in the staff officers of the institution, and while as President I shall have important appointing powers, the whole thing is such a surprise that I cannot make a statement for several days. I will say, however, that my policy as President will be to see that every good medical school has equal access to the clinic and other advantages to be derived from the work of the Dispensary.

From a mass of congratulatory letters, I quote the following from Dr. Storer, the retiring President, whom I succeeded:

476 BOYLSTON STREET, BOSTON, MASS.,
February 8, 1913.

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Many congratulations on your election to the onerous position of President of the Staff of the Boston Dispensary. You will find it one of considerable interest. Mr. Davis has a lot of things he wants to lay before the Executive Committee, so it would be a good idea for you to get the Council together in the very near future, for them to appoint the Executive Committee and have Davis meet them as soon as may be. As Chase has probably notified you, Barron is the new secretary. I hope he will be as good a one as Chase was.

Sincerely,

MALCOLM STORER.

I also received the following letter from Dr. Albert Evans:

409 Marlborough Street,
Boston, Mass., February 9, 1913.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Dr. Briggs: — My heart was glad beyond words when I learned of your appointment as our President. I have been so happy in my "humble" position as district physician of the Boston Dispensary, but now I shall be happier for serving as a modest unit at the foot of the ladder with you on the "throne."

I congratulate the Dispensary,
Sincerely,

Evans.

And the following letter came from Edward A. Church, Esq., cashier of the Boylston National Bank:

February 11, 1913.

My Dear Vernon: — I have only lately learned that you have been made head of the Boston Dispensary, and I am glad of it. You did not get the position which you sought and for which you were so exceptionally qualified, but your friends will rejoice that even this small distinction has been tendered to you, and we all believe that you will go farther and higher.

With cordial regards and best wishes,
Yours most truly,

Ned.

Dr. Henry J. Berkley, Professor of Psychiatry at Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, wrote on February 17, 1913:

Dear Dr. Briggs: — That you should be elected head of the Boston Dispensary is not altogether unexpected, as I understood some time ago that you stood an excellent chance. It is a matter, however, to be congratulated upon, and you have my, as well as Mrs. Berkley's, best congratulations. I consider the election as quite a vindication of your present position in regard to the Lunacy Commission, and now that you have passed one step, your chances for the other post are vastly increased. I saw Dr. Hurd yesterday, and he also sends his congratulations.

I remain, with regards,
Very sincerely,
Henry J. Berkley.

That Channing and his friends were not content to prevent my appointment to the State Board, but

wished to eliminate me from the profession entirely, was evident from their vicious attacks upon me in other directions. They saw an opportunity to use the managers of the Boston Dispensary for their purposes, and these managers fell easy victims to their malicious influence. My election as President of the Staff of the Boston Dispensary was a great blow to them. This election by 125 physicians composing the Medical Staff was an absolute refutation of their charges against my professional reputation. They could not drop the matter here without entirely losing their cause and putting themselves in an unenviable light as traducers of my character. They therefore proceeded to bring the most powerful influences to bear at the Boston Dispensary, and the result of their work was soon apparent.

On February 15, 1913, I received word from Simon Swig to come to his office. He said that Dr. Stedman had called him up and he wanted me to hear the conversation. On my arrival Mr. Swig called up Dr. Stedman and asked him what he desired. Dr. Stedman said, "I do not understand how Briggs got to be chief of physicians at the Boston Dispensary, unless he bought it from the physicians." Simon Swig said, "Do you mean that they have 150 doctors of that kind at the Dispensary — for I hear it was unanimous?" Dr. Stedman beat about the bush, trying to get out of what he had said, but Simon held him down to his statement. Dr. Stedman said that his committee expected a report on the following Monday as to how Briggs got in. "Well," said Simon, "Briggs must have been pretty well thought of in all branches of medicine to be elected by them. They must think he stands high in his line." "Oh," said

Stedman, "the Dispensary is only an out-patient place, anyway. We shall have a report on the whole matter on Monday."

Three days later, on February 18, Simon Swig had a telephone call from Dr. Stedman, who seemed to be in great spirits. He said:

"*The managers of the Dispensary are going to send some one to Briggs to tell him that if he does not resign in six months they will fire him now. We are going to fix that.*" Continuing he said:

"*Some of the doctors and other people want to put him in as a Director of the Mental Hygiene Society, but I have now decided that I don't want him. They think he would be safer inside than out, and want to pull his teeth, — or get some money from him to support the Society, — but I am going to fight it. Briggs is the most indefatigable cuss I ever saw.*"

I will here quote a letter received from Mr. Swig about this time, which speaks for itself:

TRUSTEES:
HON. ROBERT LUCE
SIMON SWIG
HON. ROBERT O. HARRIS
EDWARD J. MCMANUS
LOUIS GOLDSTEIN

TELEPHONE HAYMARKET 63

NATIONAL REALTY COMPANY
618 BARRISTERS HALL
11–25 PEMBERTON SQUARE

BOSTON, MASS., February 8, 1913.

LLOYD VERNON BRIGGS, M.D., *Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — While you were talking with me yesterday on the telephone I at first failed to recognize your voice owing to the buzzing at my end of the telephone, and then I could not talk with you as I would have liked because there were two men in the office whom I did not care to hear the conversation.

I am faithfully carrying out your instructions of last Wednesday, — namely, to maintain a deep silence and to rely on those who promised you to obtain your appointment and confirmation on Wednesday next.

It is my fervent hope and wish that they be successful because you deserve and merit the appointment and confirmation.

At times I have been provoked, not with your management but with the Council, to think that they so readily lend their ears to the men who without reason defame you.

It is now some months since I became acquainted with you, and of the many men that I have met in my life none have impressed me more, and I pride myself of being some judge of human character and human nature.

The more I have seen of you the more I have marvelled that a man of your abilities, your principles and your character should be so venomously opposed, for the honor which you seek and the experience that you are undergoing seems to again demonstrate that jealousy will lead its possessor to attack the most honorable men.

I know that you will grace and honor the position, and I know that you are a friend of mankind, more particularly the unfortunate and helpless, and because you are just such a man as you are I have been willing to give my thought and time to your cause, and I am ready to serve you in whatever way I can be of service.

Your appointment and confirmation will be just as much an honor to the Commonwealth as to yourself, and I devoutly wish that the councillors will awaken to the fact that they have done you an injustice, and that they will not by their action deprive the Commonwealth of your services.

I am not looking for any credit, glory or reward for any service I may have rendered you. It is reward enough for me that I did my very best to have you triumph over those who so unjustly vilified you, and I am ready to do more if occasion demands it.

You no doubt know my feelings towards you without my putting them in writing, but I wanted you to have something that you could show others, should you so desire, and hence this letter.

Sincerely yours,

SIMON SWIG.

Another element which may have contributed to influence some of the physicians, who did not know me personally, to take active steps in opposing my holding office either at the State House or at the Boston Dispensary, was the very strong prejudice existing among Harvard medical men against graduates from other schools. The paper "Practical Politics" had been carrying on a vigorous campaign for some months against what it termed the "Harvard Medical Trust," making direct personal attacks upon some of the leaders. I have already quoted an article from the issue of November 30, in which the writer refers to the "Harvard Cabal" against my appointment to the State Board of Insanity. In the autumn of 1912 this

paper began to associate this "Medical Trust" with the Boston Dispensary, claiming that professional politics was responsible for many of the appointments and resignations on the Staff. It is interesting to study the following quotations from the above-mentioned journal in connection with the attacks made against me in 1913. In its issue of November 9 it had published an article entitled "Harvard Medical Trust." I quote from it only as much as relates to the Boston Dispensary, as follows:

There are two questions which naturally arise in speaking of trusts: first, is the trust intended to boost prices, and second, is it in restraint of trade? The "Boston Post" has several times printed stories telling of the changes in the medical control of Boston institutions. The most recent story had to do with the possibilities of the Boston Dispensary, with its thousands of patients there, passing under the control of Harvard. The usual denial appeared, but the truth was carefully guarded in the denial. Harvard medical control is a most intangible thing, difficult to locate and almost impossible to tag, but when any one connected with Tufts Medical, Boston University or the much abused College of Physicians and Surgeons has an idea or seeks for a medical job, something invariably happens, followed by commiserating explanations. . . . But let us take up the latest move in medical politics, — the Boston Dispensary and its relation to the public, the medical schools and the New Brigham Hospital.

Up to within a few years ago the Dispensary was primarily a medical charity, the largest and oldest in the city, to which thousands of dollars have been given and left, but to what amount the reports of the institution are silent. The superintendent was a physician in close touch and sympathy with a staff whose *ésprit de corps* was unsurpassed, and students were welcomed from both schools. Then came a change. Almost coincident with the efforts of a certain group of men to control primary and secondary education came the entry of Edward R. Warren, a young man of careful personal financial habits, with no particular occupation except as a charity expert. He had a training in connection with the Floating Hospital from which he was more or less violently separated, and with the Infants' Hospital, where almost over night, and without warning, the staff, headed by Dr. Charles P. Putnam, found themselves on the bricks. The Board of Management of the Dispensary were busy men, and as Warren appeared to have nothing else to do, he got more and more power in his hands.

The efficient superintendent was replaced by a professional social service worker from New York named Michael M. Davis, Jr. Of course Davis knew exactly what to do. The work of a hundred years was all wrong. Why had

he not been sent for before? . . . Dr. Stowell, for years physician and professor of children's diseases at Tufts Medical School, was dropped, and the control put under Dr. William P. Lucas, a teacher at Harvard. The work of the Dispensary was upset, rumors of shakeup were in the air, so that to reassure the rest of the Staff that this did not mean a general shakeup, the President and Superintendent met the Staff and said that this was all. It did not mean putting out Tufts men and putting in Harvard — oh, dear, no! They had explained it all to Dr. Harold Williams, Dean of Tufts, and he was perfectly satisfied. It was all right. Then came the Brigham Hospital, with magnificent buildings for "the care of the indigent poor of Suffolk County." Something must be done by the Brigham Hospital Trustees to prove that there was a demand from the poor for treatment for other than such diseases as consumption, cancer, diseases of bones and joints, so painful and disabling, but which are now treated at Long Island and the Tewksbury State Farm. . . . So within a few months, after stating how they loved Tufts and the men who were teaching for Tufts, the Medical Department gets its shaking up, and when all is settled the Tufts men are out of control and the Brigham-Harvard crowd are in. More uproar in the Dispensary and more explanation to Dean Williams. The men on the Staff are appointed for one year, so when October came around and the Trustees met, it leaked out that the surgical, genito-urinary, lung and throat and X-ray departments were under consideration for readjustment. The seniors of all these departments were teachers in Tufts. The annual meeting of the Staff was called. No notice of change was sent to the nomination committee; then a letter was produced purporting to come from the Board of Managers, asking that no officers be chosen until January. In the meantime it was proposed to reorganize out all Tufts men, except the weakest ones in each department, who would be kept as an exhibition of fairness, and to eliminate all who are not in full accord with the social service propaganda, and the care, especially, of children. What Dean Williams has to say has not been reported. For the surgical department, it is proposed to put Dr. John Homans of the Brigham Hospital in charge, to be assisted by Dr. Benjamin Tenney, who resigned from Harvard some years after young John Warren was promoted over him in the anatomical department, and who resigned from Tufts about the time the handwriting on the Dispensary wall became apparent. The President of the Board of Managers is reported to have said that the town was not big enough for two medical schools, and the sooner Tufts realized it the better. Is a trust an organization in restraint of trade? Or does the question still remain, What is a trust?

And again, on November 23, 1912, the same very caustic paper printed an article entitled "Medical Politics as Applied to Boston Dispensary." The following extract is quoted, beginning with the caption:

BOSTON DISPENSARY

Established 1796

PROGRAM

To meet the scientific and social ideals of modern preventive medicine in our clinics and in our home treatment of the poor.

BOARD OF MANAGERS

EDWARD R. WARREN, *President*

INGERSOLL AMORY, LORIN F. DELAND, MALCOLM S. GREENOUGH, EDWARD S. GREW, RANDOLPH C. GREW, ROBERT M. LAWRENCE, JOHN F. MOORS, PHILIP S. PARKER, JOSEPH WARREN, MOSES WILLIAMS, JR., ROBERT A. WOODS

MICHAEL M. DAVIS, JR., *Director*

PHILIP S. PARKER, *Treasurer*, 84 State Street

A short time ago we printed a story of a medical trust. This week we wish to call attention to the new social service scheme of administration as shown by the advertisement of the Boston Dispensary in the "Transcript," soliciting contributions. . . .

Since our article on a medical trust, steps in reorganizing out Tufts men at the Dispensary have been taken. Dr. Charles M. Whitney, one of the leaders of the profession, and for over twenty years the mainstay of the genito-urinary department, but unfortunately a teacher at Tufts, went out, and Dr. Paul Thorndike and Dr. Arthur Chute went in. . . . Nobody believes that Dr. Thorndike will give the personal attention to the patients that Dr. Whitney has, but he can pick out assistants who will send the interesting cases to the Brigham Hospital. In the surgical department, all Tufts men go out of control on January first, and, as we indicated, Dr. John Homans and Dr. Ben Tenney go in. . . .

Apostrophising Mr. Davis, the article continues:

The newspapers of Boston can't be buncoed by any explanation of how fair you intend to be at the Dispensary, in the face of the actions of your assistant, Edward R. Warren and yourself.

Whether or not this alleged cabal had any bearing on my own status in the events of 1913 I do not know, but these articles of which I have quoted comparatively mild portions are more or less suggestive.

At this time, in addition to opposing my appointment to the State Board of Insanity, Dr. Channing's

group began an active campaign, through some of the managers of the Boston Dispensary, to force my resignation from the position of President, to which I had been elected by the Medical Staff, presumably not only to discredit me with the Governor's Council, but also to eliminate me from all professional work. I was also feeling their influence through some of my private patients, who told me that certain members of this group had urged them no longer to consult me professionally.

CHAPTER XI

Dinner given to Dr. Briggs at the Copley Plaza Hotel. — Members of the Council present. — Governor Foss sends Dr. Briggs' Name to the Council for the Third Time on March 12, 1913, and the Council unanimously confirms it under a Suspension of Rules the Same Day. — Newspaper Comments and Congratulatory Letters

On February 26, 1913, Governor Foss dined with me at my house, 64 Beacon Street, and we discussed the situation until 11.30 P.M. Among other things he said, "the attacks of the physicians who are trying to prevent your confirmation are outrageous and diabolical."

About the end of February, 1913, I was given a dinner in the large banquet room of the Copley Plaza Hotel by some of my friends, and to this dinner the members of the Governor's Council were invited. This was the first opportunity I had had of meeting face to face some members of the Council. Speeches were made, reminiscences related, and altogether it was a very pleasurable occasion; but what was more important to me was the fact that certain members of the Council asked me many questions which enabled me to state what I stood for in the matter of the State's care and treatment of the mentally ill and of what the opposition to my appointment consisted. After this meeting, Councillor McGregor was my staunch supporter. In January, 1913, Councillor Ham sent for me to come to his office and told me that Drs. George Shattuck and Henry R. Stedman had been to see him and had tried to convince him that I was "crazy," but

he said that after our interview he was convinced that I was not, and that he should support me. He expressed himself as astounded at the methods employed by the opposing physicians to prevent my confirmation, and on January 26 he informed me he had decided to vote for me. (In September, 1913, he employed me as expert in a court case he was trying.)

Within a few days, on Wednesday, March 12, 1913, the tide of the battle at the State House turned. Governor Foss sent my name to his Council a third time, to succeed Dr. Howard on the State Board of Insanity, and the nomination was unanimously confirmed under suspension of the rules. The division at first was as follows: for confirmation, Councillors Ham, Keith, Collins, McGregor; against confirmation, Councillors Frothingham, Simpson, Goetting. Lieutenant Governor Walsh was absent, but would have voted for confirmation had he been there; Councillor Denny, also absent, would have opposed me. A suspension of the rules was necessary for immediate action, as the rule is for an appointment to stand over for a week before being acted upon. But a suspension of the rules could only be made by unanimous consent of the Council, so the vote for my confirmation under suspension of the rules was made unanimous.

From the "Boston Globe" of March 13, 1913, I quote the following:

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs is a member of medical and allied societies, including the Massachusetts Medical Society, Boston Society for Medical Improvement, Boston Medical Library, Suffolk District Medical Society, American Medical Association, American Association for Clinical Research, Massachusetts Society of Examining Physicians and National Hospital Association.

He is also a member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science and the National Conference of Charities and Corrections, is President of the Medical Staff of the Boston Dispensary, Trustee of the Sharon Sana-

torium, Alienist on the Board of Consulting Physicians of the Boston Children's Aid Society, and Commissioner of the Alien Insane of Massachusetts.

Dr. Briggs was an assistant of Dr. William S. Whitwell in his sanitarium for the treatment of mental diseases in San Francisco in the 80's, and later an associate of Dr. Walter Channing. He has also been a director of the New England Hospital for Women and Children.

He is the author of the first bill requiring that insane persons taken on the streets shall be treated as ill persons and not as ordinary prisoners. This bill resulted in the establishment, in connection with the Boston State Hospital, of an observation hospital, where persons found to be mentally ill are taken instead of being sent to a police station. To Dr. Briggs is also to be credited the act which provides for the employment of instructors in the hospitals of the State to teach nurses and attendants how to keep their patients occupied.

The "Boston Herald" is ever consistent in its policy! On March 13, 1913, in addition to a news article on the front page announcing my appointment, it published the following editorial:

DR. BRIGGS AT LAST

The Council has at last confirmed the nomination of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as one of the State's guardians of its insane wards. Dr. Briggs is a cultivated gentleman of altruistic impulses, but his ideas on insanity are so peculiar that he will almost surely prove a disturbing factor in the administration of what is at best a peculiarly trying problem. Massachusetts to-day, with its psychopathic experimentation, is performing this task better than any other State in the Union. It is a pity to break in upon such excellent work by the confirmation of Dr. Briggs.

The State makes quite a sacrifice in administrative efficiency by having Eugene N. Foss as its Chief Executive. His steadily spectacular plays, attracting the attention of the multitude, have given rise to the legend that he is "making a good Governor," but some time, as the excellent institutional work of the Commonwealth gradually becomes undermined by his peculiar appointments and actions, people will come to another conclusion.

The following is from an item in the "Boston Evening Record" of March 14, 1913:

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member, at last, of the State Board of Insanity, occupies a different position from Dr. Briggs occupying the public eye as a possible appointee. In his position as a candidate for this place, many aggressively novel ideas of his have been advanced and advertised. He is now in a position to urge his beliefs and ideas within the official Board. His ideas so become specific items of importance to the State. Authority of office will

doubtless soften some of his views. On the other hand his convictions will find expression and they may bear desirable fruit. He cannot stampede the rest of the Board. The State is thus likely to profit from whatever in his suggestions is valuable, and will not suffer from those that are impractical or of doubtful value. Dr. Briggs is a sincere man with the interests of the inmates at heart. Such a man is not a danger to the public. On the contrary, his point of view is wholesome and may be constructively useful.

It is interesting to me to study the different points of view following my appointment and confirmation as expressed in the various Boston daily papers. The "Boston Daily Advertiser" of March 13, 1913, in a leading article on the front page, reviewed the contest over my appointments by Governor Foss, concluding:

The Council refused to confirm Briggs [referring to second appointment], however, after a lively contest. The medical profession of the whole State has been divided on the rival claims of Howard and Briggs. The latter has been charged with being radical. On the other hand, his supporters have declared him progressive, and point to the fact that he got through the Legislature remedial legislation for the insane, forbidding the use of strait-jackets or harsh measures of restraint except under the supervision of competent physicians.

The Briggs following have been gathering accessions of strength ever since last year, especially since growth of sentiment that the old methods of treating the insane were too harsh, and that so many of the attendants in asylums were found to be incompetent or worse.

The "Post," the "Journal" and the "Transcript" also gave considerable space to the discussion of my appointment.

The following appeared in "Truth" on March 22, 1913:

THE ENTERING WEDGE

The confirmation of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as a member of the State Board of Insanity by the Governor's Council is a bitter pill for the "Medical Ring," which has its led captains and drum beaters encamped in every State institution, who resent the appointment of any outsider to their sacred pastures as an outrage on their traditional privilege of fattening scientifically on the State treasury. Dr. Briggs will bring a breath of wholesome air into a body that needs new blood and fresh ideas as badly as the State Board of Insanity and

other official refuges for medical mediocrities; and their failure to secure the rejection of a man of open mind, humane instincts and unquestionable professional fitness ought to be a matter of public congratulation.

The industry and malice of the "Medical Ring" ought to convince Governor Foss that he can do no better work for the Commonwealth than to break up this cabal; and while he disappointed the public seriously by neglecting to clean out this oligarchy when opportunities presented themselves, he has done an excellent piece of work in appointing Dr. Briggs. The friends of the medical clique — political, professional and journalistic — could not impugn his character, skill or standing with any hope of success, but they did practice their stale and sneaky methods of "An excellent man, but —", "A man of peculiar ideas, you know", "Temperamentally impossible", and all the contemptible arts of innuendo; and they have failed. The editorial retriever of the clique says, with greasy grief, "Dr. Briggs is a cultivated gentleman of altruistic impulses — but his ideas are so peculiar that he will almost surely prove a disturbing factor in the administration." How delightfully Borgian! Dr. Briggs certainly has peculiar ideas; he believes in the humane treatment of the insane; he objects to brutality and ignorance; and it is the hope of the public that he will be very much of a disturbing factor in the counsels of the political heelers who are specialists in bursary phlebotomy.

"Truth" congratulates Dr. Briggs on his appointment, and trusts he will be as pleasant as a mustard plaster on the back of the clique.

From the "American Journal of Insanity," April, 1913, I quote:

Dr. Briggs brings to the position to which he has been appointed a large degree of enthusiasm and zeal, and will, we predict, be an active member of the Board. He has recently been elected President of the Medical Staff of the Boston Dispensary, but will, we understand, give up his general practice to devote himself to his new duties.

I think it is not inappropriate to include a few congratulatory letters that meant much to me at this time:

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
OFFICE OF THE LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR

STATE HOUSE, BOSTON, March 13, 1913.

DR. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *Boston, Mass.*

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I congratulate you upon your confirmation yesterday by the Governor's Council, and sincerely wish you a very strong and able administration in the important work the State has intrusted to you.

Sincerely yours,

DAVID I. WALSH.

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
INDUSTRIAL ACCIDENT BOARD

MARCH 13, 1913.

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Heartiest congratulations! There *is* a God in Israel.

Cordially,

EDW. F. MCSWEENEY.

The superintendent of the Boston State Hospital wrote:

BOSTON, March 13, 1913.

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Your phone and the mail are bringing you, I am sure, many congratulations upon your appointment, announced to-day. Please accept mine, tendered with best wishes for a pleasant and productive administration in a field which has so enlisted your sympathy and interest. I beg to assure you of my cordial co-operation in the new relation.

Yours sincerely,

HENRY P. FROST.

The following is from Dr. Albert Evans, of 409 Marlborough Street:

BOSTON, MASS., March 13, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

MY GOOD FRIEND: — It seems sacrilege to write that with a small "F." Respect at once profound has by degrees grown into an affection deep and strong. I love you for what you are, and am supremely happy in your success; and loyalty and even service in defeat shall always be given you. I seldom shout or blow music from a horn, and I am not there to carry a banner, but when it comes to helping load the guns, I'm with you on the firing line.

Faithfully,

EVANS.

THE COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
INDUSTRIAL ACCIDENT BOARD

MARCH 12, 1913.

MY DEAR DOCTOR: — I want to congratulate the Commonwealth upon your appointment and confirmation. At last we shall have some intelligent and progressive guidance and planning in our insanity work. I am more delighted than I can express, and am glad the long hard fight and waiting are ended. The Governor never made a wiser or better selection. With best wishes, as ever,

Your friend,

DUDLEY M. HOLMAN.

Telegrams came, one from Mr. Clarence W. Barron, dated New York, March 12, which read, "Congratulations to you and the State of Massachusetts," and one from Dr. Henry J. Berkley of Baltimore, which read, "Our very best congratulations."

Dr. Carlisle Reed wrote from 155 Massachusetts Avenue, Boston:

I wish to congratulate you on your appointment to the State Board of Insanity. I am glad that, at last, we have a man on the Board who takes a real interest in the work.

The following came from Dr. Arthur L. Chute, one of my associates at the Boston Dispensary:

350 Marlborough Street, Boston,
March 13, 1913.

My Dear Vernon: — I was greatly pleased to see in this morning's paper that the Council had confirmed your appointment to the Board of Insanity. You merit the appointment, and I am glad you have been able to put it through. I believe with a great many others that you will show them that their opposition was unwarranted. Only to-day I heard a man say, speaking of your appointment, that "the Psychopathic Hospital would not have been had it not been for Briggs."

Some time soon I want to talk over the Dispensary matter with you.

Sincerely,

Arthur.

Charles F. Campbell
Attorney and Councillor at Law
918 Slater Building

Worcester, Mass., March 13, 1913.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *c/o State Board of Insanity, Boston, Mass.*

My Dear Doctor: — It was with extreme satisfaction that I learned of your confirmation yesterday. I feel sure that your appointment is an honor and credit to the Governor, and your work will bring comfort and real assistance in a most worthy cause.

Very truly yours,

C. F. Campbell.

HANCOCK, N. H., March 13, 1913.

DEAR VERNON: — I was very glad to hear of your final success with the Council and your being confirmed by so *satisfactory a majority*. I must say that you never seemed doubtful yourself of the ultimate results. I think you deserve many congratulations from your friends.

Sincerely yours,

WILLIAM TUDOR.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

BOSTON, March 13, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *State Board of Insanity.*

Greeting! Congratulations! Hurray, hurray, hurrah!

Yours very truly,

HORACE S. TOWER.

Mr. Edward A. Church wrote the following:

BOYLSTON NATIONAL BANK,
BOSTON, March 13, 1913.

DEAR VERNON: — My sincere congratulations on the final confirmation of your appointment on the Lunacy Board. I hope there will be no more difficulties in the way.

Cordially yours,

NED.

This note came from Dr. Joel E. Goldthwait:

372 MARLBOROUGH STREET, BOSTON, MASS.

DEAR VERNON: — My sincere congratulations on this appointment! It gives a wonderful chance for leadership that is unselfish and for creative work that is fine, in a department where it is evident that some of these qualities have been lacking.

Sincerely,

JOEL.

131 STATE STREET, BOSTON, March 13, 1913.

DEAR VERNON: — My sincere congratulations on your election to the Board of Insanity. I know what a good fighter you are, and it gives me great pleasure to see you win out against your strong enemies. You have the best of qualifications for the position, and I know you will not disappoint your friends.

Always sincerely,

LOUIS B. THACHER.

THE "BOSTON POST," BOSTON, MASS.
FRIDAY, March 14, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR DOCTOR: — Nothing has given me so much pleasure for a long time, or since the election of our own Councilman, "Jerry" Watson, as your own election to the State Board of Insanity, announced in yesterday's papers. This is indeed a splendid victory after what appeared to be a discouraging outlook after the two failures, and nobody can wish you more hearty congratulations than myself, and I take this opportunity of trying to express to you how glad I am that you have succeeded.

May I add my sincerest well wishes to those of your myriad of true friends who have stood by you and wished you the same? I am sure that the State and every lover of justice will be the gainer by your presence on the Board, and every mute sufferer will have found a true friend in you.

Again congratulating you, and hoping to see you personally again at some near time, I am,

Most sincerely yours,

LOUIS B. ADAMS.

Simon Swig wrote to me under date of March 15, 1913:

MY DEAR DOCTOR: — I have not expressed my sentiments as fully as I would wish. I saw you the victim of a dastardly conspiracy at the hands of men who from their station in life one would ordinarily expect no act that would not square with honor and probity, but who so far forgot their station as to stoop to the lowest of the low. What humanitarian who was not jealous of your position in the medical world would not be loyal to you after all the sacrifices you have made to assist and better the condition of the lowly and unfortunate, more particularly the insane. . . . By your confirmation the State is to have the benefit of your humane heart and your unquestioned skill and ability. . . .

Dr. E. E. Lake of Hampstead, N. H., wrote:

I saw by the "Globe" that you got your appointment, and I was mighty pleased and would have been more so if I could have helped. I am so pleased you beat them at their own game.

191 COMMONWEALTH AVENUE, BOSTON,
March 16, 1913.

To Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS.

MY DEAR VERNON: — I am delighted to hear that you have at last received your well-merited appointment and that it has been actually confirmed. I think the Board of which you are now a member needs such a man as you are,

THE
COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS
OFFICE OF
THE LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR
STATE HOUSE, BOSTON

Fitchburg, March 13, 1913.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs,
Boston, Mass.

Dear Doctor Briggs,-

I congratulate you upon your confirmation yesterday by the Governor's Council and sincerely wish you avvery strong and able administration in the important work the state has entrusted to you.

With best wishes, I am,

Sincerely yours,

Frank S. Wolsh.

and the poor unfortunates who are under the care of the Board will surely be benefited through your efforts.

You may recollect my belief in your perseverance with its successful result.

Sincerely yours,

AUGUSTUS L. THORNDIKE.

Dr. Berkley wrote on March 1, saying:

I sent you a telegram congratulating you on the appointment to the State Board of Insanity. This is indeed a victory, and I trust the outcome will be far-reaching and of the utmost benefit to the State. The Commonwealth is indeed to be congratulated upon your appointment.

1012 NORTH CALVERT STREET,
BALTIMORE, MD., March 17, 1913.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Delighted! May the day of a clearing of the strange performances come! I hope that now the hatchets may be buried and that a period of solid and conscientious work may begin. It will not be easy. It will be well to work slowly. If I can help in any way I shall always be glad to do so.

Very truly yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

THE SHEPARD AND ENOCH PRATT HOSPITAL, TOWNSON, MD.
EDWARD N. BRUSH, M.D., SUPERINTENDENT

MARCH 21, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — I have your letter with enclosed clipping and wish to congratulate you and the State upon your appointment. I shall make some notice of the same in the April "Journal of Insanity."

Very truly yours,

E. N. BRUSH.

Dr. George O. Clark of the Massachusetts General Hospital also wrote me on March 26, 1913:

I trust it is not altogether too late to offer you my congratulations on account of the honor done you by His Excellency the Governor and the Council.

Dr. W. L. Russell, Medical Superintendent of Bloomingdale Hospital, White Plains, N. Y., wrote me on April 8:

I congratulate you on your appointment to the State Board of Insanity. You are now in a position to carry out some of the measures which you have in mind for improving the conditions in your State, and you have my best wishes for your success. If I can be of any service to you in shaping the work there, I shall be only too glad.

From Dr. Frank G. Wheatley of North Abington, one of the Councillors of the Massachusetts Medical Society, I received the following letter, dated April 14, 1913:

L. Vernon Briggs, M.D.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — I have called you on the telephone several times recently to congratulate you, but didn't happen to find you in. I think your speech at the Copley Plaza dinner settled the matter so far as Councillor McGregor was concerned. However that may be, please accept my hearty, though tardy, congratulations.

Very sincerely yours,

Frank G. Wheatley.

Even the patients and the attendants at the hospitals sent me their congratulations. For instance, a former attendant at the Bridgewater State Hospital, who had always been active in attempts to eliminate cruelty at the State institutions, wrote:

165 East River Street,
Hyde Park, Mass., March 13, 1913.

Dr. Briggs.

Dear Sir: — I congratulate you on your nomination and confirmation to the State Board of Insanity. Wishing you every success and that you may be a power for great good, I remain,

Sincerely yours,

H. J. McLean.

Miss Rose Sterling, a nurse at the McLean Hospital, Waverley, wrote me from there on March 13, 1913:

Accept my very sincere congratulations upon the very successful appointment as member of the State Board of Insanity. . . . We have felt the influence of your work here. . . .

CHAPTER XII

Confusion of the Medical Cabal following Dr. Briggs' Confirmation. — Dr. W. C. Bailey sent as Emissary to Dr. Briggs from the Managers of the Boston Dispensary. — Dr. Briggs refers the Board to the Medical Staff which elected Him. — The Managers acknowledge Defeat by voting Dr. Briggs should serve out His Term of Office as President and Member of the Staff

I had taken no action against my maligners previous to my confirmation by the Council, as I thought such action might be interpreted as directed to political ends. Now that I was both confirmed by the Council as a member of the State Board of Insanity and elected by the Medical Staff as President of the Boston Dispensary, I felt my motives could not be misconstrued if I brought my traducers to book. Although I did not wish to take money from them or to cause their imprisonment, I nevertheless felt it best to take legal steps to bring them to a realization of their guilt, and to let the world know how unjustifiable were their accusations and to what lengths these men so prominent in the community would go in order to accomplish their ends.

On March 12, 1913, I was both a member of the State Board of Insanity and President of the Staff of the Boston Dispensary. I had been informed indirectly and at various times during the previous month that my election as President had been opposed by certain of the Board of Managers.

On March 24, 1913, Dr. Bradford was called up on the telephone by Simon Swig, from my house, at 10 o'clock in the evening, while I listened in. Dr. Brad-

ford stated that Dr. Stedman had told him that he had been able to give the managers of the Boston Dispensary some new information on which they, the managers, were going to base their demand for Briggs to resign. Dr. Bradford said that he knew nothing personally about the managers' actions — Stedman was attending to that, he said.

Dr. Stedman and Dr. Bradford seemed to be trying to shift the responsibility for their actions each upon the other, for Mr. Swig told me that the previous Friday he had called at Dr. Stedman's office at Dr. Stedman's request, and while he was there Dr. Stedman had called up Dr. Bradford, who gave him all the recent information and news from the Boston Dispensary in regard to Dr. Briggs, and said that the managers would oust Briggs, not only as President of the Staff, but entirely from the institution. Dr. Stedman told Mr. Swig that he got all his information from Dr. Bradford. He said that the doctors had had a meeting on the evening of March 20, 1913, at which Dr. Channing and others were present, and that Channing stated that Dr. Briggs had great influence in getting bills through the Legislature, and might now put one in about private hospitals that would put them out of business — *therefore they must discredit Dr. Briggs.* He further stated that Dr. Bradford had reported that Dr. Briggs would not only be forced to resign from the presidency of the Medical Staff, but would be "fired altogether from the institution." Dr. Stedman said, "As soon as it is done, we are going to make it public." He then told Mr. Swig to go and see Edward Warren and Malcolm Greenough, and tell them all he knew against Dr. Briggs, so they could use it to get him out.

After Dr. Bradford's conversation with Simon Swig on the evening of March 24, Mr. Swig called up Dr. Stedman, who told him that he had been out of town, and that he knew nothing more than he had told him on the previous Friday.

At 10.20 the same evening Mr. Swig called up Dr. John B. Blake, who said, in answer to a question, "Yes, I hear they are going to kick Dr. Briggs out of the Dispensary. He is a bad one, and they will soon kick him out."

At 10.30 the same evening, while I was listening in, Mr. Swig called up Dr. Walter Channing, who said:

> I only know what Stedman has told me about the Boston Dispensary, but I hear they are going to put Briggs off the Staff. I do not understand how he got it over us and was elected on the Board of Insanity. When asked if he knew anything about a bill concerning private hospitals, he said, "No, but perhaps Dr. Stedman knows about it."

Dr. Walter Bailey again approached me, this time for the purpose of asking me to withdraw from the Staff of the Boston Dispensary. He came as an emissary of the Board of Managers, and thus was indirectly an emissary from the Channing group. By this time I had come to realize that he was consciously or unconsciously working in the interest of my enemies and not in my interest. I therefore ignored his request and inasmuch as the Medical Staff had the right to choose its own President without reference to the Managers, I addressed the following letter to the Medical Staff:

64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.
March 13, 1913.

To the Medical Staff of the Boston Dispensary.

Gentlemen: — It has been brought to my notice, unofficially, that my election as President of the Medical Staff is not acceptable to the Trustees.

My sole wish is to act for the best interests of the Boston Dispensary. If, after due consultation of the Medical Staff with the Trustees, they deem it to be for the best interest of the institution that I withdraw my name as President, I hold myself ready to accede to their decision.

Very truly yours,

L. VERNON BRIGGS.

Later the same day the managers of the Dispensary addressed an official letter to me, requiring a definite reply within ten days:

MARCH 13, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR SIR: — At a meeting of the Board of Managers of the Boston Dispensary held to-day, it was voted that the secretary should send you a letter, requesting that within ten days from its receipt you should make a definite reply to the communication which was made to you about two weeks ago through Dr. W. C. Bailey, expressing the wishes of the Board.

I have the honor to be,

Very truly yours,

MALCOLM S. GREENOUGH,
Secretary.

A copy of the following resolve was enclosed:

Resolved, That since the best interests of the Dispensary clearly require that the President of the Staff should be one with whom the Board of Managers can work effectively, it is the sense of this meeting that the resignation of Dr. L. Vernon Briggs as President of the Staff is desirable not later than the regular meeting of the Board in the second week of July.

I replied on March 14, 1913, as follows:

To the Trustees of the Boston Dispensary.

DEAR SIRS: — Your official letter is just received. Up to the present time I have received nothing but an unofficial communication from the Trustees. Previous to the receipt of your letter of March 13, I had written to the Medical Staff, stating that, as I understood there was some dissatisfaction among the Trustees as to my election to the Presidency of the Medical Staff, I placed the whole matter before them to decide as seems best for the interest of the Boston Dispensary.

You are at liberty to communicate with the Medical Staff upon the matter. I have stated to them that I am anxious to do everything I can for the Boston Dispensary.

Very sincerely yours,

L. VERNON BRIGGS.

I then laid all the correspondence before Mr. Sherman L. Whipple, who had been advising me in other matters. After Mr. Whipple had carefully gone over the whole situation, he sent the following letter to the President of the Boston Dispensary.

OFFICES OF WHIPPLE, SEARS & OGDEN
TREMONT BUILDING

BOSTON, March 20, 1913.

Mr. EDWARD R. WARREN, *President, Board of Managers, Boston Dispensary, 25 Bennet Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR SIR: — As an incident of certain affairs regarding which I have been advising Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, he has called to my attention the letter of the secretary of your Board under date of March 13 and the previous communication therein referred to.

The situation I understand to be this:

For some fourteen years Dr. Briggs has given freely of his professional services for the benefit of the Dispensary. The clinic which has been under his charge has been satisfactorily conducted. The results have been of great benefit to the community and reflect credit upon the institution.

Entirely without solicitation or even suggestion on his part, physicians of the Staff, better aware than any one else of Dr. Briggs' services and the needs of the institution, selected Dr. Briggs as their President. They thus conferred upon him an honor and dignity to which in their opinion his long and faithful service to the Dispensary entitled him.

Following upon this selection, your Board, or some one representing it, sent word through a confidential messenger to the effect that it was the sense of a meeting of the managers that Dr. Briggs' resignation as President of the Staff is desirable "not later than the regular meeting of the Board in the second week of July."

Upon receipt of this surprising communication, Dr. Briggs conferred with members of the Staff who were his friends and professional associates of years, as to what he ought to do, having in mind the interests of the Dispensary and a proper regard for his own professional standing and reputation. Before he had reached a final conclusion he received your formal letter of the 13th inst. requiring within ten days a definite reply to the communication through Dr. Bailey.

I assume that the gentlemen of your Board of Managers would not take action so vitally affecting the professional standing and reputation of a physician so long connected with your institution, except upon grounds which you believed to be substantial and serious. It is inconceivable that they should have acted without grounds for their action. Some charges must have been made, or some information derogatory to Dr. Briggs has been laid before them.

It seems to me that justice requires that Dr. Briggs should be informed of these charges, of this derogatory information, and the sources thereof, and be permitted to vindicate himself if it lies within his power.

In behalf of Dr. Briggs, I therefore respectfully request you to give to him full and explicit information as to any charges that may have been made against him, any information you may have received regarding him, and, in general, the grounds upon which you make this request for his resignation.

There are certain special reasons for the request which I make, — reasons of which I feel I should inform you.

It is a matter publicly known that when recently Dr. Briggs was appointed by Governor Foss to the State Board of Insanity, there was a concerted effort of certain doctors, personally hostile to Dr. Briggs, to prevent his confirmation. In the campaign thus organized there were sent out scandalous stories concerning Dr. Briggs. These stories have been followed down to their origin; their falsity has been completely demonstrated, and the organization setting them afloat, with sinister purpose, is now completely discredited, and Dr. Briggs has accordingly been confirmed.

Almost immediately upon the announcement of his confirmation, this request for his resignation is communicated to him by your Board. Naturally he associates this action with the hostile movement to which I have referred above.

In my recent conversation with you by telephone you assured me that the matters were in no way connected, but as I said to you then, before Dr. Bailey brought to him your original message, Dr. Briggs had heard exactly what was to be done from the lips of one of the leaders of the movement against him, — a man having no official connection with the Dispensary or its Board of Managers.

You will see, therefore, that whether you are conscious of it or not, the request of your Board for Dr. Briggs' resignation is definitely coupled up with the organized endeavor of the hostile combination to which I have referred above to discredit Dr. Briggs with the Governor, Council and the general public. The request for resignation is thus demonstrated to be either a consequence of this movement which Dr. Briggs claims is a conspiracy to injure his professional reputation, or an integral part of the conspiracy itself.

Dr. Briggs is about to take action looking to a more public and explicit vindication, — a vindication that involves either retraction and apology on the part of the men who have inspired and set afloat these miserable scandals, or one which will fix their responsibility in a definite and drastic form. It is therefore, you will observe, of supreme importance to him to know the actual grounds of your request for his resignation, and to have explicit information as to their connection with the combination which has been pursuing him. It seems clear to me that in view of this significant fact, — that Dr. Briggs' enemies were apprised of your purpose before you put it into effect, — you may fairly be called upon by Dr. Briggs for an explanation.

Dr. Briggs feels certain that most, or all, of your Board of Managers would not for a moment permit the Dispensary, of which you are a Trustee and

executive head, to be used as a catspaw to accomplish the purposes of personal spite and revenge, and much less would participate in an organized conspiracy to do harm to him and his professional reputation and standing.

In our conversation by telephone you indicated a purpose to decline to give the information requested. The significance of such a refusal under the circumstances and the inferences to be drawn therefrom are so unmistakable that I have thought it best to give you this full explanation of the reason why I now repeat in Dr. Briggs' behalf the formal request for information.

It is a matter which, it seems to me, affects each individual member of the Board of Managers. Accordingly, I am sending to each one, for his information, a copy of this letter, in order that each member may know the terms of the request and the precise grounds of making it.

Yours very truly,

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE.

This letter of Mr. Whipple's was answered only by telephone. The real action probably taken by the Board of Managers was shown by their not disturbing me in my position as President or member of the Staff at the Dispensary during the rest of my term of office, and this retreat was undoubtedly their answer to Mr. Whipple's letter, and it was also a tacit acknowledgment of the fact that they had been unable to obtain any proof of the statements against my character and professional ability tendered to them by the Channing group. There was no further opposition to my remaining President of the Staff, and I served out my full term as a member of the Staff in that capacity. I heard no more from them until July 12, 1913, when I received the following letter:

BOSTON DISPENSARY
25 BENNET STREET

BOSTON, MASS., July 12, 1913.

Dr. L. VERNON BRIGGS, *64 Beacon Street, Boston.*

DEAR SIR: — At the regular quarterly meeting of the Board of Managers of the Dispensary, held on July 10, the following vote was passed, which I am requested to communicate to you:

Voted, That Dr. L. Vernon Briggs be not reappointed to serve as a member of the Medical Staff beyond his present term of service, expiring December 31, 1913.

Very truly yours,

MALCOM S. GREENOUGH,
Secretary.

In this action they acceded to and virtually approved my serving the full term to which I had been appointed as member of the Staff. It was an acknowledgment that they had no grounds for forcing my resignation.

I have already quoted a letter from Dr. Adolf Meyer written on February 10, 1912, in which he expresses very frankly his point of view in regard to the attacks upon my character. On March 25, 1913, at the time when the uncertainty of my position at the Dispensary was greatest he wrote me from Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore, as follows:

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — This is a most extraordinary affair. As far as I can judge, all that a man can do under such circumstances is to go ahead with his work and to turn over anything that may turn up to his lawyers and not to concern himself very much personally. It ought to be possible to bring those people forward so as to declare the reason for which they want to interfere with what seems to be the desire of a fair majority. With regard to the Boston Dispensary, I really do not see what Stedman and his friends can do if your appointment has been properly made. I can easily see, of course, that where the press takes up the matter as "the breaking up of a medical ring," there will always be a defence on the part of those who are hit. . . .

My word would be, work representing your ideals and as little polemic as possible; leave the polemic to your lawyer and to your adversaries, and accomplish what will do more than words and what will surely defeat the enemy.

Believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

ADOLF MEYER.

I endeavored to follow this advice of Dr. Meyer, as I had always found his counsel sound, and I never asked for his advice unless I was willing to accept it.

The Medical Staff of the Boston Dispensary had a meeting during the winter of 1913 at Hotel Brunswick, at which they decided to refuse to allow me to resign from office as their President, and requested that I stand firm in defence of their right to choose their own leader. Thus the Boston Dispensary matter was settled by the Staff winning out against the Board of Managers with the help of Mr. Whipple.

As soon as my appointment to the State Board of Insanity was confirmed I gave up my private practice so that I might give ample time to my new work.

I referred the matter of the conspiring doctors entirely to my lawyer. The correspondence with and concerning these men concludes this volume. In a volume following this I shall take up the work of the State Board of Insanity, beginning March 12, 1913, to the time of my resignation, after which I went into the World War.

CHAPTER XIII

Hon. Sherman L. Whipple acts as Counsel for Dr. Briggs. — Dr. Bradford acknowledges being consulted by Boston Dispensary Managers and that He circulated Stories He did not Believe

Early in April, 1913, Mr. Walter S. Glidden of the Governor's Council, previously referred to as in close touch with the medical cabal opposed to me, told me that at the time my appointment to the State Board was before the Council he was called upon or telephoned to many times a day by members of the medical coterie. Mr. Glidden was not personally known to me until by his invitation I finally met him at his office, 51 South Market Street, after which we became very well acquainted. He told me that he never had known such vindictiveness and such powerful underhand work as the medical coterie had used against me; that they had "pestered the life" out of him, and he was sorry he had had anything to do with them. He said he wished some of his friends who had received information against me might have an opportunity to know me personally, and with that end in view he sent me the following letter:

Walter S. Glidden
51 South Market Street

Boston, April 13, 1913.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

My Dear Doctor: — The pleasure of your company is requested at the Algonquin Club Tuesday, April the 8th, at 7 p.m., to dine with a few friends.

Yours sincerely,

Walter S. Glidden.

After this we were the best of friends and he expressed his regret at ever having opposed me.

In a letter dated April 25, 1913, Dr. Henry J. Berkley wrote to me:

> I had quite a long talk about you with Dr. James P. Putnam a few nights ago. As the Doctor is old and conservative, it may please you to know that he thinks you have been very badly treated by the set of men who are running private institutions in the State, and that they have all the time been back of the movement against you. And all of it has been an outcome of the bill against restraint.

Dr. Adolf Meyer, in a letter written to me under the date of April 26, 1913, says:

> Your situation is certainly startling. All I can see ahead is the possibility of getting the allegations traced to their sources and to require a statement concerning their origin before some court of honor.
>
> It is of course important that the whole net is drawn in before this is done so that nobody can hide behind the other. In the meantime, no move which would be an acceptance of their "bribes."

In May, 1913, Dr. Howard, or his friends, put forth statements which were published in the medical journals to the effect that he had *resigned* from the State Board of Insanity. This, of course, was not true, as the history in this book shows.

At about this time, the spring of 1913, Mr. Whipple thought it best to take up the defamatory charges circulated during the time that my name was before the Governor's Council. After going over the matter very carefully and holding interviews with many people who had knowledge of the facts, he wrote to several physicians who had been most active in the campaign against me. Mr. Whipple contended that there had been a conspiracy against me; that the conspirators were physicians and physicians only; that they were, in the main, connected with private

hospitals for the insane; and that the only persons they had been able to bring into their conspiracy were men who were interested in the administration of these hospitals. It is interesting to note that these men were all graduates of the Harvard Medical School, — one of them the Dean, — and were perhaps therefore the more easily prejudiced against a graduate of another institution. That there was such strong feeling in the Harvard Medical group against men from other schools is instanced by quotations which I have already made from the local papers.

No other group of Harvard graduates would have gone as far from mere class feeling as these men, but they had personal motives and sacrificed time, money and their reputations to prevent a man being put into authority whom they feared on account of his knowledge of the way in which the institutions with which they were connected were conducted. They knew that if he was appointed over them he would not only *regularly* inspect their institutions, which had never been done, but would probably put them on a basis where they would be compelled to obey the orders and conform to the requirements of the State Board of Insanity. In order not to confuse my readers I shall ignore dates and follow the correspondence with the several persons separately. Dr. Bradford was one of the willing victims whom Dr. Channing and his group had brought into the situation. He could have had no personal motive, as we were not acquainted and our paths had never crossed.

That Mr. Whipple corresponded with these men individually does not, of course, alter his charge that they were conspiring together. He first wrote to Dr. Bradford as follows:

Offices of Whipple, Sears & Ogden
Tremont Building

Boston, March 27, 1913.

Edward H. Bradford, M.D., *133 Newbury Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Sir: — I have been requested by Dr. Briggs to assist him in vindicating himself from certain defamatory charges which have been in circulation, the origin of which has been traced directly to an organization of physicians which includes you in its number.

The evidence which Dr. Briggs has laid before me tends to establish these facts:

The organization was formed for the purpose of defeating Dr. Briggs' confirmation by the Council as a member of the State Board of Insanity, and in the first instance its activities were directed to that end. Failing in that attempt, these activities are now being directed to securing his resignation or removal from the office of President of Staff of the Boston Dispensary, an office to which he has recently been elected. The evidence shows that this organization has held meetings weekly, or oftener, has employed counsel, detectives and other agents, and that its members have contributed money for the common cause. It shows further that you have been personally active in this matter; that you have referred to Dr. Briggs in terms of hostility; that you have said that you had lost and would lose no opportunity in your wide acquaintance with physicians to discredit him; and that more recently you have been in communication with at least one member of the Board of Managers of the Dispensary in relation to the question of Dr. Briggs' resignation or dismissal as President of the Staff.

As you have no personal acquaintance with Dr. Briggs, your attitude must rest upon information given you by others, and this is very likely true in the case of some of your associates. Dr. Briggs believes that both you and they have been unjustly prejudiced against him by those who are personally hostile and are animated by selfish motives. He doubts whether you really know the underlying spirit and motive of this campaign in which you have been engaged, and he desires that you be informed of some facts which may throw light upon them.

There is a very clear provision in the law relating to insane persons (chapter 504, Acts of 1909, sections 7 and 10) that the State Board of Insanity "shall have general supervision of all public and private institutions and receptacles for insane, feeble-minded or epileptic persons . . ." and that the board shall visit every institution under its supervision at least twice a year, and "shall ascertain by actual examination and inquiry whether the laws relative to the persons in custody and control thereof are properly observed, shall give such directions as will insure correctness in the returns required relative to them, and may use such means as may be necessary to collect all desired information."

In point of fact, however, the State Board has not for years visited at all certain private institutions under its supervision, and no adequate explanation seems to be given for this violation of the law. The result is that the methods

of control and discipline in these institutions have been left to the uncontrolled discretion of the managers.

One of the gentlemen associated with you in the campaign against Dr. Briggs, who is also the proprietor of such an institution, has very recently stated that now the appointment of Dr. Briggs had been confirmed he must at any cost be discredited in some other way, either by having him turned out of the presidency of the Dispensary Staff, or otherwise, and that if he were not thus discredited he would very likely be able to place private institutions for the insane under restrictions as to methods of control, or otherwise, which might affect them very seriously.

Whether you are in sympathy with the motives of these other gentlemen as thus disclosed, of course Dr. Briggs does not know. He suspects that you have not given them careful consideration. You will readily understand, however, that your responsibility for what the organization does is not affected by the fact that you are ignorant of the motives of those who originally inspired it, since the concerted action of those who have participated is of a character to make each member legally responsible for the act of any other, and (what is of more serious importance) legally responsible for the speech and acts of the agents and detectives who have been employed.

The organization itself and the performances of its members and agents constitute a grave infringement upon Dr. Briggs' legal rights, for which I have advised him every participating member is equally responsible. I have told him also that he has a right to demand not only that these activities immediately and entirely cease, but that it is his right that reparation should be made for the very substantial injury to his personal and professional reputation which has resulted from the wholly false and scandalous stories which have been circulated regarding him.

It is distinctly Dr. Briggs' preference not to institute proceedings at law for his vindication and redress. He will do so only as a last resort. He believes that you, and very likely certain of your associates, have been misled, and that gentlemen of your standing have only to be convinced that you have done him a wrong and injustice to respond, as gentlemen, to his desire for vindication and reparation. Dr. Briggs will, therefore, either meet you to lay the situation before you fully and frankly from his own point of view, making a full disclosure of the facts within his possession, or he will appear before any unprejudiced tribunal which may be appointed to consider and determine the truth or falsity of the defamatory stories which have been circulated and the propriety of the motives of those who have attacked him.

May I ask, therefore, in his behalf whether you, either alone or with any of your associates, care to offer any suggestion along this line of procedure?

The situation at the Dispensary is one of importance both as affecting Dr. Briggs and the fortunes of that institution itself. Accordingly, I enclose for your information a copy of a letter which I have written to Mr. Warren in relation to the matter. He has replied, definitely declining to give the information which was requested. Of course, however, disclosure of what has passed between you and your associates and Mr. Warren and his Board of Managers can be compelled by proper proceedings. From every point of

view it would seem that a frank and voluntary disclosure would be preferable. If the matter were to be considered by any such tribunal as I have indicated above, of course a full and frank disclosure as to the Dispensary situation would have to be stipulated.

Yours very truly,

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE.

(Enclosure.)

There was no reply to this. After a second letter from Mr. Whipple Dr. Bradford answered as follows:

133 NEWBURY STREET, BOSTON,
April 5, 1913.

Mr. WHIPPLE, *Tremont Building, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR SIR: — Your first long letter and printed matter was not answered as I thought it was sent me by mistake, as I had not been connected with the Boston Dispensary for many years or in its councils.

In reply to your note, I can only say that all that I know of the matter is that one of the Board of Trustees of the Dispensary mentioned to me that they were in some perplexity, and knowing that I had some experience in hospital matters, asked me of the custom regulating differences of opinion between medical staffs and boards of trustees. As I knew nothing in regard to the organization of the Boston Dispensary I was unable to give any advice.

I know practically nothing of the merits of the case or of the qualifications or career of Dr. Briggs. I am unable to advise you in the matter.

Yours very truly,

E. H. BRADFORD, H.M.S.

(See pages 169, 173, 222, 240, 246.)

To this Mr. Whipple replied:

APRIL 8, 1913.

EDWARD H. BRADFORD, M.D., *133 Newbury Street, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR SIR: — I have your letter of the 5th inst.

I note that you did not reply to my letter of the 27th ult. because you thought it was sent you by mistake. I am sorry that I was not more explicit in my statements. Otherwise, not only would I thus have saved you the mistake of believing that the letter was not meant for you, but undoubtedly you would not in your reply have practically ignored all that I wrote you. I will now endeavor to be quite explicit.

Dr. Briggs charges that you have combined with certain other physicians to prevent the confirmation of his appointment to the State Board of Insanity; that the organization was such as to make each member responsible for the act of any or all the others, and of their agents and detectives; that

this organization, during its campaign, put into circulation a number of defamatory scandals regarding Dr. Briggs, all of which were untrue; that Dr. Briggs has suffered thereby in his professional reputation; that therefore, you, and each member of this cabal against him, are liable to him for the injury which you have thus caused.

He consulted me with reference to securing reparation for the injury done him by the scandals circulated at the instance of the organization and its other acts intended to discredit him. In my letter of the 27th ult., I offered you the opportunity to make that reparation which a gentleman is always anxious to make when he has done another unwitting harm. The evasiveness of your reply indicates to me that the harm you have done Dr. Briggs may not have been done unwittingly but intentionally, on your part, and that you do not propose to afford him any other reparation than that which he can compel you to render in the courts of the Commonwealth. Until I am otherwise advised, therefore, I must proceed upon this assumption.

Accordingly, I am sorry to say, I must bring suit against you in behalf of Dr. Briggs for the cause above set forth, in order that, as a result of this litigation, Dr. Briggs may have the vindication which you refuse otherwise to accord to him. Do you care to put me in communication with your counsel to arrange the matter of service of the writ and giving of bond? If I do not hear from you at once, I must assume that I am constrained to proceed to sue and make attachment of your property in the usual course.

Yours very truly,

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE.

After receiving this letter, Dr. Bradford employed as his counsel Alexander Whiteside, who, after an unrecorded interview with Mr. Whipple, wrote Mr. Whipple a letter as follows:

APRIL 17, 1913.

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE, Esq., *Tremont Building, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR MR. WHIPPLE: — You asked me to check up certain things which you told me in regard to the proposed suit of Dr. Briggs *v.* Dr. Bradford. This I have done with great care, as I wish you to have the most exact information which I am properly able to furnish you. Taking the points up in order, I beg to say:

1. You stated that Dr. Bradford had entertained a certain man, whom you refused to name, at his club and took him around in his automobile. Dr. Bradford never entertained any man who had any connection with Dr. Briggs' matter at his club, and never talked about Dr. Briggs at his club, and as he has no automobile, it is obvious that he could not take any man around in it. Also he has never talked in anybody's automobile about Dr. Briggs with anybody. [See page 173.]

2. You say Dr. Bradford was overheard by a patient in his office saying over the telephone something to the effect that he had received a letter from you and that he supposed it was another of your bluffs.

Dr. Bradford never used this expression about any letter that he received from you.

3. You stated that Dr. Bradford, in telephoning one day to Hancock, N. H., in regard to buying some land up there, was overheard by a woman who was in his office, and who said afterwards something to the effect that she was sorry, but she could not help overhearing what was said, and then continued to the effect that Dr. Bradford ought not to buy any land near Dr. Briggs — that he was scandalous, and that her husband could tell Dr. Bradford more about him; that thereafter Dr. Bradford called up her husband, and that he did tell Dr. Bradford more about Dr. Briggs, and Dr. Bradford asked him to write a letter about him, which the husband did.

No such conversation ever happened, either in substance, effect or detail. Dr. Bradford never thought of buying land in Hancock, N. H., and no woman ever made such remarks to Dr. Bradford about Dr. Briggs, and he never called up anybody's husband and asked him to write him a letter about Dr. Briggs. [See pages 169, 173, 174, 222.]

4. You stated that in a telephone conversation which Dr. Bradford had with a certain agent of the so-called coterie of which you speak (whose name you refuse to mention), Dr. Bradford stated to this agent something to the effect that in all his acquaintance he had never lost and never would lose an opportunity to drive a nail into Dr. Briggs' coffin.

Dr. Bradford never made such statement about Dr. Briggs to any person whatever, either over the telephone or otherwise.

5. You stated that Dr. Bradford had sent this same agent to Dr. Bartol and Dr. Hugh Cabot. [See pages 165, 169.]

Dr. Bradford did not send any one to Dr. Bartol or to Dr. Hugh Cabot.

Your misinformation, if I may use that expression in a perfectly friendly spirit, about this matter seems to be very comprehensive, and I am sure you will be just as desirous of knowing this as I am.

I find, further, on a more careful and scrupulous inquiry, that Dr. Bradford never repeated to any one any details of any scandals which he had heard about Dr. Briggs, and that he never mentioned to any one the names of any persons whose names were involved in those scandals; further, that the letter which I spoke of as having been written to Dr. Bradford did not contain any details of scandals or names of persons involved therein, but did contain the names of certain people in Hancock, N. H., from whom information might be obtained about Dr. Briggs; further, that this letter was never shown by the person to whom Dr. Bradford sent it to any one whatsoever; further, that as you yourself have admitted, Dr. Bradford never attended any meetings or conferences at which Dr. Briggs was discussed, but *distinctly refused to attend any such*, and that he further *refused to in any way communicate with the Council*, or any member thereof, in regard to Dr. Briggs' qualifications for office. If he was quoted to any members of the Council or to others as saying any

of the things which you have intimated to me that he was quoted as saying, he was incorrectly quoted, and whoever quoted him had no authority whatsoever, either to speak for him or to use his name. Further, that Dr. Bradford never has had and has not now any hostility toward Dr. Briggs.

Dr. Bradford's sole connection with the entire affair seems, after the result of a very careful inquiry on my part, to have been that he told *two people who came to him* asking for information in regard to Dr. Briggs, stating that they wished such information in connection with the consideration by the Governor's Council of his name for the Board of Insanity, that he had no information about Dr Briggs; that *he had heard gossip, the nature of which he did not state; and* that he had been told that *information about him could be obtained from people in Hancock, N. H., and that he transmitted to one of these persons a letter which he had received, stating the names of people in Hancock, N. H., from whom information might be obtained.*

I may add that Dr. Bradford tells me that in *regard to the scandal* about Dr. Briggs which you and I mentioned in our conversation walking down town, *he never believed it to be true,* and *he does not believe it to be true now, and he is willing to write a letter to Dr. Briggs to that effect, if Dr. Briggs desires it.*

Dr. Bradford has no wish to harm Dr. Briggs in any way whatsoever. You spoke the other day about his making reparation, but as he, after a most careful consideration of the entire matter, cannot see how anything he has said or done can have injured Dr. Briggs, I, personally, can see no basis of reparation. I understood you were going to write me a letter, stating specifically and precisely what Dr. Briggs wished, but so far I have not received any from you.

Yours very truly,

ALEXANDER WHITESIDE.

The inconsistencies in this letter are obvious. Certainly if Dr. Bradford did not believe the gossip which he had heard he would not have given what gossip and letters he was in possession of to my enemies. As he did give these stories or information to them, the claim that he wished to do me no harm seems a very weak one. He must have known that the persons who wished the gossip spread wanted to do me harm, and he must have got this information together for a purpose. It is interesting to note that Mr. Whiteside in this letter admits that Dr. Bradford had been asked to attend the meetings where I was discussed, which was an acknowledgment by one of their own number that such meetings took place.

Nevertheless, as Dr. Bradford wished to place himself in the position of refuting what had been previously said or done by him in the matter of opposition to the confirmation of my name by the Council, and through his counsel had stated that while he did transmit certain information to those who he knew were working against me, he never believed such information to be true and did not believe it at the time, as his counsel wrote Mr. Whipple, and that he was willing to write me a letter to that effect if I desired it, it was felt by my friends that he wished to make at least such reparation as would clear up the situation in so far as he was concerned. The fact that he was willing virtually to stamp as false the conversations that I had heard him hold on the telephone seemed to me to be proof that he never did believe the charges, but had only used them as a willing tool, both of the Channing group and of the Bartols and Perrys, who had given him the information and false accusations already referred to.

On April 25 Simon Swig met Herbert Parker, who had been employed by the Channing group as their counsel, first to discredit me and later for their own protection. Mr. Parker asked Simon Swig about an interview he had had with Dr. Bradford, and asked if he thought Bradford had worked as a public-spirited man. Mr. Swig answered characteristically that the impression he got was that "Bradford wanted to eat Briggs up after biting his head off — in fact, he wanted to finish him entirely." Parker then asked Mr. Swig what Dr. Stedman had said to him about the detective, and Mr. Swig replied that Stedman had said to him that Briggs was no good and that they must get something on him; and he then told Mr. Parker much of the truth about the case. Mr. Parker told him that it

was not a detective but a young lawyer who went from his, Mr. Parker's, office to New Hampshire for the group of physicians, who paid him a fee and also paid his expenses. (This man proved to be Mr. C. F. Rowley.)

Mr. Whipple, who was not quite satisfied with Mr. Whiteside's letter, as it left some matters still obscure, sent him the following letter to clear up any possible misunderstanding:

April 26, 1913.

Alexander Whiteside, Esq., *60 State Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Mr. Whiteside: — This is my first opportunity to reply to your letter of the 17th instant, receipt of which I acknowledged on the 18th inst.

Our talk was casual street conversation, in which I spoke unaided by my notes. I find, however, that while my memory was not exact, I stated the situation substantially in accordance with my information. I will take up the matters in the order of your letter.

1. I find, by reference to my papers, that Dr. Bradford, while not actually entertaining the man referred to, at his club, in point of fact invited him there. The invitation seemingly was indefinite as to date and never resulted in actual entertainment. The reference to automobile was this: Dr. Bradford invited this person to visit the Medical School and go over the buildings, and in connection with this invitation offered to send an automobile for him.

This man was co-operating with the organization of doctors, and apparently representing their active opposition to Dr. Briggs' confirmation. The point of my conversation with you, so far as related to this subject, was that Dr. Bradford extended these courtesies to a man who he knew was sent to him by Dr. Stedman (or Hugh Cabot) to secure aid in learning matters derogatory to Dr. Briggs and to be used to discredit him. Whether this agent accepted and enjoyed the courtesies which were offered does not seem to me to be of much consequence. The point of the matter is in its bearing upon the question of Dr. Bradford's co-operation with these other gentlemen and interest in the matter of discrediting Dr. Briggs.

2. You certainly misunderstood what I said in relation to the matters stated in this paragraph of your letter. The remark did not refer to Dr. Bradford at all. I said that Dr. Howard, when he received the letter addressed to him, had remarked to Dr. Stedman that he believed the whole matter was a "bluff," while Dr. Stedman replied that he was not sure that it was.

3. You do not quote me accurately in this paragraph. What I did state to you in substance, according to my memory, was this: that Dr. Bradford when telephoning to New Hampshire (not Hancock, N. H.) in regard to taking a house (I did not attempt to state its location), was overheard by a lady —

not a patient, but a family friend — who expressed the hope that Dr. Bradford would not take a house near Dr. Briggs, stating some things derogatory to Dr. Briggs' character, and that her husband knew more about him than she did; that thereafter Dr. Bradford communicated with the husband for the purpose of learning what he knew. The husband wrote a letter to Dr. Bradford, which was turned over to Dr. Stedman for the purpose of assisting the scheme — the existence of which Dr. Bradford well knew — to discredit Dr. Briggs.

I made this statement as indicating Dr. Bradford's connection with the scheme and participation in it, and I do not see that your statement, regarding what Dr. Bradford actually did, changes the situation very materially. The important fact is that Dr. Bradford knew what was going on and co-operated by his assistance. The degree of his co-operation does not seem to be particularly material.

As to the foregoing facts, I have absolute proof. I further have reason to believe that when Dr. Bradford participated as above, he knew that the physician to whom he turned over this letter at the time intended to send an agent to New Hampshire to confer with the people referred to in the Bradford letter, for the purpose of ascertaining something discreditable to Dr. Briggs' moral character; that these other doctors had agreed to contribute to a fund which was to be drawn upon for the expenses of an agent to be employed. We have evidence — which I admit is not entirely convincing — that Dr. Bradford actually contributed to the fund. Perhaps you will be good enough to inform me whether Dr. Bradford did not know the purpose as outlined above for which this letter was to be used, — the intention to send the agent to New Hampshire, — and whether, in point of fact, he did not contribute toward the expenses.

As to your fourth paragraph, I have convincing proof that Dr. Bradford, in a conversation not necessarily with the agent, stated in substance that he had talked regarding Dr. Briggs with physicians from all over the country as they visited the medical school, and that they were disgusted with the idea of his appointment. I have proof of communications between Dr. Stedman and Dr. Bradford. I have further conclusive proof that Dr. Stedman himself stated that Dr. Bradford saw physicians from all over the country and never had neglected an opportunity, and never would, to put a nail in Dr. Briggs' coffin. The inference from Dr. Bradford's statement, verified by Dr. Stedman, is, I think you will admit, persuasive.

5. I did not state — at least I did not mean to state — that Dr. Bradford actually directed this agent to go to Drs. Bartol and Hugh Cabot. My statement was that Dr. Bradford said to this agent in substance that if he cared to talk to Dr. Hugh Cabot and Dr. Briggs' wife's own brother-in-law, Dr. Bartol, they would give an unfavorable opinion regarding Dr. Briggs. Furthermore, I will state that in this same conversation, or at about the same time, Dr. Bradford himself stated to this agent that Dr. Briggs was no good morally or professionally.

Of course, my information upon these points is hearsay. The accredited agent of the organization has made these statements to various councillors

and others in an attempt to defeat Dr. Briggs' confirmation. I do not believe that the agent will deny that he said these things on the authority of Dr. Bradford, or admit that he lied in giving Dr. Bradford's name. Whatever he might say would be, however, of little consequence. The point is that, being the accredited agent of this coterie of physicians, they were responsible for his utterances. Their position would not be helped by proving that he was a liar. Whether his statements were true or false, they were equally responsible for his conduct.

6. As I stated to you the other day, Dr. Bradford did not attend the meetings, and in that respect I was under a false impression in my original conversation. Dr. Bradford knew, however, that meetings were being held. He was informed from time to time as to what was being done by those who attended the meetings and by their agents. He was in frequent conference by telephone with Dr. Stedman. His name was used repeatedly by Dr. Stedman in his conversations. You say yourself that Dr. Bradford, though invited, declined to attend the meetings, because he felt that the Medical School might be involved. I have evidence that he stated more than once that he must not be known in the matter for the same reason.

The fact remains, however, that he was furnishing information to the men who were holding meetings. He was receiving information from them and co-operating with them. He was aiding them in their principal purpose and was instrumental in aiding the circulation of one of the most objectionable and false scandals which were circulated. Under these circumstances, do you really think that the fact that Dr. Bradford refrained from attending the meetings, merely to keep himself under cover, is any less significant than if he had openly attended them?

I have already said to you that Dr. Briggs feels that the participation of Dr. Bradford was less than that of the original instigators and principal promoters of the movement. He lacked the motive of the others, as he is not connected with institutions, public or private, for treatment of the insane. His assistance seems to have been sought on account of the prestige which his position in the Medical School and pre-eminent distinction in the profession would give to the movement. This appears to have been the reason why his name was so frequently used against Dr. Briggs.

As Dr. Bradford did not know Dr. Briggs personally, it is fair to assume that his action was inspired by the prejudicial reports made to him. It is quite possible that he was actuated by entirely proper motives. The fact remains, however, that he has voluntarily aided what is clearly a conspiracy, in the circulation of false and defamatory scandals regarding Dr. Briggs, and that accordingly, under the law, he is responsible, not merely for his actual personal participation, but equally with the others for the consequences which have resulted from the action of those who are essentially partners in the undertaking.

This, then, is the situation:

Dr. Briggs has been unjustly abused and vilified by a cabal of physicians, organized for the purpose. They have succeeded in drawing Dr. Bradford into a more or less enthusiastic connection with their organization. The

cabal, directly and through their agents, has circulated scandalous and unfounded stories which have greatly injured Dr. Briggs. If Dr. Bradford now believes that he was misled and misinformed, and that his connection, such as it was, with the movement was unfortunate, and is willing in some proper form to state these facts and make such amends to Dr. Briggs as any gentleman would be prompted to make under the circumstances, I believe Dr. Briggs would be quite content with such reparation, so far, at least, as concerns Dr. Bradford.

If, on the other hand, Dr. Bradford is unwilling to take such a course, because either he believes the stories which have been circulated, or justifies the conduct of these gentlemen who have drawn him into their association, Dr. Briggs must seek and secure his vindication in some other way; and under such circumstances, neither Dr. Bradford's prominence in his profession nor the admitted facts which you state as to his character and position will prevent his being called to account for the harm which he has assisted in doing to Dr. Briggs, — a harm which has been accentuated and exaggerated by the very fact of Dr. Bradford's high standing in his profession and excellent reputation as a citizen.

I will meet you upon your return from Washington, in an endeavor to have this matter set right along the lines indicated in this letter, but something must be done at once. The present situation is intolerable, and while I recognize my own responsibility for the delay, justice to Dr. Briggs requires that the matter now be speedily and finally dealt with.

Sincerely yours,

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE.

Most of the points of Mr. Whipple's letter had, in a way, been covered by Mr. Whiteside's previous letter, but he wished to sum up the situation. There were some further conferences and correspondence, but of little importance.

About this time Mr. Whipple wrote Herbert Parker a letter, taking it for granted that he represented the Channing group then, as he had done previously, but the group decided to make a fight against having to admit a conspiracy, and therefore each fled to separate counsel. This evidently was why Dr. Bradford had secured Mr. Whiteside to represent him instead of Mr. Parker.

As early as March 28, 1913, on the day after Mr. Whipple's letter to Dr. Bradford, Dr. Stedman sent

for Simon Swig to come to his office. Mr. Swig reported the conversation as follows:

Dr. Stedman said to Mr. Swig, "A doctor called me up and gave me the information that Dr. Briggs is going for us. We have got to stand together. The other doctors are all right. I have confidence that they would not give the thing away. I know about what they are going to say. Now I want to know what you are going to say. Mr. Parker tells me Briggs can't bring suit against us for scandal, because he got confirmed; but he could bring suit against us if we had hurt him professionally. Now, suppose you were brought into court, what would you say?" Mr. Swig replied, "I should have to think that over." Dr. Stedman said, "Mr. Parker said he could do something against us if we had injured his reputation or done anything through malice." Mr. Swig answered, "We have only said he ran a gambling joint, a bucket shop, etc., which information you gave me." Dr. Stedman answered, "He could go for us on that. Now, can't we have something on him to scare him, so he won't go for me? Did he not say to you at one time that I was unscrupulous?" Mr. Swig said, "No." Dr. Stedman said, "Well, he said something to two or three others that I have got against him. I was telling the doctor who telephoned me that we better go to him and give him the olive branch. Cannot you see Holman and find out if Briggs will be satisfied if we fix things up so that he may remain President of the Boston Dispensary as long as he wants it, and also come into the society he knows he could not get in before? Can't you also fix the detective who called on us at our meeting?"[1] Mr. Swig said, "I will see what can be done. It may take some money." Dr. Stedman answered, "I will call up Channing. He will fix that up all right."

[1] This was a detective I employed who got into their meeting and reported their proceedings to me. (L. V. B.)

CHAPTER XIV

Dr. Howard "astonished." — Dr. Stedman excited and worried and wants to "fix things up." — Contemplates leaving the State to avoid testifying. — Herbert Parker appears as his Counsel. — Dr. Stedman admits in His Testimony at Hearing at the State House that He paid Money and attended Meetings to prevent Dr. Briggs' Appointment

On April 12, 1913, Mr. Sherman L. Whipple sent a letter to Dr. Herbert B. Howard similar to that sent to Dr. Bradford, but briefer, stating to Dr. Howard that we had evidence of his connection with the whole matter.

Dr. Howard immediately fled to Edmund A. Whitman (an attorney), whom he employed as his counsel and who wrote to Mr. Whipple that Dr. Howard was "entirely astonished at the letter and at the charge that he was responsible for any stories which have been circulated," and asked for more details, which Mr. Whipple furnished him. Mr. Whitman again wrote Mr. Whipple, *denying Dr. Howard's participation, and stating that Dr. Howard had never heard of the employment of detectives*, and did not contribute money therefor. Mr. Whitman admitted, however, that Dr. Howard's memory had not failed him entirely, inasmuch as he said in his letter of May 1, "Dr. Howard *did confer with a number of Dr. Briggs' fellow practitioners of medicine who were opposed to his appointment to the State Board of Insanity, and he conferred several times with some of them, but that the stories and plans you refer to were discussed at such times is absurd and untrue.*" (See pages 168, 170, 177, 246.)

It would perhaps be well at this point to call to mind the interview which I had with Dr. Howard in

1912, from which I have already quoted in connection with my appointment by Governor Foss in September, 1912. (See page 137.)

As we now had letters from Dr. Howard's attorney denying much of his part in the persecution, and virtually repudiating the stand he had previously taken against me, it appeared that all I could get by further prosecuting a suit against him would be money, which was not what I desired.

On the evening of April 4, 1913, Mr. Swig called upon me and told me that Dr. Stedman had called him on the telephone five or six times within the last two days, and that he, Mr. Swig, had seen him twice. He said that Dr. Stedman was very much excited, and had told Mr. Swig that he wished him to see "Mr. Holman, Governor Foss' secretary, and put up to him a proposition that if Dr. Briggs would drop matters, he, Dr. Stedman, would see to it that Dr. Briggs should remain President of the Boston Dispensary as long as he wished, and that he should also be elected into a society into which he had not been able to get before; also, if Dr. Briggs so desired, Dr. Stedman and his friends would have him put on the staff of the Harvard Medical School."

During Mr. Swig's visit with Dr. Stedman, the latter called up Dr. Bradford, who said he *would communicate with Mr. Warren, chairman of the Board of Managers at the Dispensary, at once, and "fix things up."* He also called up Dr. Howard, but Dr. Howard was not in; he said, however, that "*Howard would be able to straighten matters out.*" Dr. Stedman then told Mr. Swig that Dr. Briggs had done some good work — that he had done some rather remarkable work for the insane at the Boston Dispensary in connection

with the social service, and that he could do good work if he wanted to.

This same evening Mr. Swig called up Dr. Stedman from my house and I listened in. Dr. Stedman was very reserved until Mr. Swig told him that he had been advised to see Dr. Briggs and that he had seen him. Then Dr. Stedman warmed up and said that he had been talking with Dr. Howard who said that as long as Dr. Briggs behaved himself on the Board he would have the right hand of fellowship, and they would co-operate with him and help him, but if he did not behave himself and tried to make trouble and to pry into things they would make it very uncomfortable for him. (This was several days before he received Mr. Whipple's letter.) Dr. Stedman then said on the telephone, "I don't agree with Howard that Dr. Briggs is bluffing altogether, and I am willing to grasp his hand and say that I will be a friend and help him all I can."

Mr. Swig told me on April 14 that at 10 A.M. he was called up on the telephone by Dr. Stedman, who asked him what he was going to say if he got into court. Mr. Swig did not tell him what he was going to say. *Dr. Stedman said that they would have to go out of the State at the time of the hearing.* He said that his lawyer, Herbert Parker, had told him that they could not ask a witness any questions which would incriminate him, but that they would nevertheless have to go out of the State to avoid testifying.

At 2 P.M. on the same day I visited Mr. Swig at his office, and he called up Dr. Stedman at "Bellevue 300," and Dr. Stedman said he felt better now that his attorney, Herbert Parker, had assured him that the whole Briggs matter would be fixed up out of court.

He continued as follows, and I wrote down what he said, as I listened on an extension set of the telephone:

I cannot tell you all over the telephone, but Parker thinks I shall not be called upon to testify, or if I am, I shall only have to tell what I have heard and not what I have said or done myself, nor say anything that would incriminate me. *Since seeing Attorney Parker, I think it may not be necessary for us to leave the State during the hearing.* I do not understand Dr. Briggs' attitude toward Dr. Channing. *Dr. Channing is his worst enemy,* and he appears to be only going for Bradford and Howard. Parker assures me that he is not going to trouble me, unless it is as a witness.

Dr. Stedman, like others of his coterie, did not understand that I wished to use them to bring out facts, by their testimony, — facts concerning the arch-conspirator, Dr. Channing, and that we were weaving a network around the man who was primarily responsible for starting and directing this whole movement.

On April 15, 1913, Mr. Whipple sent a letter to Dr. Stedman, in which he enclosed copies of his letters to Drs. Bradford and Howard. In this letter he said:

You have been, as you know, one of the promoters and principal members of this organization, and as such you are responsible, with your associates, for the injury which Dr. Briggs has suffered. [See pages 166, 171, 177, 184, 204.]

Immediately following this letter to Dr. Stedman, Mr. Whipple received word from Herbert Parker that Dr. Stedman had employed him as counsel. He asked Mr. Whipple what reparation he thought would be satisfactory to me. The draft of Mr. Whipple's letter is as follows:

May 9, 1913.

Hon. Herbert Parker, *Barristers' Hall, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Mr. Parker: — As I stated to you, Dr. Walter Channing appears to be the originator and chief instigator of the entire movement against Dr. Briggs. Some years ago Dr. Briggs and Dr. Channing were firm and fast friends as well as professional associates. Dr. Briggs has exhibited to me letters from Dr. Channing showing relations of most cordial affection and con-

fidence, and special gratefulness to Dr. Briggs for what Dr. Channing spoke of as almost inestimable service in the care of one of his sons. After their professional connection ceased, they used to meet almost weekly, dining alternately at each other's clubs, on terms of the most intimate personal friendship. Suddenly, in a very curt way, Dr. Channing terminated these friendly relations, for what cause Dr. Briggs has never yet been able to ascertain, although he has endeavored to do so through mutual friends.

Since that date, Dr. Channing has pursued Dr. Briggs with a most implacable personal enmity. At every turn of his career, Dr. Briggs has discovered evidence of Dr. Channing's influential hostility.

When Dr. Briggs was appointed to the State Board it appears that Dr. Channing promptly set himself to defeating the confirmation of the appointment. He was primarily responsible for the organization of physicians of whose activities Dr. Briggs complains. While apparently the underlying motive of Dr. Channing was personal hostility, the evidence is that he also feared that Dr. Briggs, as a member of the State Board, would be likely to effect reforms in the conduct of insane hospitals, both public and private, to which Dr. Channing himself was extremely averse. He stated this to several people, in his efforts to interest them in opposition to Dr. Briggs. He enlisted the active support, in the first instance, of those having selfish interests likely, as were his own, to be affected by Dr. Briggs' activities as a member of the State Board. Accordingly, his cousin, Dr. Stedman, became the executive head of the organization. He seems to have been its spokesman (on a very extensive scale). Drs. Howard, Blake and Gay were actively interested. Others, like Drs. George Shattuck and Knapp, were more or less actively attached. The extent of their active participation, however, the evidence in my possession does not so definitely disclose as in the case of those earlier named. You will observe that these gentlemen are all connected with the management of institutions for the insane, either public or private, or both.

To the organization thus effected, it was sought to add Dr. Bradford, whether for the prestige which the distinction of his name and position would give, or so that there might be at least one member not connected with institutions for the insane, or whether for both these reasons, is not quite clear. His refusal to attend meetings and to be known publicly in the matter, together with his actual participation, are referred to in my letter to Mr. Whiteside of which I believe I sent you a copy.

The activities of the different gentlemen involved in this organization of course varied greatly in character and extent. The more active devoted a good deal of time to it. Others merely attended the meetings, gave counsel, heard reports and apparently approved what was being done. There was a great deal of intercommunication by telephone between the times when meetings were held at Dr. Stedman's office. Arrangements were discussed and completed whereby, through different channels of influence, the Governor and different members of the Council might be reached and made to feel influences hostile to Dr. Briggs. Almost no one about the State House with political influence escaped the importunities of some one of these gentlemen to exercise influence against Dr. Briggs' appointment or confirmation. The

activities of the physicians were so far a public scandal on Beacon Hill that they were the subject of current remark as to the malignity, bitterness and unfairness of the attack upon Dr. Briggs.

In our conversation I pointed out to you a couple of articles in "Practical Politics" and one in "Truth," which, as I understand it, represented the knowledge of those frequenting the State House, and their sentiments in regard to the matter. Governor Foss himself has said that for bitterness, malignity and scurrility of abuse, no case within his knowledge ever presented the phases of that which came under his observation in connection with Dr. Briggs' appointment. Members of the Council were buttonholed and consulted at their houses, their places of business, the restaurants where they dined, on the street, in the corridors of the State House, or anywhere that they could be waylaid, by these doctors or the agencies set in motion by them.

Something of the extent of the activities of these gentlemen may be inferred from the fact stated by one of the Councillors to Dr. Briggs, that on a single day he was called to the telephone about this matter as many as twenty-five times, a substantial proportion of which calls were for conversation with your own client, Dr. Stedman.

The organization employed you as its counsel — very likely without knowledge on your part that your retainer covered more than Dr. Stedman alone. As you stated very frankly to me, it thus caused Mr. Rowley to be sent to Hancock, for purposes of investigation, where, as I stated to you, Mr. Rowley evidently went farther in the rôle of detective than you had intended.

The organization employed others as detectives for specific purposes of investigation, and had, as I stated to you, an authorized spokesman in more or less constant attendance upon the Council and Councillors, — a man who himself was a member of one of the State Boards. The different members of the organization, in almost exact concert, spoke in interviews with different persons in the most disparaging terms of Dr. Briggs' professional standing, reputation and ability. In such statements they would not only refer to their own information, but quote their associates as being of similar opinion. Disgusting and defamatory epithets, almost unbelievable as coming from gentlemen, were repeatedly uttered by different men of or connected with the organization. . . .

In the circulation of these scandalous stories, the names of different members of this organization were used as authority for the truth of the statements. There is evidence not only of the agents of the organization, but of members themselves having been instrumental in the circulation of these stories. Dr. Bradford disclaimed having had anything to do with the matter, yet through his counsel he now admits that he interested himself to aid your client, Dr. Stedman, in looking up people who might be of aid in substantiating the particular scandal above referred to; although Dr. Bradford himself says that he does not now believe, and did not then believe, that there was the slightest foundation for the scandalous assertion.

You will note the significance of the statement by Dr. Bradford of his aid in giving currency and authority to a scandal which he now admits he thoroughly disbelieves, and of which he says he believed at the time there was not

the slightest foundation. No incident could, I think, illustrate better the desperate methods adopted by these gentlemen than that a man in Dr. Bradford's position should stoop to aid in securing people to assert and affirm a scandal which he himself says he believed had no possible foundation. I believe the confession of Dr. Bradford as to the falsity of the scandalous invention will have to be the confession of every one of the doctors who, nevertheless, assisted in giving it currency throughout the community.

I have rehearsed these more striking features of the situation at this length because those of the organization like Dr. Bradford, who have taken a less active part in attendance upon meetings, interviewing of people and circulation of slanders, say that the reparation which Dr. Briggs has a right to ask from them (if any) should be of quite a different character and extent from what he might properly ask from one more perniciously active in the dissemination of these defamatory scandals. It may be conceded Dr. Channing is the originator and chief instigator of the wrong which has been done. Nevertheless, all the members of the organization, for selfish and personal reasons or some other reason, have joined in the promotion of a harm to Dr. Briggs, his reputation, and standing as a man and as a physician. The effect of the activities of the different members of the combination cannot be analysed or determined. Neither the law nor common sense requires it. All who have participated in a quasi-partnership or conspiracy, formed for such a purpose, are liable not merely for their own activities, but for the activities of those with whom they have seen fit to combine for the accomplishment of a particular purpose.

Therefore, before the law all these men are equally responsible for those acts which have been done in violation of Dr. Briggs' rights, and which have gone beyond the proper criticism of a candidate for public office, based upon the pure motives of public service, and not upon the selfish motives of private interests or personal hostility.

It therefore seems to me that Dr. Briggs must require that whatever reparation is done shall be done, as the injury has been done, by all these physicians in combination, attempting so far as may be to correct the wrong which they have done.

The question of what reparation can be afforded in place of that which the law gives is, I agree with you, a difficult one. . . .

If anything in this outline appeals to you as a way out of the difficulty without legal proceedings, I shall be glad to confer with you on that basis. If not, I must, of course, without delay, institute proper proceedings for the vindication of Dr. Briggs, and such reparation for the harm done him as the law affords.

Very truly yours,

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE.

In answer to this letter, Mr. Parker sent the following letter to Mr. Whipple:

MAY 13, 1913.

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE, Esq., *care Messrs. Whipple, Sears & Ogden, Tremont Building, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR MR. WHIPPLE: — I have received your letter of May 10 referring to the claims of Dr. Briggs. In view of our several conferences, it is not necessary for me to expressly deny, in behalf of Dr. Stedman, the recitals of your letter, but that there may be no misunderstanding, you will understand that the facts as stated by you are in no respect admitted by Dr. Stedman, and this communication is sent you as relating to a possible compromise or adjustment of matters that might otherwise become the subject of litigation.

I know that in the hope of composing an unfortunate controversy and as reflecting his own sense of justice, Dr. Stedman would unhesitatingly disclaim and express his regret for the circulation of any report falsely attributed to him and which was unjustly detrimental to Dr. Briggs. Any statement falsely attributed to him which was untrue and harmful to Dr. Briggs he would frankly and publicly disavow and express a becoming regret for such incident. Any statement made by Dr. Stedman founded upon a mistaken but honest belief of its truth, he would, upon being shown its falsity, declare his regret for such publication and his belief that such charge was untrue, with an appropriate apology for any wrong that he had so unwittingly done. He would involve no other person in any statement to be made by him, nor would he pay any sum of money as recognized compensation or damages for any wrong for which he was to be held so responsible. The only statement he can make is that of regret *for any unwitting harm he may have done to Dr. Briggs, but he can take no position that would import any wilful, intentional, or, indeed, constructive or actionable wrong done by him.* [See pages 167, 174, 179, 203.]

Whether these suggestions at all respond to what you have outlined in your letter above referred to, I cannot say, but they are intended to inform you of Dr. Stedman's personal attitude in the premises. He cannot, of course, speak as to the position of other physicians whom you have named.

I am,

Very truly yours,

HERBERT PARKER.

This was a very weak refutation by Dr. Stedman of all that had gone before. It was an expression on his part of willingness to make appropriate apology for anything that he had "unwittingly" done, and to explain and express his regrets for any false reports. This my friends wished me to accept as an apology and vindication, but I cannot say that I agreed with them, although I bowed to their decision.

The same day that this letter from Dr. Stedman was written, he called up Simon Swig on the telephone, and Judge McManus, who was in the office, took down what was said while listening on an extension set:

Dr. Stedman said, "Well, Mr. Swig, we must stand together, but we must not be seen together!" He also expressed surprise that Mr. Swig had not been written to or included, but said that undoubtedly Mr. Whipple was going to use him as a witness. Mr. Swig informed me later that on May 26, 1913, he went to Dr. Stedman's office at Dr. Stedman's request, who said to him, "The case hinges on what you and the detective said. The law is that what one said all are responsible for."

In 1914 a Committee of Ways and Means of the Massachusetts Legislature, sitting with the Committee on Public Institutions, held hearings in Room 439 at the State House, conjointly with the Board of Economy and Efficiency, which had been appointed for the purpose of looking into the possibility of reducing the expenses of the State and at the same time making the boards and commissions more efficient. At the hearing on April 7, 1914, the chairman of this board, Hon. John N. Cole, examined the witnesses. Just before he began questioning Dr. Stedman, in his capacity as chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Taunton State Hospital, Mr. Cole was handed a memorandum (said to be in Dr. Stedman's handwriting) containing some questions, and below the questions a penciled note — "Ask Dr. Stedman of Brookline." The questions were:

1. What is the total per capita cost of running the Taunton State Hospital?
2. How does it compare with that of the other institutions for the insane and feeble-minded?

3. Then, although the cost of certain special departments (the farm, for example) is higher than the other hospitals, it is, on the other hand, proportionately lower in other items, so much so that the sum total of per capita expense is no greater than in other hospitals which rank well in the matter of economy?

4. How are the prices of foodstuffs regulated in the State hospitals?

5. How far do the trustees of State hospitals inspect the quality and quantity of food supplied?

6. Should the Board of Insanity, in your opinion, have more control than they now have over the institutions under their supervision?

But it seems that Mr. Cole was more interested in Dr. Stedman's activities against me and in a report made by the "baby member" of the State Board of Insanity, as Roger Wolcott styled himself, of a visit paid by the Board to the Taunton State Hospital. This report Mr. Wolcott made to the Board, and, after an interview with Dr. Stedman, withdrew it, submitting a greatly modified report.

The following is from the stenographer's report of Mr. Cole's questions and Dr. Stedman's replies:

TESTIMONY OF DR. HENRY R. STEDMAN BEFORE THE COMMITTEE ON WAYS AND MEANS SITTING WITH PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS IN ROOM 439, STATE HOUSE. EXAMINED BY JOHN N. COLE, ESQ., CHAIRMAN OF THE BOARD OF ECONOMY AND EFFICIENCY, APRIL 7, 1914.

Q. Dr. Stedman, you are a trustee of the Taunton State Hospital? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Mrs. Stedman is also trustee of what institution? A. Monson Hospital.

Q. As trustee of the Taunton State Hospital you are chairman of the Board? A. Yes, sir.

Q. As chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Taunton State Hospital, how did information come to you that the Board of Insanity had made an investigation that was not favorable? A. I went down one day to see Mr. Wolcott on another errand, not knowing anything about such a report, and while there he read me this rather unfavorable report.

Q. Are you also the proprietor of a private hospital? A. I am.

Q. The name? A. Bournewood.

Q. Are you also a member of the Society of Psychiatry and Neurology? A. Yes, sir.

1. What is the total per capita cost of running the Taunton State Hospitals?
2. How does it compare with that of the other institutions for the insane and feeble-minded?
3. Then, although the cost of certain special departments (the farm for example) is higher at Taunton than in other hospitals it is ~~only~~ on the other hand proportionately lower ~~than~~ in other items, so much so that the sum total of per capita expense is no greater than in other hospitals which rank well in the matter of economy?
4. How are the prices of food stuffs regulated in the State hospitals?
5. How far do the trustees of the State hospitals inspect the quality and quantity of food supplied?
6. Should the Board of Insanity in your opinion have more ~~of the~~ control than they now have of the institutions under their supervision?

Ask Dr Stedman of Brookline

MEMORANDUM HANDED HON. JOHN N. COLE AT HEARING HELD AT STATE HOUSE, APRIL 7, 1914

See page 253

Q. Such an institution has been in existence how long? A. I don't know how long. Dr. Channing founded it about thirty years ago.

Q. Have meetings of that Society been held frequently at your office? A. Not of that Society.

Q. Did you have meetings at your office to devise means of defeating the appointment to the State Board of Insanity of men you did not control or that you did not wish to have appointed? A. There were some meetings held there, but I was not responsible for it all. I certainly opposed a certain member for the Board because I considered it a public duty.

Q. Only one member? A. That is all I recollect now.

Q. Do you recall all the different members that you have recommended as members of the Board of Insanity at your office or other places where certain physicians gathered? A. No — You mean recommended to the Governor? No.

Q. Directly or indirectly? A. I have talked with certain people. Whether it resulted in their seeing the Governor about it I do not know.

Q. Can you recall how much money has been expended for the last five years for the sole purpose of hiring counsel, detectives and other people to promote or defeat the appointments of members of the Board of Insanity? A. I don't know of any money spent to promote an appointment. *I believe some small sums may have been spent to defeat some.*

Q. Can you tell us the name of the counsel employed by the association? A. There has not been any single counsel appointed.

Q. Has not Mr. *Herbert Parker* been the counsel of your association? A. No, not at all. *He has advised me personally, and what payment he has had has come from me personally.*

Q. Could you recall as the result of those meetings who was designated to see the Governor? A. I don't remember now.

Q. You don't know what different doctors were asked to see different councillors? A. No, I don't.

Q. Can you remember at all what process was followed in getting at the councillors and the Governor when appointments were to be made? A. I don't know that people who had influence were asked to see the councillors or the Governor. *I suppose they were seen by different doctors, as often happens when the question of an appointment comes up.*

Q. And nothing was done by your organization that was at all different from the usual proceeding? A. No, nothing was done.

Q. And you are quite sure that you have never engaged counsel to set before the Governor or Council any particulars regarding any one? A. No, I am very sure about it.

Q. Do you know *how much money was expended for the work of promoting or defeating an appointment of a member* or *members to the* State Board of Insanity? A. *No, the amount of money expended for that was a trifle.*

Q. (Handing witness paper). Is that a private paper sent out by you and paid for by you? A. We were all interested in that. I don't remember how it was paid for, whether we took up a collection or not.

Q. May I ask if in your organization you called in Mr. Swig to co-operate with you at one time? A. Mr. Swig came to one or two of our meetings.

Q. Did he come upon your invitation or upon his own invitation? A. He wished to come very much, and I understood from him that another doctor wished him to come, and, to tell the truth, I was quite impressed with his desire to co-operate and to see that the very best men were appointed to positions in the State.

Q. Then he co-operated with you at that time? A. Yes, we supposed he did.

Dr. Stedman was taken off his guard in this interview and made admissions which, it will be seen, corroborated the fact of his having taken part in the conspiracy against me, in spite of the statements of his attorney.

Mr. Whipple also wrote to Dr. George W. Gay, with about the same result as from his correspondence with the other conspirators. A. E. Pillsbury was the attorney employed by Dr. Gay. (See pages 177, 257.)

CHAPTER XV

Dr. J. B. Blake denies his Statements as heard over the Telephone. — A Southard Episode. — Dr. Fred C. Shattuck's Activities. — He acknowledges contributing Money for a Detective to find Something against the Character of Dr. Briggs. — Detective failed to find Anything. — Dr. Shattuck gets nothing for Money contributed

On May 20, 1913, a letter was sent by Mr. Whipple to Dr. John G. Blake, who was Trustee of the Gardner State Hospital, and with whom I had always been on friendly terms previous to my appointment. This letter was similar to the letters sent to the other physicians. Dr. Blake employed as his counsel Nelson P. Vanderhoof. The correspondence resulted in the following letter of denial written by Dr. Blake's attorney:

June 9, 1913.

Sherman L. Whipple, Esq., *Tremont Building, Boston.*

My Dear Mr. Whipple: — After several conferences with Dr. Blake, I am now ready to state our position.

As I understand it, Dr. Briggs' grievances fall under two heads: (1) his treatment at the Boston Dispensary, and (2) certain alleged slanderous statements which he says were circulated by a combination of doctors who opposed his appointment to the State Board of Insanity.

Concerning the Boston Dispensary incident, Dr. Blake knows absolutely nothing whatsoever. He is not in any way connected with the Dispensary; never visits the Dispensary; and never, by conversation or otherwise, did anything to bring about the present situation.

It is true that he opposed the appointment of Dr. Briggs to the State Board of Insanity. In such opposition he appeared before the Governor's Council and warmly advocated the reappointment of Dr. Howard. He considered the latter a great business man and in every way qualified for the position, whereas he knew nothing concerning Dr. Briggs. On this occasion, however, he made no reference to Dr. Briggs; and when requested by the Council to express his opinion of him he refused to do so on the ground that he did not know the doctor well enough to have any opinion concerning him.

On one or two other occasions Dr. Blake conferred with Drs. Gay, Stedman, Knapp, Channing and others, with this same object of securing the reappoint-

ment of Dr. Howard. At none of these conferences or at any other time or place did the aforesaid physicians, so far as Dr. Blake knows, ever plan or sanction the spread of derogatory stories concerning Dr. Briggs. Dr. Blake would not have tolerated any such course.

Concerning the alleged slanders of which Dr. Briggs particularly complains, — to wit, that he kept a "bucket shop," ran a gambling joint, and that his relations with women were improper, — I beg to state most emphatically that *my client never heard any rumors regarding the first two subjects.* He did hear the story concerning a certain prominent woman, and he roundly denounced it as a base slander, *impossible of belief.* He has known the lady in question for many years, and has the highest regard for her as a most honorable woman.

If I am not mistaken, Dr. Briggs also alleges that detectives and other agents were employed by the alleged combination of doctors opposing his appointment. On this point I desire to state that if such agents and detectives were employed by any individual or individuals opposing Dr. Briggs, my client knew nothing whatever of the matter. (See pages 170, 173.)

I also desire to state that if any one in opposition to Dr. Briggs at any time consulted counsel in connection with such opposition, my client was in entire ignorance of this fact.

If, after reading the above statement, Dr. Briggs still feels aggrieved, Dr. Blake is perfectly willing to meet him and state what he has already stated before in a personal interview with Dr. Briggs, — that his opposition has been based solely on the belief that Dr. Howard was the better man for the position; that he never publicly opposed the appointment of Dr. Briggs except as aforesaid; that he never made any comments regarding Dr. Briggs' moral character or his ability; and *that he knows nothing whatever against his moral character.* He will add that he took no part in any conspiracy to defame Dr. Briggs, and that, so far as he knows, no such conspiracy ever existed; that except for the aforesaid ridiculous story, *he heard no statements derogatory to* Dr. Briggs; and *that he denounced that story in no measured terms.* (See pages 171, 177, 186.)

It is understood, of course, that this letter is written with the desire of comprising a controversy that might otherwise result in litigation; and that nothing herein stated is to be considered as an admission of liability on Dr. Blake's part.

I forgot to say that my client never made any contribution to the fund which you say the aforesaid combination of doctors had agreed to raise, and which was to be drawn upon for the expenses of an agent to be employed by them in opposing Dr. Briggs. I found the reference to such a fund in your letter of April 26, 1913, to Alexander Whiteside, Esq. Dr. Blake says he never heard of such a fund, and never contributed any money whatsoever for any purpose in connection with the aforesaid opposition to Dr. Briggs.

I shall be very glad, indeed, to talk the whole situation over with you at your convenience.

Very truly yours,

NELSON B. VANDERHOOF.

Mr. Whipple replied:

JUNE 10, 1913.

NELSON B. VANDERHOOF, Esq., *Tremont Building, Boston, Mass.*

DEAR MR. VANDERHOOF: — I thank you for your very frank and explicit letter of the 9th instant. I shall take pleasure in a conference with you as soon as it will suit our mutual convenience. In the meantime, let me correct one apparent misapprehension. Dr. Briggs does not complain of his treatment at the Boston Dispensary as an independent matter. He feels that it is merely an injurious consequence of the combination or conspiracy against him.

Sincerely yours,

SHERMAN L. WHIPPLE.

About this time Dr. E. E. Southard of the Psychopathic Hospital said to me that he hoped I would win out, and that it was "time new blood should be injected into the Board," which made me feel that he not only approved the confirmation of my appointment but was quietly supporting it. But when in 1914 I expressed this opinion to my friend, Dr. Vincent Y. Bowditch, he seemed doubtful. He said that he had stated to Dr. F. C. Shattuck that I had Dr. Southard's enthusiastic support, but that Dr. Shattuck had denied this and said that he had written to Dr. Southard in regard to me, and quoted Dr. Southard's reply. After Dr. Bowditch told me this, I immediately got into communication with Dr. Southard, expressing surprise at his inconsistency, and asking him frankly for a copy of the letter he had written Dr. Shattuck, as I wished to know his true position. In reply I received the following letter from Dr. Southard, enclosing a copy of his letter to Dr. Shattuck, which was dated nearly two years before:

Boston State Hospital
Psychopathic Department

74 Fenwood Road, Boston,
March 31, 1914.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *64 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Dr. Briggs: — I enclose a copy of the now famous letter which I wrote to Dr. Frederick C. Shattuck concerning your appointment. I am sending a copy of the letter to Mr. Wolcott (who, as you know, had inquired of me just how far I had ever gone in opposition to your appointment) and to Dr. Shattuck himself (who had not preserved either the original or a copy of my letter).

I have received a letter from Dr. Bowditch thanking me for coming and talking freely. He says "were other men willing to do the same, there might have been less trouble in this unfortunate business."

Yours sincerely,

E. E. Southard.

The enclosure was as follows:

October 18, 1912.

Dear Shattuck: — I have just received your letter *re* Briggs, sent to the Medical School, having been away for a few days.

As a State official, connected both with the State Board of Insanity (as Pathologist) and with the Psychopathic Hospital, I have never held or expressed an opinion for or against Briggs. Under advice, I did not sign the petition for Howard, on the same ground.

As an alienist and citizen, I am opposed to Briggs' appointment to the Board of Insanity, since his enthusiasm and activity do not make up for his lack of ability or desire to co-operate with some of the best men in our community (Copp, Howard, Stedman, Channing, Bullard and others) to further the cause of the insane.

I understand, in part from Briggs' own lips, that he is in a bitter attitude toward Channing. But why he should let a personal feud spread to Copp and Howard I cannot see.

I am at a loss to understand what could have been twisted into a belief that I favored Briggs for the appointment. I may have said from time to time as other opponents have said, that "he was better on than off," but with the unmistakable connotation that he should be off the Board.

Now that Briggs has resorted to the political device of calling up various officials under the Board, in order to register their attitudes for and against, I feel that he must be regarded as a politician, and as such, out of place in a board like the Board of Insanity.

I feel as if an effort to intimidate were being made by Briggs, with the fear of an after-election slaughter.

135 Marlborough St.

Dear Dr. Biggs,

It occurs to me that it may be fair to tell you that I joined State in writing the letter of I strongly opposed your appointment to the State Board of Insanity my activity ceased as soon as the appointment was made.

To the best of my recollection I have neither said or done anything since your appointment to embarrass your work in any way. I certainly have

not wished and do not wish to do so.

I should be very glad to find from your conduct in office that the unfavorable opinion of your qualifications for such office which I thought myself forced to form upon a year ago was mistaken.

You are welcome to make any private use you may wish of this note. But it is not, of course, for publication. I remain

Yours very truly

F. B. Sanborn

Jan. 10 1914

I believe I have sometimes said (as I have heard Howard say) that I had nothing personally against Briggs, but it seems preposterous to transform this into an expression of "enthusiastic support."

Faithfully yours,

E. E. SOUTHARD.

Southard was an opportunist, and when he wrote this letter I am quite sure he felt that I never would be on the Board, and that his interests lay with the men who opposed me, but at the same time he did not intend publicly to oppose me or get my ill-will in any way. After my appointment I could have asked for no stronger support than I received from Dr. Southard. As events will show later on, he not only furthered my plans but publicly stated that I had accomplished more during the few years that I was on the State Board of Insanity than the old Board had done in all the years of their service. I will let his activity and his statements speak for themselves later in my account of the work of the reorganized Board, as I have already done in my book on the "Psychopathic Hospital." Many times he expressed regret for ever having written Dr. Shattuck that letter.

This would, perhaps, be a good time to refer to the activities of Dr. F. C. Shattuck, who was connected with the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded as a member of the corporation, and who was brought into the cabal of physicians by Stedman and Channing. After my confirmation I had a conversation with Dr. Shattuck, who invited me to his office and told me of his activities against me. Among other things, he said that he had been one of those who, in their efforts to prevent my confirmation had contributed toward the employment of a detective to ascertain whether there

was anything in my past life which could be used to my detriment. He said that the detective had visited the places where I had resided at different times, and that he had paid $50 as his share of the expense; when *Dr. Stedman came to him for a further contribution*, Dr. Shattuck said he told him that as he had already paid $50 and got nothing for his money, he was not going to contribute any more. He further said to me that he believed the stories circulated were false, and that the only doubt now in his mind was whether I was able to carry on the duties of the office as well as Dr. Howard had done — that he did not pretend to know about that, but he hoped I had the ability. I asked him if he would write a letter embodying these statements which I could use, and he agreed to do so. The next day I received the following:

13 Marlborough Street,
January 10, 1914.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — It occurs to me that it may be fair to write you — that I should state in writing — that although I strongly opposed your appointment to the State Board of Insanity my activities ceased as soon as the appointment was made. To the best of my recollection, I have never said or done anything since your appointment to embarrass your work in any way. I certainly have not wished to do so and do not wish to do so.

I shall be only too glad to find from your conduct in office that the unfavorable opinion of your qualifications for such office which I thought myself forced to form upwards of a year ago were mistaken.

You are welcome to make any private use you may wish of this note, but it is not, of course, for publication.

I remain,

Yours truly,

F. C. Shattuck.

CHAPTER XVI

Dr. John W. Bartol called upon to assist in clearing up False Stories to avoid Resort to Courts of Law. He not only does not help, but denies his Part in the Activity of the Cabal. — Resorts to Failure of Memory. — Dr. Hugh Cabot acknowledges his Activities in Opposition to Dr. Briggs. — Dr. Briggs' Early Relations with Dr. Channing and as Physician to his Family. — Association with Dr. Channing. — Relations broken. — Dr. Channing's Strange Behavior followed by his Active Persecution of Dr. Briggs. — Drs. Bowditch and Goldthwait fail to persuade Dr. Channing to State his Reasons for persecuting Dr. Briggs. — Dr. Channing admits the Secret Meetings of the Cabal to prevent Dr. Briggs' Confirmation and the Employment of a Detective or Agent to gain their Ends

Mr. Whipple, knowing Dr. Bartol's connection with the medical cabal, as the reader has learned from the telephonic communications already set forth, no one would be surprised that he wished to get in touch with Dr. Bartol. At his request, I sent Dr. Bartol the following letter:

July 23, 1913.

Dr. John W. Bartol, *1 Chestnut Street, Boston.*

My Dear John: — Knowing that you are aware of the persecution of me by some of the private hospital physicians, and that through their activities several of Polly's relations have been drawn into active participation in this persecution, Mr. Whipple is desirous of consulting you as one of her relatives who knows all about it and with whom he can freely talk. He has therefore asked me if I will put him into communication with you, to the end that there may be a clearing up of these false stories, insinuations and innuendoes without resort to the courts.

Sincerely,

L. Vernon Briggs.

I received this rather astounding reply:

JOHN W. BARTOL
1 CHESTNUT STREET

JULY 24, 1913.

DEAR VERNON: — I shall be glad to confer with Mr. Whipple at any time if I can be of service. It occurs to me that perhaps I should be better able to help if I were better posted as to the general situation. As a matter of fact, I have heard only echoes of the trouble, and do not even know, except by random, what persons are involved.

Shall I wait to hear from Mr. Whipple in regard to time and place of meeting?

Sincerely,

JOHN W. BARTOL.

In view of what I and others had heard Dr. Bartol say on the telephone (see pages 162, 183) this letter had only one interpretation, and that was that he intended to secure such information as he could for his own and others' use, and that he did not really intend to cooperate or help me in any way. His not being able to get the information sought made him bold to testify, as he did at the hearings of the Cabot Will Case, when he was asked the following questions and gave these answers:

In the direct examination of Dr. Bartol in the Cabot Will Case, in 1915, Lawyer Choate asked Dr. Bartol:

"Now, at any time in the spring of 1913 did he [Mr. Louis Cabot] say anything to you with reference to anything Mrs. Briggs had said to him about Dr. Briggs?" Dr. Bartol answered —

"I went out there [to Mr. Cabot's] in the afternoon one day, I think to call for Mrs. Bartol and take her home, or something, and walked into his library, and he was sitting there at his desk, and I sat down and I think we passed the time of day, and he said, 'John, what do you know about this opposition to Briggs' appointment on a State Board?' and I said, 'Why I don't know anything about it, except what little the papers say about it;' and he said, 'Well, Poll has been out here, and she has been telling me that there is a conspiracy on foot and that some of our' — or 'her,' I think he said — 'some of her relatives are pursuing Briggs, and she worries me with it. I wish she wouldn't come out here talking to me about it,' and I said, 'Well, I know nothing whatever about it.' "

Q. Did you subsequently receive a letter from Dr. Briggs? A. Yes, I had a letter from Dr. Briggs in, I think, about ten days.

Q. Yes. Have you got the note now? A. No, I haven't got the note now.

Q. Can you state what the note was? A. It was a very friendly note. I don't remember exactly the wording of it, but it ran something like this: "You know what a trouble I am in with the innuendoes and accusations that are being made about my character in reference to the proposed appointment by the Governor. Mr. Whipple is very anxious to see you, as Polly's next relative, to talk things over and see if something cannot be done to clear up the trouble." I don't remember just how, but it ran along like that.

Q. Did you, in response to that, go to see Mr. Whipple? A. Yes, Mr. Whipple telephoned me very soon and made an appointment, and I had two interviews with Mr. Whipple.

Q. And did you do what you could to help him? A. I did all I could to help him.

Then follows the cross-examination of Dr. Bartol by Mr. Whipple:

Q. Dr. Bartol, is this paper which I hand you a copy of the letter you received from Dr. Briggs? A. Well, as far as I know, it covers the ground.

Q. It looks like it to you? A. It looks just like it — yes, as I remember the note.

Q. You spoke, Doctor, as if at the time that letter was written it was with a view to getting your help for his confirmation. A. Did I?

Q. Excuse me, Doctor. Well, I understood it so. You didn't mean it to be so understood, did you? A. I don't remember what I said.

Q. Yes. In point of fact, Dr. Briggs had then been confirmed and was a member of the State Board of Insanity, was he not? A. Unquestionably.

Q. Had you not received a circular, signed by a large number of physicians, requesting that you sign and send in an endorsement [of Dr. Briggs]? A. I have no recollection of it.

Q. Will you say you didn't? A. I would say to the best of my knowledge and belief I didn't. I haven't the slightest recollection of any such circular. I get a great many.

Q. Don't you remember that a circular was sent to all the physicians in Boston, enclosing a slip, which, if signed, made an endorsement of Dr. Briggs for the position for which he had been nominated? A. I don't remember it, and I didn't know it was so. It is news to me if it was so.

Q. At all events, you never did sign such a paper. A. I have no recollection of ever seeing such a paper.

Q. Now, when you received this letter, did you not know that certain private hospital physicians had strenuously opposed Dr. Briggs? A. No, I did not.

Q. Hadn't any of them talked with you about it? A. They had not.

Q. Hadn't you any conversation with any one on the subject? A. I think I had.

Q. With whom? A. I think I had some conversation with Dr. John G. Blake.

Q. When? A. I haven't any recollection at all. It was during a period of one of the times at which his name was being considered. Which time, I

haven't the slightest recollection. I should have said it was either in the fall of 1912 or the spring of 1913, if those dates agree with the time at which his name was being considered.

Q. Were you not aware that certain physicians were meeting together from day to day or week to week, and arranging a campaign to prevent Dr. Briggs' confirmation. A. I was not. [See pages 167, 169, 183.]

Q. Did you not have telephone messages or personal interviews with any such physicians? A. I did not.

Q. Had you any talk with any one else except Dr. Blake on that subject? A. I think I had a talk with a close personal friend of mine one day. This had no — this conversation was confidential and personal conversation. It had no relation to any activities.

Q. What do you mean by activities? A. The activities that you mean.

Q. I didn't say anything about activity. A. Well, you described certain activities. Those are the activities that I am referring to.

Q. That is, the activities of meeting with a view to preventing his appointment? A. Precisely.

Q. Do you mind giving us the name of the doctor? A. I do.

Q. Was it a doctor? A. It was a doctor — not practicing medicine.

Q. Was your talk with him prior to your talk with Dr. Blake? A. I haven't the least thing to fix it by. I met him on the street one day, just as I met Dr. Blake. I was crossing the street.

Q. You can't fix the date of that? A. I can't by anything in my daily business. I came out of the house. He was walking down the street. I stopped and chatted with him a little while.

Q. And you don't wish to give either his name or what was said? I do not.

Q. Do you remember of conversations with any other person on the subject-matter of Dr Briggs' appointment to the State Board? A. I remember being stopped on my rounds at the City Hospital one day — and that must have been early in June, 1913, because I didn't go on duty until the first of June — by one of the officials of the hospital, who stopped and asked me a question.

Q. Did you, while his name was pending for confirmation until his appointment either time, hear of the fact that stories had been circulated regarding him by these private hospital physicians or otherwise, or what the stories were? A. It is very hard for me to pick out in my memory what was new to me in the things that you told me and what I had heard rumors of before. I had no first-hand information of any of it until my interview with you, but I had heard some rumors.

Q. What was the date of the interview with myself, Dr. Bartol? A. Well, I can't give you that. It was subsequent to this letter and before the first of August.

Q. Yes, before the first of August and after July 25th. A. I had two interviews with you in that interval.

Q. Now you say you had heard certain rumors before that — when first? A. I haven't the slightest idea of it. I can't fix it. I can't remember what

the rumors were. They were so far away from what things that you told me that it all seemed new to me in my interview with you.

Q. Then you remembered some things [other] than what I told you? A. These rumors — I don't know what they were.

Q. You don't remember what they were? A. I don't remember.

(Discussion with court about dates followed.)

Q. Now my question is, Doctor, whether you knew of two bills which had been introduced to the Legislature prior to Dr. Briggs' nomination to the State Board, the first in January, 1910, for an observation hospital, and second, what was known as the Restraint Bill, January 14, 1911. . . . A. I have an indistinct recollection of the bills. I shouldn't have known, unless you said so, that they were Dr. Briggs' bills. I remember the fact of his advocacy of some such bills. I had no direct knowledge at the time of it.

Q. Do you remember that certain physicians who had private sanitariums objected to the observation hospital? A. I don't remember anything about the course of those bills through the committee at all. I took no interest.

Q. Did you know, in point of fact, that that bill became law signed by Governor Draper in 1910? A. I didn't even know that.

. . . . . .

Q. Don't you know that this Restraint Bill, so called, was very bitterly opposed by Dr. Channing and Dr. Stedman and a number of other physicians who maintained private hospitals or sanitariums? A. No, I don't. I have no knowledge of the fact. I don't remember it now.

. . . . . .

Q. It was a matter of public knowledge — Dr. Briggs' advocacy of the Restraint Bill, was it not? A. I don't know that.

Q. Well, I mean public knowledge in the newspapers. A. I don't know that.

Q. Well, didn't you see it in the newspapers? A. I don't know that. I haven't any recollection of it in the newspapers. I have a recollection of knowing it.

Q. Have you now told us, Doctor, all — everything that you can remember with regard either to your knowledge of activities or participation in activities affecting Dr. Briggs, either in connection with his advocacy of the Psychopathic Hospital or the Restraint Bill, so called, or with reference to his appointment and confirmation, or with reference to his confirmation by the Council as a member of the State Board of Insanity? A. Why, I remember declining to go to a meeting which was stated to be for the purpose of furthering the opposition. That is the only thing that I can remember. [See pages 167, 182.]

. . . . . .

Q. Well, now, when was it that you were invited to a meeting of those who were opposing Dr. Briggs, and declined to go? A. Well, that was, to the best of my recollection, in the spring of 1913 — pretty surely not before that date.

. . . . . .

Q. Do you know Dr. Stedman? A. Well, I know him when I meet him on the street. I never talked with him.

Q. You don't mean that you never talked with him? A. I mean that, absolutely.

Q. Do you know Dr. Channing? A. I know Dr. Channing.

Q. Did you have any communications with Dr. Channing during this period? A. None whatever.[1]

Q. Did you know that Dr. Blake was one of those who met together with a view of opposing Dr. Briggs' nomination? A. No, I didn't.

Discussion about dates — witness interrupted.

A. Possibly they were trying to get the Governor not to send his name in again.

Q. Who? A. I don't know. These people that you were talking about. I don't know who they are.

Q. Why did you happen to say that these people were trying to get the Governor not to send in his name again? A. I say perhaps they were. I have nothing to fix these two dates by. I thought that I met him in the spring of 1913, but you say that it is very unlikely that I met him in the spring of 1913 [meaning Dr. Blake], but I don't know.

Q. Did you know from some source that there was an endeavor to get Governor Foss not to send in his name in the spring of 1913? A. I haven't the slightest knowledge of it — not the slightest; merely that — only that suggestion. I can't tell you how I happened to make it. It was just out of a clear sky. I make it again.

Q. Yes, I agree it was out of a clear sky. I was wondering just how you happened to make it. A. I will make it again. I haven't the slightest basis for it. [See pages 167, 171, 183.]

Bearing in mind the telephonic communications previously reported, this testimony, to put it charitably, shows how very poor Dr. Bartol's memory was. His attitude from the time of my appointment, which was, from all appearances, a great disappointment to him, had been definitely unfriendly, judging from reports which came to me from many directions; and his wife never lost an opportunity to poison the minds of family connections and others who would have naturally been loyal and friendly to me and my family. One undisputed fact stands out most forcibly, and that is that Dr. Bartol, my wife's brother-in-law, a fellow member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, who pretended for years to my face to be most

[1] Dr. Bartol was intimately acquainted with Dr. Channing, having had a relative under Dr. Channing's care at his sanitarium in Brookline off and on for several years.

friendly, and who knew that I had successfully treated one of his near relatives for mental disease, never offered in any way to see that justice was done when I was attacked, or, so far as I have ever learned, spoke a good word for me or about me to any one. On the other hand, I know him to have taken active steps to discredit me and ruin my reputation, although he was never man enough to come out and acknowledge the part he had surreptitiously taken.

Dr. Hugh Cabot, my wife's cousin, was interviewed by one of my attorneys, Henry D. Tudor. He also seemed more anxious to obtain information than to give it, but he *acknowledged that he had circulated propaganda against me and had taken an active part for a long time in preventing my confirmation;* but, as in the case of the Bartols and of Mrs. Lilla Cabot Perry, another cousin of my wife's, Mr. Whipple advised against any proceedings, on the ground that they were relatives of Mrs. Briggs. There was no doubt of their animosity and malicious interference in my affairs by spreading stories unfounded and untrue. Mr. Whipple advised ignoring their activities as beneath contempt. They had proven themselves unworthy of our recognition as relatives or as individuals either then or in the future.

There has never been any reason in my mind or in the minds of my friends to doubt that the opposition to my appointment on the State Board of Insanity and to all my work in those years would have been merely that of fair competition had it not been for the malice of Dr. Channing, who could not rest until he had made every effort, not only to discredit my professional work, but to ruin my personal reputation.

His motive I have never been able to discover. I have already given a short account of my relations with Dr. Channing in my book "Occupation *versus* Restraint," and I will now give further documentary proof of our intimate and cordial relations for many years, — years during which he depended upon me for advice and help, never making any important decision as to his medical work or the care and bringing-up of his children without conferring with me. He told me of the struggles of his youth — that he had had criminal tendencies which he had overcome by almost superhuman effort; and he told me that he intended to leave his brain (with a statement of what he had been through and how he believed he had corrected any abnormalities in it) to a society in Philadelphia for scientific study, and charged me to see to it that his instructions were carried out in this matter.

To go back to my first acquaintance with Dr. Channing. In the year 1893 Miss May Whitwell wrote inviting me to visit her in Intervale, N. H. In her letter she said: "Dr. and Mrs. Walter Channing are here. Mrs. Channing — if you will rely on my intuition — I feel you will like very much; Dr. Channing, also, if you don't know him already, I think you will not regret the opportunity of doing so now. I respect him highly and like him thoroughly. He is broad, sensitive and charitable."

I went to Intervale and met Dr. Channing and his wife, and we became friends. The following year he decided to place one of his sons under my care. I was then studying medicine for my degree, although I had been practicing since I was seventeen years old, and had the right, under the then existing law, to

practice. Afterwards he placed his father in my care, and later an uncle, who was one of the inventors of telegraphy. Two members of his immediate family presented problems, one of which Dr. Channing rightly felt was medical. In putting this case in my hands he wrote on September 2, 1894:

I proposed to Mrs. Channing that we should send him travelling with a very good and wise man, if we could find one — having him study; but she wisely says, "After these years of home instruction, here he is — and would even the best of men be able to save him?" He does not seem amenable either to up-and-down methods or to the most kindly and easy ones. I approve of your management and shall absolutely leave the details to you. To go back to his immediate education; I approve of the methods you are instituting with him. I wish you had an entire year at your disposal to give him. This I know very well you have not. Supposing his future was given into your hands, what would you do with him? Please give this your best thought, and if you felt that some plan in your own hands offered a chance of success, let me know. I wish hardship and removal from pernicious surroundings. I shall back you up in every way. I hope you can keep him in hand until at least about October 1, and on no account is he either to return to his home in Magnolia or Brookline. I look at him solely as a sick boy, morally if not legally, and the relation I bear to him is rather a hindrance than a help. Sentiment makes us careworn and unhappy, while to him it is an empty word. Write soon again. I thank you for your full letters and have perfect confidence in your judgment.

Yours very truly,

WALTER CHANNING.

In a letter dated from Brookline, September 11, 1894, he says:

If you think you can leave him in safety, why not do so for a week? I shall feel very sorry to have you go, but must trust to your judgment in all things. He will deceive you, probably, as far as he can, but surely a whole life of good example must make some difference. That may tell after a while.

The agreement you have made with the boy strikes me as very good, provided it really binds him. The better kind of influence you have started up for him I am most anxious to continue straight along in an unbroken course.

On October 9, 1894, Dr. Channing wrote to me:

I feel very much indebted to you for what you have done.

And again, in a letter dated January 12, 1895, he says:

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — Enclosed please find check for the balance of my boy's expenses. I feel glad he is back, and feel most indebted to you for your kind, wise and sympathetic oversight. I shall depend on it in the future, as in the past, to carry him over those dangerous shoals on which he has been so nearly lost.

Yours very truly,

Walter Channing.

I give only a letter now and then of the great number that I received from Dr. Channing. The following letter from him was dated Brookline, Mass., April 8, 1895:

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — Your letter of the 5th duly at hand. I have found my boy certainly very much improved when he was here on his vacation. His expression and bearing were very much better, and I feel quite sure that he did not make many mistakes — perhaps not any. The change for the better is almost as striking as was the change for the worse.

I should be very sorry to have your influence withdrawn from him, for it is to you that we owe what has been accomplished. If it were not for taking so much of your time and strength, I should certainly not wish to have your relation with him disturbed. He has learned to rely considerably on you, and it would be hard for him to lose such a source of help. We feel so grateful to you for what you have done that we cannot at all express it in words. You have been largely instrumental in saving the boy — of that there is no doubt.

Yours very truly,

Walter Channing.

On December 16, 1895, Dr. Channing again wrote to me a letter in which he said:

You have the full responsibility. I have written him saying you would be responsible for him during his vacation.

Yours, with keen appreciation of your kindness,

Walter Channing.

Things went on in this way. I had charge of several members of the family, and devoted time and strength and such skill as I had to them. He wrote to me from Brookline, March 24, 1899:

My Dear Dr. Briggs: — I have been meaning to write you for some time, but have not actually sat down to do so until now. My boy came home last Saturday evening, looking as well as usual. As far as I can make out, he is much interested in his work, and means to stick to it. He is certainly far happier than he has been for years. With plenty of hard, honest work, he is the impersonation of happiness. I hope you are well and not working too hard. You must save your strength for the future.

I am certain you will have a prosperous career, and I am anxious to see you with your sign up. Launched on the professional ocean of whose billows you have already had some experience, you will be able to pour oil on them to a greater degree than many men.

Yours very truly,

Walter Channing.

In August, 1899, Dr. Channing invited me to the boat club at Riverside for dinner, and there proposed that I should go into partnership with him. The question was discussed at length, and was the beginning of our association at his sanatorium.

On September 19, 1899, in answer to a letter saying that I felt I must stick to my work rather than go away with his son on his vacation, he wrote:

"You must go with . . . if you possibly can, for his good," and he added, "You must borrow of me at any time if it will help you out."

Up to this time I had not received any money for my services. In addition to the medical care of and responsibility for certain members of his family, of handling his son's finances and doling out his allowances and being medically and morally responsible for him for four years, I had given Dr. Channing himself much time in consultations and in assistance with his work. This offer (which I did not accept) to loan me money so that I could leave my work and go off with his son was all the consideration that he had shown in return for my services other than by words and in letters. But I was glad to do this service for

him because I felt that I was doing some good. I took much interest in the medical problems presented, and had no reason to suppose Dr. Channing would not be my friend for life. The question of money payment for such services naturally did not come up between us, both being professional men.

On October 15, 1899, Dr. Channing wrote me from Magnolia in regard to a position that had been offered me at the Carney Hospital:

> It has occurred to me to suggest to you that Carney Hospital should not stand in the way of your regular medical work of a private kind. That must be first. Young doctors often make the mistake of putting charity work first when it should be second. Excuse this advice, but it comes from an "old man." You are sure to succeed and largely by doing well on your early cases. You know so many doctors now that you need not hurry to know more.

And in a letter of November 4, 1899, he says:

> You, with your unselfish willingness to work for others, will be specially liable to the temptation to assume other people's burdens, the weight of which will break your back and perhaps give you professional ricketts. I hope you are not hurrying too much and take plenty of good food. You know my great desire that you should devote your entire attention to your profession, to the exclusion of every man, woman and child anywhere in creation.

Dr. Channing's wife was also in constant correspondence with me about members of the family. She was a devoted follower of a Mrs. Newcomb, a "mental healer." She attended many meeting and lectures on mental healing and similar subjects, from which she received great help. Dr. Channing was also a believer in Mrs. Newcomb's teachings, and frequently attended the meetings, and had Mrs. Newcomb come to his hospital to treat certain patients. Nevertheless, when in trouble, Mrs. Channing often turned to me for advice and action. Her letters, of which I have many,

contain numerous expressions such as the following about another member of the family, on February 28, 1900:

Please advise me of the best course for me to pursue in the matter of my boy. I want to be his helper, but sometimes our best friends seem unsatisfactory, and I may have to seem so until he realizes the truth. In spite of these childish setbacks, his progress is encouraging. I might go to see you to-morrow afternoon, quite late, if you are to be in your office.

Sincerely yours,

ANNA K. CHANNING.

After many years of contact with me, medically and socially, Dr. Channing told me that I was the only physician he knew whom he could trust with his sanatorium, and he bore out this statement by investing some thousands of dollars in the purchase of my house that I might be free to take entire charge of his sanatorium while he himself went to Europe.

On June 2, 1900, he wrote from Brookline, Mass.:

I am anxious to complete our future arrangements, and we will get together soon for the purpose.

We did get together, and in August we discussed our final arrangements, and I told him that if he wanted me enough to take a house off my hands which I had just bought and fitted up for my office, I would go to him for a year. I later received a letter from him confirming this arrangement:

MANCHESTER, August 25, 1900.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: . . . As to your house, 114 Mount Vernon Street, I will offer to take the house now off your hands at $12,500, which I believe you paid for it, if you desire, and then you will have your money free. I do not think 114 a good location for our office, which should be on Boylston Street, I think, as cars no doubt will run over it directly to our hospital. I hope you can familiarize yourself with hydrotherapy and electricity fairly well by November. My boy looks forward ardently to seeing you. It occurs

to me that I shall be in Boston next Wednesday. Cannot you lunch with me at the Union Club somewhere about 12.45. You need not answer this, as I shall be at the club anyway.

Yours very truly,

WALTER CHANNING.

I made myself ready to give hydrotherapeutic and electrical treatments, and I established a hydrotherapeutic plant in his sanatorium immediately after I took charge.

On June 8, 1901, I wrote Dr. Channing a long letter regarding my future plans and arrangements, in case I should continue with him for longer than the year of agreement. In it I said that instead of the assistants which I then had I should want a superintendent working under me, and that I should want to be guaranteed, as my part of the net proceeds, not less than $10,000 a year, together with the three afternoons for my private work each week which I had under the then arrangement. My letter continued:

At the end of six months, your hospital is running full. You have no accommodations for more patients than we now have. Perhaps you remember you said you intended to remove the sanatorium from Brookline to some other place near Boston where taxes and land were much cheaper, where you desired I should remain in charge, — you to visit two or three times a week, — and you said you would leave the moving of the present sanatorium to new quarters and the arrangements for a new sanatorium entirely to me, subject to your approval.

I then made him four propositions, any one of which would mean that his income from the sanatorium would be reduced, if the sanatorium remained at its present size, in case I was to do all the work and be tied down to the details; and in each insisted on having a superintendent to take the routine executive work from my shoulders and leave me free to devote my time to the medical care of the patients.

Dr. Channing, though not displeased with my letter, was not ready to relieve me of the details of the work nor to pay me what I felt would be my just share of the proceeds if I continued to do most of the work. His answer, from which I omit personal matters pertaining to the patients, was as follows, written while he was abroad:

LONDON, July 24, 1901.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Your very nice letter was handed me by Mrs. Channing. I am sure you have most successful years before you, for you have the elements of success. I believe you can be of great help to a large number of people, and more especially in the community at large and not when the restrictions of a hospital are imposed upon you. And I would not be willing to keep you in bondage, as a hospital man must be. I have the greatest confidence in you. I value your friendship, and am sure I shall call upon you in the future and rely on you in many ways. If I had not faith in you, you may be very sure I should be uncomfortable every night I go to bed and think of the hospital now; so be sure of my confidence and regards, and that it is best not to have you remain at the hospital after the lapse of your year has nothing to do with any lack of this.

To answer the question if you can give up the work November 1, I will say yes, and tell you privately that I shall try to get Dr. Knowlton back again, as so far he has apparently made no plans for the future with definiteness. . . .

We are all very well, and, I believe, having a good time. On the 29th we plan to go to Devonshire, perhaps remaining there for ten days, then we return here for two or three days, and then probably go to Scotland for a month. Please give my kindest regards to all the patients, and believe me,

Yours very truly,

WALTER CHANNING.

On August 8 he wrote a long letter from King Arthur's Castle Hotel, Cornwall, telling of his travels in Great Britain. In answer to a letter which I had written him, he said, "I think all you have done is quite right in every way," and in a later letter dated August 25 he said he should not be at all grieved if he found his office occupied by a good patient when he returned, adding, "You know my desire to avoid details, to which you have kindly adhered." I im-

mediately cleared out his office, made it into a bedroom and kept it filled, so that when he returned from Europe, every room in the institution was occupied by paying patients.

When he returned, he told me that the year I had been in charge was the most successful year the sanatorium had ever known, professionally and financially; and when we decided to dissolve our arrangement there, he made several propositions for another arrangement in the city, but as I did not wish to enter into any further business entanglements with him or any one else at that time, he made the proposition that we have an office together, and for some time afterwards we shared an office on Boylston Street. Finding it very noisy there, I decided to remove to the water side of Beacon Street. While we then severed all business connections, we remained socially intimate, and he discussed his work with me and consulted me in regard to his patients and decisions in his family life, and I often saw his patients for him. In order to keep up the intimacy of our relation, we agreed to lunch together once a week, usually alternating between our clubs, and these lunches were often followed by a visit to Keith's or one of the other theaters. On November 26, 1901, he wrote from Brookline:

> My Dear Dr. Briggs: — You are very good to ask me to lunch with you. I should very much like to do so on Saturday, and shall be at the St. Botolph Club on that day at 1, unless I hear from you to the contrary. I hope that my boy may have the pleasure of seeing you soon. I am sure it would do him good.
>
> Yours very truly,
>
> Walter Channing.

There was no break nor any unpleasant incident in our cordial relation for three years, at the end of which

time suddenly and without any explanation I received the following note:

BROOKLINE, MASS., November 27, 1904.

MY DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Your letter of the 25th, asking me to lunch at the St. Botolph Club, at hand. I am sorry that I cannot accept your invitation, for various reasons.

Yours truly,

W. CHANNING.

In answer to this I telephoned, asking Dr. Channing if the following day would be convenient, as at times we were prevented for professional reasons from keeping our luncheon appointments. He then informed me that we should not have lunch together any more, but gave no reason in answer to my inquiries for an explanation.

Soon after this I found that he was disloyal to me and was interfering with my patients and attempting to undermine me in positions which I held. He had put my name up for membership in the Boston Society of Psychiatry and Neurology some time previously, but now withdrew it, and informed the committee that he did not wish me to be a member and should oppose any proposal for my election to the Society. Learning that he was attempting to injure me in other ways, I demanded an interview with him. So emphatically came my demand that he appeared one day at the Boston Dispensary and listened to what I had to say, but made no satisfactory response. I felt almost as if I were talking with a mental patient, so negative was he during the interview. In spite of my reiterations that I had not the slightest idea why he should become unfriendly or take his present attitude toward me, in spite of my pleading and even demanding that he tell me his reasons, he left me without the slightest explana-

tion of the cause of his behavior. Matters went on in this way for several years.

It was not until March, 1905, that he severed his connection with the Boston Dispensary. After the first two years he had allowed me and his other associates to do all the clinical work, though he had asked that the reports go in under his name. It had been so long since he had visited the Dispensary that, when he came to resign, he did not even know the superintendent's name, as the following letter indicates:

69 Newbury Street, Boston, Mass.,
March 7, 1905.

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs, *208 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.*

Dear Dr. Briggs: — Dr. Channing telephoned me last evening to inquire the name of the superintendent at the Dispensary because he said he wished to send in his resignation at once. He requested me to bring to his office in the Warren Chambers the instruments of precision which you will remember he brought to the Dispensary and which we have used for a long time. I presume that it will be desirable for us to continue making the same measurements in the future, so that it will be necessary for you and me to buy similar measuring instruments. . . . I will try to come to the Dispensary Thursday morning to talk with you about the matter.

Very truly yours,

Arthur C. Jelly.

Dr. Channing's attitude continued unfriendly, and in 1906 I felt that I must communicate with him again, and wrote a letter from which I quote the following:

Dear Dr. Channing: — I do not care to go on indefinitely with our present status. I do not even know whether you are my friend or my enemy. Our last interview was not pleasant. It was especially unpleasant to me as you accused me of being unfriendly, without giving me the least intimation wherein I had been unfriendly, although at the time I told you that I could not conceive of anything that I had said or done to you or to any member of your family that was unfriendly, and that if you would tell me what I had done or what had been told you I would certainly acknowledge it if it was true, and I told you that I stood ready to apologize for anything that I had done or said that was unfriendly or unprofessional. I could not say anything more. In all this time I have failed to recall an unfriendly act or word that I have said to you or about you or your family.

WALTER CHANNING, M. D.

Cor. Boylston Street and Chestnut Hill Avenue.

Dictated. BROOKLINE, MASS., Nov. 27, 1904

My dear Dr. Briggs;-

Your letter of the 25th, asking me to lunch at the St. Boltoph Club, at hand. I am sorry that I cannot accept your invitation for various reasons.

Yours truly,

W Channing

Dr. L. Vernon Briggs,
Boston, Mass.
208 Beacon Street

See page 279

It would seem to me that this could be cleared up in a perfectly friendly manner if there is any misunderstanding, but matters cannot go on as they are now, and it is not my intention that they should. I feel all the time that I am sailing under false colors. Certain physicians and friends do not understand your attitude towards me, which, during the last two years and in several instances, has been, I am sure, what you would consider unfriendly and possibly unprofessional if I should take the same stand toward you. This may be only with your personal and particular friends, but indirectly it comes to me in a way that you must know is not satisfactory. If it is your intention to have no further relations with me, either socially or professionally, I want you to come right out and say so.

Very truly yours,

L. Vernon Briggs.

No answer came to this letter. In the meantime I had been asked by friends and relations of several of his patients to assume professional care of them away from Dr. Channing's sanatorium, but in every instance I refused to take over any of his cases or have any professional relation with his patients.

I waited two years before writing to him again. In the interval I received letters and verbal communications from friends and from other physicians, advising me of his antagonistic attitude and of his underhand methods of continually attacking me. One of these letters was so convincing that I felt compelled again to take the matter up with him, and on February 9, 1908, I wrote him the following letter:

Walter Channing, M.D.

My Dear Sir: — I want you to know what other people think of your opposition to me. The enclosed is only one of many letters I have received, some from my medical friends speaking more plainly. I am just as much in ignorance of your reasons for unprofessionalism to-day as I was at our interview [referring to interview at Boston Dispensary in 1904], and I can honestly say that I have never been able even to imagine any cause for your conduct and your disregard of every law and rule of the medical code of the Massachusetts Medical Society, to which you and I belong. If I have done or said anything I ought not to, I want to know it and correct it if possible. If the wrong is on your side, I shall expect you to do the same; but some one besides

you has now got to decide for both of us — I hope, privately. Otherwise it has now got to become a public matter — which you have been instrumental in making it already.

Very truly yours,

L. Vernon Briggs.

But this letter brought no reply, nor did the efforts of my friends to obtain an explanation from Dr. Channing meet with any better success.

After waiting several months without any response from Dr. Channing, I consulted Louis C. Southard, Attorney at Law. Mr. Southard felt that I had been most patient, and was himself incensed at the attitude of Dr. Channing. He immediately wrote to Dr. Channing, who referred him to Moorfield Storey, his counsel. I had several interviews with Mr. Southard and also with Mr. Storey in the presence of Mr. Southard, and Mr. Storey assured me that he, as counsel for Dr. Channing, had been unable to ascertain the reason for Dr. Channing's antagonism to me. He said that he was as ignorant of the cause as I was. In the meantime, some of my friends deplored my taking legal steps, believing that they could obtain from Dr. Channing information which would bring about a solution of the difficulty. Dr. Vincent Y. Bowditch first had an interview with Dr. Channing, but without any result. Dr. Joel E. Goldthwait also made every effort, but got no light upon the situation.

They and others, however, begged me to desist from legal procedure, and whether or not it was wise, I yielded to their entreaties and let matters rest in the hands of my friends. Later I felt this to have been a very unwise procedure.

I give below some of the correspondence. Dr. Goldthwait wrote:

372 Marlborough Street, Boston,
November 16, 1908.

Dr. Walter Channing.

My Dear Doctor: — I have recently gone over quite carefully with Dr. Briggs the question of the strained relations which exist between you and him and which led to the institution of the suit now pending. From Dr. Briggs and from the correspondence which he has received from you I have learned as much as seems necessary for me to form at least a fair opinion of the situation. After most careful consideration I have advised Dr. Briggs, as has Dr. Bowditch, to withdraw the suit, not for a moment feeling that he has not a perfectly just claim against you, but because we feel that the cause of medicine, in its broad sense, would be better served by such sacrifice on his part. Dr. Briggs has consented to follow the advice of Dr. Bowditch and myself in this matter, and we are writing you to let you know that the responsibility for the withdrawing of the suit abides with us. In closing, please let me emphasize what I have already stated above — that it seems to me that Dr. Briggs has a just cause for the attitude which he has taken in the matter, and that the withdrawal of the suit is urged only on the highest ethical grounds.

Very truly yours,

Joel E. Goldthwait.

No acknowledgment of this letter was received from Dr. Channing until a month after the day it was written, when Dr. Channing wrote as follows:

Brookline, Mass., December 16, 1908.

Dr. Joel E. Goldthwait, *Boston, Mass.*

My Dear Dr. Goldthwait: — I received some time ago a letter from you about Dr. Briggs, and I intended to acknowledge it at once, but delayed, wishing to think it over. It then got mislaid and escaped my attention temporarily.

Begging your pardon for this delay, I remain,

Yours very truly,

Walter Channing.

Following Dr. Goldthwait's letter, Dr. Bowditch wrote:

506 Beacon Street, Boston,
November 20, 1908.

Dr. Walter Channing, *Brookline, Mass.*

My Dear Doctor: — For many reasons it has been impossible for me to add anything to what I said to you at our interview last summer about my friend Dr. Vernon Briggs.

The result of my visit to you was a distinct disappointment to me, in that I failed to get any frank statement from you as to what your cause of grievance was against one to whom, not long before your marked change of attitude, you had professed in correspondence which I have seen apparent respect, gratitude and high regard.

It would seem useless for me, however, to seek from you further explanation now.

My only motive in writing is to state that, although my sympathies in the matter, after investigation, are entirely with Dr. Briggs, and although I cannot think but that he has been treated most unjustly and unkindly, I have, after consultation with others, and especially with Dr. J. E. Goldthwait, urged him to desist from taking any legal action in the matter, feeling confident that it is better for him to bear injustice than to go through the nervous strain of a law suit such as has been proposed. Even with the full knowledge that Dr. Briggs has been actuated by no low motive of any possible pecuniary gain from such a procedure, but merely by a desire to counteract the effect of what he feels has been a professional injury to him, we have urged him to desist from taking further steps in the matter, believing that the future will show his worth as a man and as a physician, regardless of the action of others.

What decision Dr. Briggs may feel it right to make I do not know. I merely wish to let you know what friends of his have felt and have advised in the matter.

I neither desire nor expect any acknowledgment of this letter, and remain,

Yours very truly,

VINCENT Y. BOWDITCH.

Accepting the advice of my friends, my counsel, Mr. Southard, wrote the following letter to Dr. Channing's counsel:

TREMONT BUILDING, BOSTON, MASS.,
December 14, 1908.

MOORFIELD STOREY, Esq., *735 Exchange Building, Boston, Mass.*

MY DEAR MR. STOREY: — In relation to Dr. L. Vernon Briggs' grievance against Dr. Walter Channing:

I had a number of consultations with Dr. Briggs and with several of his friends. It was evident that Dr. Channing's attitude and conduct was not approved by them. I am informed that Dr. Vincent Y. Bowditch had an interview with Dr. Channing, and possibly Dr. J. E. Goldthwait also.

Dr. Bowditch has given me a copy of a letter which he wrote to Dr. Channing November 20, in which he stated that his visit was a distinct disappointment in that he failed to get any frank statement from your client as to what the cause of his grievance was against one for whom, not long before, he had professed such apparent respect, gratitude and regard.

He further stated in his letter that, although his sympathies, after investigation, were entirely with Dr. Briggs, who he thought had been treated most

unjustly and unkindly, that after consultation with others, and especially with Dr. J. E. Goldthwait, he had urged him to desist from taking any legal action, believing that it was better for him to bear the present injustice, and that the future would show his worth as a man and as a physician, regardless of the action of others.

I am informed that Dr. Goldthwait has written to Dr. Channing in the same strain, but I have not seen a copy of his letter.

Dr. Briggs, while feeling deeply the injustice done him, bows to the opinion of his associates, and I am instructed to inform you that he will take no further steps, at least at present.

Dr. Channing's last appointment [to the Board of Trustees of the Boston State Hospital, including the Psychopathic Department] was the result of Dr. Briggs' efforts. It was Dr. Briggs who agitated the subject and went to the Finance Committee with the plan to have Boston give over to the State the property and maintenance and care of the Boston Insane Hospital. It was he who got the Finance Committee to get the mayor of Boston to sign the bill that he, Dr. Briggs, had originally drawn up. After the bill had got before the legislative committee, Dr. Channing interested himself and ignored Dr. Briggs, although Dr. Briggs still continued his efforts to have the bill become a law; and this was finally done, and Dr. Channing, as you know, received the appointment.

Dr. Channing is indebted to Dr. Briggs for most important services rendered to him and his son, services which Dr. Channing has been willing to receive without making any payment therefor.

Dr. Briggs assures me that Dr. Channing never sent a patient to him in his life, other than members of his immediate family or more distant relatives, but that he, Dr. Briggs, had sent a number of patients to Dr. Channing. These services Dr. Channing has been willing to accept without acknowledgment. In short, Dr. Channing's whole conduct, coupled with his refusal to make any explanation, either to mutual friends eminent in the profession or to Dr. Briggs, is very singular, and doubly strange from one occupying such a prominent position.

I cannot refrain from saying that I believe, with Dr. Bowditch and Dr. Goldthwait, that Dr. Briggs' position will be recognized by the profession generally as much more honorable and dignified than that assumed by Dr. Channing.

I have written at length, because, while Dr. Briggs yields to the advice of his friends, he wishes to have Dr. Channing informed, through you, of his reasons for his decision not to prosecute his just claims against Dr. Channing further, and to reiterate his charges of injustice.

Very truly yours,

LOUIS C. SOUTHARD.

I will give one more instance at this time, by Dr. Channing's own admission, of his being in what Mr. Whipple called a conspiracy against me. This was at a

time (in 1914) when, as a member of the medical cabal, still active against me and endeavoring to abolish the Board upon which I was serving (believing that such a desperate procedure would be the only way to eliminate me), he was summoned before a legislative committee at the State House. The summons was made at my request. I take from the official transcript of the testimony the following:

TESTIMONY OF DR. WALTER CHANNING BEFORE THE COMMITTEE ON WAYS AND MEANS SITTING WITH PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS IN ROOM 439 STATE HOUSE. EXAMINATION BY JOHN N. COLE, ESQ., CHAIRMAN OF THE STATE BOARD OF ECONOMY AND EFFICIENCY, APRIL 7, 1914

Q. (By the Chairman, John N. Cole.) Dr. Channing, you are a trustee of the Boston State Hospital? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you a private hospital? A. I have. The Channing Sanitarium.

Q. Are you also a member of the Society of Neurology? A. I am.

Q. As a member of that Society have you *attended meetings at the office of Dr. Stedman?* A. They were not meetings of any committee or meetings of that Society — *just men that came together.*

Q. And the meetings have been held when there was a vacancy in the State Board of Insanity? A. Yes.

Q. *Who would usually be in attendance* besides yourself and Dr. Stedman? A. I don't know as I can remember. *Drs. John B. Blake and George W. Gay.* They have nothing to do with the Society of Neurology.

Q. These meetings were held for the purpose of favoring the appointment of members of the State Board of Insanity? A. Yes.

Q. *Dr. Howard went to some of these meetings?* A. *Some of the meetings.* I don't know as he went to them all.

Q. Were most of these connected with State boards of trustees? A. I think so. I think it was purely an accident.

Q. Do you recall a fund to promote or prevent the appointment of persons to the State Board of Insanity? A. No.

Q. Do you recall the employment of counsel in any case? A. No, I don't recall any. *No regular counsel was employed.*

Q. To the best of your knowledge and *belief was not a detective sent from the office of an attorney* to do certain work for this group of men? A. *I think a clerk in the lawyer's office was sent.*

Q. In the letter sending him to you was he not mentioned as a detective on whom you could rely? A. I don't remember.

Q. *How often were these meetings held?* A. I don't think there were *more than four or five.*

Q. As a result of those meetings who was delegated to see the different councillors and the Governor? A. I don't think there was any special one, as a rule.

Q. *It was usually arranged so that some one would see the Governor and Council?* A. *Yes, sir. No particular plan about it.*

Q. Did your organization present to the Governor Dr. Baldwin as a candidate? A. I don't remember.

Q. Did your organization take any active steps to bring about the resignation of a member of the State Board of Insanity in order that a particular person could be appointed? A. I don't remember.

Q. Your private hospital has quite close relations with the State Board of Insanity? A. The same as any other.

Q. Can any person be committed to your hospital without the permission of the Board of Insanity? A. The same as any other institution.

Q. Have they made regular visits according to law? A. I think quite regular visits.

Q. Have they made these visits twice a year? A. I think the Board has made regular visits.

Q. Can you recall a certain period when the State Board of Insanity did not visit the institution at all? A. I could not without looking it up.

Q. Could you give any idea how many years? A. I could not.

Q. *Are they giving it more attention at the present time?* A. *As far as the members of the Board are concerned.*

Q. Have all recommendations made by the State Board of Insanity been complied with? A. I think so. [See pages 166, 168, 171, 175, 176, 177.]

CHAPTER XVII

Dr. William Sturgis Bigelow a Friend of Dr. Briggs. — Dr. John B. Hawes, 2d, apologizes to Dr. Briggs. — Suits against the Cabal dropped by Dr. Briggs at the Urgent Request of his Friends. — After a Complete Investigation of the Stories circulated by the Cabal, Hon. John Chipman Gray, Dean of Harvard Law School, makes his Report

Among my advisors at this time was Dr. William Sturgis Bigelow, who for years had been a neighbor and a friend. Our acquaintance began in 1890, and since that time he had called upon me for advice and assistance in problems of his own, and I had reciprocated by calling upon him. I had kept him in touch with my affairs in which he was always interested, but there was a period in the spring of 1913 when he did not respond, and I did not know until later that he was away from Boston at the time. The information came to me in the following letter:

56 Beacon Street, Boston,
July 31, 1913.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — I succeeded in getting the keys of 60 yesterday, and succeeded in rescuing your letter from the accumulated circulars and dust which covered it. What I cannot understand in your position is what you expect to gain in these suits. You have got your appointment; you have got everything you were fighting for; the victory is with you. If there is any further move to be made, it seems to me it is for the other side to make it. If an attack involving misstatements had been the means of preventing your attaining an object, then there might be a question of dealing with the attacks; but if the attacks have been made and have not prevented your attaining your object, what is the use of continuing the fight after you have won?

I know it is rather hard for a high-strung, sensitive man like you to come near enough to practical politics to feel something of the give and take of blows, not all of which are above the belt, which are part of the normal, daily experience of men who are regularly in the business. But if you will stop and compare everything that has been said about you with what is normally said about any candidate for office, you will realize that no one runs for office in this community without having general attention called to the fact that he habitu-

ally, as Mulvaney says, "puts his foot through every one of the ten commandments at least once in every twenty-four hours." And you will further realize that, when the election is over, the man who is elected does not keep the charges against him in the public mind by taking them up piecemeal and attempting to disprove them. You have got everything you want. Why not let the rest drift out of sight astern? It will only stay in sight while you keep a string tied to it.

Yours sincerely,

W. S. Bigelow.

My answer to his letter was as follows:

August 5, 1913.

William S. Bigelow, M.D., *56 Beacon Street, Boston.*

Dear Dr. Bigelow: — Your letter of July 21, with enclosures, is received, and I hardly know what to say concerning your present attitude; but as you and I have known each other for over twenty years, I am going to be frank with you as you have been with me.

You took a strong interest in my case at first, and when you called at my house one day and heard my story, which was not as strong a case as I have put before you in the Bradford matter, you advised me to consult counsel and bring suit for libel, and went so far as to advise me to see your attorneys.

After further consideration, and hearing more, you advised my bringing suit against one or two of the principals rather than so many people, to which I later assented, as I thought it good judgment. At the same time you said you would be very glad to see the correspondence showing something of what was going on.

What I want to say is this: I never pretend to be more than I am, but if I am only the most insignificant person in the Commonwealth, I believe that even Dr. Bradford had no right to deliberately set out to ruin my reputation, and while some of his friends might turn against me for seeking justice and bringing him to account for what he has done, the public and every fair-minded citizen would uphold me in standing up for the reputation of myself and my family. I do not believe you would for a moment allow them to rest where they are, or that you would want me to drop everything and retire to my shell a discredited man. I did not seek the appointment in question. This I have told you before. The letter I wrote you I did not write with the intention of conveying to you that I was in a dispirited frame of mind. I said then, and I say now, that my professional future would be ruined if I allowed these people to go on in their despicable way, and I agree with you that if I should not win this case it will be through a miscarriage of justice only.

You ask what I expect to gain by these suits. I expect to stop persecution, which is as flagrant now as it ever has been. Only two weeks ago the Boston Dispensary, at the instigation of Drs. Stedman, Howard and Bradford, if I am informed correctly, voted to drop my name from the Staff. One of these men in question only last week started the circulation of a story that I was

"impossible" on the State Board of Insanity, which is absolutely false, as there has not been a word of discord or an inharmonious action since I have been placed on the Board. I cannot keep bulletins out before the public stating that there is no discord in the Board, and giving the reasons why I am dropped from the Dispensary Staff after fourteen years of service, or giving reasons why these physicians are still persecuting me. Something else must be done, and it must be done in such a way as to stop the persecutions. I agree with you that my appointment on the Board vindicated me, but only so far as that appointment was concerned. It did not prevent people who did not know even about the appointment from believing the stories which have been circulated. It did not prevent these men immediately getting together and planning to discredit me in other ways.

I did not start these suits until after I was appointed and confirmed and found that the persecutions did not end there but were being continued in every possible way in every position I now hold, not only to discredit me with physicians who have previously been friendly with me, but my enemies would like to make it impossible for me to hold the positions.

Although I deny being in practical politics, or in politics at all, and deny that this is a political position, I am not afraid of a fight, and, as you know, I never have been afraid of a fight for myself or others. I am willing to take and give blows, but not below the belt, not behind the back. . . . I have not gotten everything I want until I am let alone — until these men who have been working against me cease their persecutions. . . . I am a little befuddled now at the stand you take in your letter of July 21. We all deplore publicity, but if some of the physicians take the stand they now take, they force the case into the courts. . . . I do not wish to impose upon you, but I am enclosing the correspondence with Dr. Stedman, excepting his first letter, of which I have not a copy. It may throw a little further light on the situation, and clear up some things in your mind which seem to give you the impression that these men have done nothing for which they should apologize and promise not to do so any more.

Faithfully yours,

L. Vernon Briggs.

Dr. Bigelow answered the above letter from the home of his most intimate friend, Henry Cabot Lodge, as follows:

East Point, Nahant, August 12, 1913.

Dear Dr. Briggs: — I owe you an apology for delay. A headachy week is the reason. Yours of the 5th and its enclosure have made the situation clear to me for the first time. It is much worse than I supposed it. It is inconceivable that such charges should have been made, but if they have been they ought to be squarely met and nailed. They are perfectly definite. You told me part of one of them before. I thought you ought to take action on that. *A fortiori*, I think you ought to on the whole.

I am surprised and sorry to find that my letter was so unfortunately worded as to give you a wrong impression of what I was aiming at. The "God Almighty and black beetle" view of the situation did not remotely occur to me. The last thing I intended was to hurt your feelings. Please consider the phrase reversed.

In regard to your suggestion that I advised you in opposite and contradictory senses, I see your point, and it is my own fault if you misunderstood me. My letter ought to have been more detailed in order to make the connection clear with what I said before.

That evening at your house you told me "they" said that you had kept a bucket shop. I do not remember that you told me who "they" were, so that my answer was impersonal. I said "Why don't you sue them for libel?" and added that Hill, Homans and Barlow were good lawyers, and advised you to go and talk it over with them. . . . But the contents of your last letter are a different thing. There is no lack of definiteness about it. If anybody said those things, it means fight, in court or out. The charges are outrageous. They demand the fullest public retraction and apology, and if I were in your place I would not stop until I got it from everybody who has any vital connection with them.

Whether this result can best be reached by a general attack all along the line, or, as I suggested, by concentrating your fire on the enemy's headquarters, is purely a question of legal tactics. It is a thing for your counsel to decide. My own opinion on such a question would be about as valuable as Judge Shaw's on the subjective symptoms of pregnancy.

But to a layman it seems as if, since no machine is stronger than its weakest part, in a group of similar suits the breaking down of one would tend to weaken the others. Conversely, gaining one would strengthen the rest. If I were obliged to decide what to do, I would concentrate on one or two suits to begin with — not necessarily against the principals; that is, *where the evidence you can bring to bear is strongest.* The evidence is the thing. Reputation counts for something, of course. Your own reputation ought to be a sufficient defense against these monstrous accusations. Dr. Bradford's friends, of whom I am one, would find it hard to believe that he made them. I am not in the least weighing your reputation against his. I assume that honors are easy on that point. It is a question of proof, not of inference. If President Hadley accused President Eliot of horse stealing, he would have to prove his case.

Mr. Gray is, I believe, the recognized head of the American Bar. You are in touch with him and also with Roland, who is wise in his generation. Why not talk it over with them. This is no disparagement of Mr. Whipple. I do not know him. He may be perfectly capable of handling the matter alone. He doubtless would be the first to tell you if he had any questions on that point. But it seems to me that in such serious business you cannot have too many or too good advisers.

I need not tell you that you have my entire sympathy and best wishes.

Yours sincerely,

WILLIAM STURGIS BIGELOW.

Following up the matter of Dr. Hawes, whom I considered only a tool in Dr. Howard's and Dr. Channing's hands, Dr. Bowditch sent for him, and after having a serious talk with him on the part he had taken in spreading stories derogatory to my character, in his active opposition to my appointment (see pages 145, 149, 162), Dr. Hawes wrote me the following letter:

JOHN B. HAWES, 2d
29 GLOUCESTER STREET

BOSTON, MASS., November 11, 1913.

DEAR DR. BRIGGS: — Yesterday I had a long talk with Dr. Bowditch and discussed with him late affairs concerning you. While I was frankly opposed to your appointment, it was furthest from my thoughts to maliciously injure you or your reputation personally. I cannot but feel now, as I look back at things, that by putting certain rumors, *pure hearsay*, in the hands of a certain person that I did injure you and did you injustice. I sincerely apologize for this and assure you that I know of nothing more than the wildest rumors concerning you. These unfortunate rumors you, of course, have yourself come across. My opposition to your appointment was based purely on principle. Now that you are a member of the Board I shall do all I can to make your work successful.

Trusting that you will accept my sincere apology for any injury that may have arisen from anything I have said, I am,

Truly yours,

JOHN B. HAWES, 2d.

The situation about this time (that is the autumn of 1913) was as follows: My attorney, the Hon. Sherman L. Whipple, had written to several of the medical coterie who had been so venomous in their attacks upon me, and these men had taken various stands. Some who were reported to have said malicious things against me, and some whom I knew to have done so, denied having made such statements; others asserted that they had only spread propaganda against me because it was furnished them, and that they had never believed the stories which they had used in at-

DR. JOHN B. HAWES, 2ND
29 8 GLOUCESTER STREET
BOSTON

Dear Dr. Briggs:

Yesterday I had a long talk with Dr. Bowditch and discussed with him late affairs concerning you. While I was frankly opposed to your appointment, it was furthest from my thoughts to maliciously injure you or your reputation personally. I cannot but feel now, as I look back at things, that by putting certain rumors, pure hearsay, in the hands of a certain person that I did injure you & did you injustice. I sincerely apologize for this and assure you that I know of nothing more than the wildest rumors concerning you. These unfortunate rumors you of course have

yourself, come across. My opposition to your appointment was based solely on your youth; now that you are a member of the board, I shall do all I can to make your work successful.

I trust that you will accept my sincere apology for my injury that may have arisen from anything I have said; I am

Very yours,

John B. Harrison

Nov. 11 1913

tempting to prevent my confirmation; while still others admitted their participation in the conspiracy and humbly apologized, either verbally or in writing. Quite a number of my friends among the medical profession, while realizing the outrageousness of the several attacks made upon me by these physicians, thought that I had been fully exonerated by my appointment and by the receipt of these admissions and apologies. These friends therefore urged me to drop further action; and while it was contrary to my judgment to do so, believing as I did that if I dropped the matter here the cabal would again become active in their persecutions, I listened to those who so urged me and bowed to their judgment.

My advisers were men in the profession who could not conceive that their fellows, after what had passed, could again become active in attacking me. Whether their judgment or mine was wisest will be shown by events in my subsequent history which I intend to record. The first justification of my own point of view was in the change in my father-in-law's will, which was made about this time, and which I know was due to the influence, direct or indirect, of these enemies, several of whom were in close relation to him.

My wife felt much as I did — that we should place these men in such a position that they could do me no further harm, before dropping legal action. Before she would consent to let the matter drop, she desired an investigation and report by a disinterested person, whose authority should be so great that his decision would be unquestioned by either side or by the public at large. It was therefore decided to call upon the Hon. John Chipman Gray, Dean of the Harvard Law

School, who stood at the very head of the legal profession in Massachusetts. He consented to act in the matter, and after a most careful and thorough investigation into all the stories, reports and actions of the medical cabal and their friends, he wrote the following letter, with the understanding that it was to be made public:

60 State Street, Boston,
November 22, 1913.

Dear Mrs. Briggs: — I have known your family all my life and am a trustee for you under your grandfather's will, and when you spoke to me about Dr. Briggs' going to law against those persons who had conspired to prevent his appointment, I felt bound to tell you that Dr. Briggs, by his dignified stand in the matter of the appointment had done the most effective thing; that the publicity and notoriety attendant upon a suit for libel or conspiracy raises a cloud of detail and an opportunity for abuse and innuendo by an unscrupulous press, and gossip which a favorable verdict does not put an end to and which would be intensely painful to you and your family. You felt that as a loyal wife to Dr. Briggs you did not wish to ask him to abstain from taking legal steps unless some other vindication from the charges against his character could be suggested. You suggested that some disinterested person might look into these charges and see if they had any foundation, and you suggested that I might be such a person. I certainly did not desire such a position, but I felt I could not refuse you. I could not undertake to pass upon Dr. Briggs' professional qualifications, for which I was, of course, incompetent, nor upon the motives and conduct of his opponents, which would be an endless task; but you said you distinctly did not expect or indeed wish me to do so — that you wanted me to confine myself to the truth of the charges affecting his moral character.

These charges, so far as I have been able to ascertain them, were (1) that he kept a bucket shop; (2) that he had been interested in a gambling house; (3) that he had had immoral relations with women.

I have looked into these charges and have reached the conclusion and am of the opinion that these charges are without foundation and that they are false.

Yours sincerely,

John C. Gray.

60 State St.
Nov. 22, 1913.

Dear Mrs. Briggs,

I have known your family all my life, and am a trustee for you under your grand-father's will, and when you spoke to me about Dr. Briggs's going to law against those persons who had conspired to prevent his appointment, I felt bound to tell you that Dr Briggs by his dignified stand in the matter of the disgraceful behavior, the most effective thing, that the publicity and notoriety attendant on a suit for libel or conspiracy causes a cloud of detail and an opportunity for abuse and innuendo by an unscrupulous press and gossip which a favorable verdict does not put an end to, and which would be intensely painful to you and your family.

You felt that as a loyal wife to Dr. Briggs you did not wish to ask him to abstain from taking legal steps unless some other vindication from the charges against his character could be suggested. You suggested that some disinterested person might look into these charges, and see if they had any foundation; and you suggested that I might be such a person. I certainly did not desire such a position, but I felt I could not refuse you. I could not undertake to pass upon Dr. Briggs's professional qualifications for which I was of course incompetent, nor upon the motives and conduct of his opponents which would be an endless task, but you said you distinctly did not expect or indeed wish me to do so; that you wanted me to confine myself to the truth of the charges affecting his moral character.

These charges, so far as I have been able to ascertain them were (1) That he had kept a bucket-shop; (2) That he had been in Lexington in a gambling house; (3) That he had had immoral relations with women.

I have looked into these charges and have reached the conclusion and am of the opinion that these charges are without foundation, and that they are false.

Yours sincerely,

John C. Gray

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

Martin M. Lomasney a Friend of the Mentally Ill. — A Hancock Incident. — Massachusetts' Insane. — Report of a Visit to a Private Sanitarium. — Voluntary (?) Patients. — An Example of Restraint used in One Case. — A Physician on a Board of Trustees.

This is the first of my books in which I have thought it necessary to insert an appendix, but there were certain statistics and subject matter which could not very well be placed in the text of this volume without interrupting its continuity, but which ought not to be left out.

First, I want to pay tribute to Martin M. Lomasney, a friend of the insane and of every poor or unfortunate man, woman or child, — a man who never turns a deaf ear to the downtrodden, and who is never too busy to not only listen to an appeal, but to take time to right a wrong.

Few men in the political world have been able to retain such a strong hold on the constituents of a district for such a long period as has Martin M. Lomasney. Through the powerful influence of the Hendricks club, perhaps one of the strongest political organizations of its kind in the country, this veteran political leader has held sway over the voters in a manner which is amazing, even to the most experienced office holders.

The efforts of those who sought to break his power by rearranging old Ward 8 during the redistricting of the representative districts in Suffolk County failed to produce the desired effect. In fact, it produced the opposite effect, as was shown later by the election, when his ticket, headed by himself, won an easy victory.

I take the following entry from my diary under date of March 18, 1910:

This evening I met Martin Lomasney and found him to be a most interesting character, — a man who neither smokes nor drinks, and only says what he can back up. He promised to help me on my bills, 313 and 142. Approaching him, as had been suggested that I should, I found him seated in a room which was almost bare, with a few chairs, desk, and a safe, at a place called the Hendricks Club, on Green Street. He was in his shirtsleeves, his suspenders over his shoulders, and a straw hat on, although it was in March. Listening to what I had to say, he rolled up the sleeve of his right arm, stood up, and held out his hand and said, "Dr. Briggs, I am with you. You can count on me. I know what it is to see what these people have to suffer. I know what it is to see them, because once I went to a South Boston institution as a member of a committee. After seeing such sights as one sees in such places, I looked at the ceiling and kept my eyes there during the rest of our trip through the building. I have never wanted to go into an insane hospital since. My heart has always gone out to them, and if there is any way I can help, I want to. Only don't ask me to visit such places." He showed me a letter in his safe, which he kept most sacredly, that some one had written him years before on a humanitarian matter which enlisted his sympathy and to which he gave his support.

Still believing it was not possible that the medical cabal could employ the low-down methods reported in order to discredit me and wishing to learn who "Carter" was, and to see how far the members of this medical cabal would go, I asked Mr. Innes to get the information to the medical cabal that I was going to Hancock on a certain Friday by the afternoon train, arriving in the evening. Mr. Innes did this, but was innocent of my purpose. Late that afternoon I took my wife to the train, she being heavily veiled so no one could recognize her. Very soon a man answering "Carter's" description walked through the train, and at Hancock he left the train with us. By prearrangement, Mr. Manning, the driver of the station team, took us to our house and later told "Carter" he did not recognize the lady. "Carter" told Manning to let him know when I sent for him to take me back to the station.

We took the early train next day. Manning did not notify him and he was sleeping when we left.

The next Monday, forty-eight hours later, about 10 P.M., Governor Foss called at my house greatly perturbed. Sitting down in our drawing room he said, "I have heard of your trip to Hancock with a strange woman. Your medical opponents have told me. How could you do such a thing when I have told every one I knew the stories about you were not true." I then presented the "strange lady," Mrs. Briggs, my wife, and we told him of our escapade. He laughed heartily, and said he would later tell them that the only time they even thought they had "anything on me" I had made fools of them. One of my political opponents, hearing of my trip, was so petulant, thinking they had at last found me doing something wrong, that he could not refrain from stopping at my corner and confiding in the policeman on my route, saying that if I was again nominated they would have me arrested.

The act of Mrs. Briggs and myself proved many things, among others a boomerang to my traducers, as Governor Foss, Mr. Innes and others were only too anxious to inform them of the truth.

On April 1, 1912, there were 12,509 insane patients in Massachusetts insane institutions, of whom 4,999 were foreign born.

This is inclusive of a certain number who were naturalized.

The average length of residence was 4.29 years.

On the basis of the figures mentioned above, the 4,999 foreign born would cost the State for maintenance, $4,949,609.88.

In 1912, 8.4 per cent of all the immigrants who came

to this country announced their intention of residing in Massachusetts.

The percentage of all foreign immigration received at the Port of Boston is 4.6 per cent.

The amount paid by the United States government to the State of Massachusetts for the care and deportation of aliens during 1912 amounted to $3,395.52.

The amount of money expended by the State in 1912 for the care and deportation of aliens could be obtained only by an examination of the bills of the State for an entire year, and would take considerable time.

Institution.	Number of Insane Patients remaining April 1, 1912.	Number of Foreign-born Insane Patients April 1, 1912.	Average Hospital Residence of Foreign-born Patients who were discharged or died during a Five-year Period (in Months).
Worcester Hospital	1,396	597	31.71
Taunton Hospital	1,017	390	18.66
Northampton Hospital	897	310	29.56
Danvers Hospital	1,438	509	12.81
Westborough Hospital	1,151	355	13.16
Boston Hospital	950	353	14.78
Mental Wards, State Infirmary	735	404	49.63
Bridgewater Hospital	763	327	47.20
Worcester Asylum	1,193	517	138.50
Medfield Asylum	1,701	806	108.43
Gardner Colony	672	275	95.00
Monson Hospital	385	64	46.80
Foxborough Hospital	211	92	63.80
Total	12,509	4,999	51.54

4,999, or 39.96 per cent of the *insane* population of *State* institutions on April 1, 1912, were foreign born.

The total *foreign-born white population* of the State, as taken from the census of 1910, was 1,051,050.

There were 4,999 foreign born under care in State insane institutions April 1, 1912, being 1 to every 210.25 of the *foreign-born white population*, according to the census of 1910.

Following is the report and records of a visit of inspection I made at one of the private hospitals as a member of the Board of Insanity not long after my appointment.

JULY 24, 1913.

I to-day visited Bournewood Hospital, South Street, Brookline, the property of Henry R. Stedman, M.D., the superintendent.

Dr. Stedman was not present, but his assistant showed me about. I examined the commitment papers, restraint and visiting books, and gave every patient an opportunity to interview me.

The restraint book was not kept so as to be easily read and understood. There are no continuous baths given at this hospital and no provision for the same; but hot packs are frequently used, much more frequently than I have seen at any other hospital.

No restraint has been used according to the books for the last few months, but certain patients have been in restraint prior to this year, consisting of camisole, camisole and chair restraint, camisole and sheet restraint. A copy of the restraint book, as near as I could make it, is hereto attached.

I would call special attention to the case of Mrs. C. to whom restraint has been applied more frequently than I have ever seen on any records that I have examined in any other hospital anywhere; and still this patient is held as a voluntary patient. She had never been committed, and I do not see why those who apply restraint on a voluntary patient are not guilty of assault or more serious charges. I interviewed Mrs. C., who told me that she did not know that she was now considered a voluntary patient, that she was sure I was mistaken, and that she was being legally held there without any power of removal. She told me that when she arrived she was placed in charge of Dr. B. and a nurse, who threatened to detain her by force if she did not sign a paper stating that she desired to come to the hospital, which he presented to her to sign. She said she was kept in the office and the next room to the office until she signed it after being urged and urged by the nurse and threatened by Dr. B.; she said she was not told then and has never since been told that she had any rights or that she could give notice or that she was other than legally held there as a prisoner.

She said that later some other paper was drawn up by Dr. Stedman and Dr. B., or at least she so understood, and they came into the room and told her that it was something which she wanted to sign. She did desire to sign a power of attorney giving her husband enough money to live upon while she was in the hospital, but she has no idea what she signed, and states that she signed it propped up in bed and not knowing just what she was doing.

She stated that her husband was very anxious to take her away (corroborated by personal interview with the husband), but that the doctors had forbidden her going unless she had sufficient nurses, and made "other excuses to detain me here." She complained of nurses hitting her and abusing her at the

present time, although she said the conditions were better since Dr. T. had arrived.

All papers relating to (Mrs. C.), both legal and the records, have been removed from the hospital by Dr. Stedman, according to Dr. T. I could not therefore examine any papers connected with this case.

Another *voluntary* patient (E. W.) who has received a great many hot packs which she does not now object to, having become used to them, did not appreciate that she was there as a voluntary patient. She said she did not remember signing any paper. She does not like hot packs but they do quiet her sometimes, and they are only given her when she gets excited or walks around more than the nurses or doctors think she ought to. She feels under the nurses' rather than the doctors' care. Under Dr. Stedman's orders, according to the records, she was placed in restraint on February 27 at 8 P.M., which was removed on February 28 at 4 P.M., — a total of twenty hours. The space for the reason given, which should be filled out according to law, was blank.

(Mr. R.), another *voluntary* patient, was so demented that I could not get him to understand anything I said. He is deaf, so I wrote my questions, but his answers were unintelligible; and he was decidedly not a voluntary case.

(Mr. L.) *committed* to the sanitarium November 11, 1912, complained of being in seclusion, which in his case was an apartment of several rooms with doors and screens fastened. It was acknowledged that he was left alone there at times for an hour or more while the nurse was gone to dinner or toilet or for some other reason. He further complained that his own pictures and his furniture were brought and placed in his room against his wishes; that especially the pictures reminded him of his happy home and former days, and gave him extreme pain and depressed him greatly; that in spite of his remonstrances, even to the point of trying to physically prevent the hanging of the pictures, he was ruthlessly pushed aside and roughly handled by the nurses while the pictures were being hung. He had many complaints to make, some of which were undoubtedly delusions or grievances excited by his condition.

Another patient (L. A.) was admitted under the temporary-care act on July 3 and committed on July 9; but the temporary paper signed by Dr. Cadis Phipps states that he saw the patient on June 26 and the following day, but does not state when she was placed under temporary care, unless her admittance on July 3 by another paper would so indicate it. The temporary-care paper was not dated.

Still another patient (W. U.) is said to have been committed here in 1906, but no commitment papers were in the envelope of the case or to be found on the premises by the physician in charge. Later there was some record found which proved that he came to the hospital in 1898, but no legal papers connected with the case could be shown me.

A patient named (S.) who is confined here has no legal papers on record, and no papers of commitment could be found by the physician in charge.

Another (M. C.) is a patient who has had restraint applied to her. To show the unsatisfactory way the records are kept, I will quote: "1st and 2d, 11 P.M., 4 A.M. Reason given: Excitement, etc."

No commitment papers were on file regarding this case where the physician could find them so they could be examined by me.

(Mr. W. M.) was another patient on whom the camisole has been used "under orders of H. W. W., 5 A.M., 7.30 A.M., July 17, 1912," but no reason given as prescribed by law.

Another patient named D. has no commitment papers with the records, and no commitment papers or legal papers whatsoever could be found to be shown to me.

The visiting book shows the hospital has not been visited at all by the State Board since 1909; that it was only once visited by an agent in 1909; once in 1910; once in 1911; twice in 1912; and once in 1913.

No restraint book was kept up to September, 1911, but the Board apparently took no action whatever, and not until Dr. Fuller, its agent, called attention to the fact that no restraint book was being kept did Dr. Stedman begin keeping one.

Several patients were at dinner during my visit. I also inspected the kitchen and the cold closet, which was at that time of day only fairly clean; but as it was dinner time I presume it was not up to its usual standard. In my report to the Board I said:

"The third floor is occupied by nurses, and considering the number of these sleeping on this floor it would seem that some further provision should be made for escape in case of fire. It is a wooden building and fire might easily cut off the escape of the nurses. Considering the arrangement of the male and female sections of the dormitory, it would also seem wise to separate the male and female patients where possible by housing them in different buildings."

Many of the patients had complaints to make of treatment by nurses, the main complaint being that they were not sufficiently under the rule or control of the physician superintendent and his staff. Several complaints were made that the superintendent and the staff did not know the true conditions.

After an examination of this hospital, I would recommend that the Board take some action which would require all hospitals to use one form of voluntary commitments. All sorts of papers are drawn up and signed at the different hospitals without any system or uniformity; and I believe we should have one form for all hospitals for patients who desire to voluntarily enter a hospital, which embodies their status and what is required of them and of the hospital.

I would further recommend that all packs be reported and all continuous baths be reported, with reasons given; and that no reasons of a general character should be allowed, but detailed reasons given in each and every instance.

I further recommend that the State Board of Insanity shall visit private hospitals as a Board, and that the reports of the agents visiting these hospitals shall be read at open meetings of the Board, so that we may be kept informed of the state of affairs in the private as well as the public hospitals.

In the above connection, I refer to a report which I should not have seen had I not asked for it, made by Dr. Fuller under date of April 22, 1913, *which says of Mrs. C. (referring to the patient whose long record I quote below).*

"The above patient, a depressed and deluded woman, is on a *voluntary* basis. She is constantly making verbal demands to go away; and in view of the restraint which is required, as she is desperately suicidal, it seems to me that perhaps the spirit of the law was being avoided, although its letter was being obeyed."

Such recommendations as these I feel should be presented to us, and we follow them up and see that something is done. This report, although made in April, has not changed conditions at Dr. Stedman's, the status of the patient (Mrs. C.) remaining the same; and she is firmly under the impression that she is legally held there and is not a voluntary patient.

The record in the case of Mrs. C. is as follows:

COPY OF RECORD OF RESTRAINT USED IN THE CASE OF MRS. C, A VOLUNTARY PATIENT AT THIS HOSPITAL TAKEN FROM THE HOSPITAL BOOK FOR RESTRAINT AS PROVIDED BY LAW.

1911

Oct. 23. Tied to chair with one sheet. Time applied, 1.20, time removed, 4.50. Ordered by H. R. S. Reasons: Violence and extreme restlessness.

Oct. 24. Tied to chair with one sheet. Time applied, 3; time removed, 3.45. Ordered by H. R. S. Reasons: Violence and extreme restlessness.

Oct. 25. Tied to chair with one sheet. Time applied, 12; time removed, 1.45. Ordered by L. C. B. Reasons: Violence and extreme restlessness.

Oct. 26 Tied to chair with one sheet. Time applied, 12; time removed, 1.25. Ordered by L. C. B. Reasons: For feeding.

Oct. 28. Tied to chair with one sheet. Time applied, 7; time removed, 7.45. Applied again same day at 12.15 and removed at 1.15. Applied again this same day at 5.30 and removed at 6.39. Ordered each time by H. R. S. Reasons for each time same: Extreme maniacal excitement and threatened collapse, brain exhaustion.

Oct. 29. Camisole. Time applied, 11.45 A.M.; time removed, 12.30 A.M. Ordered by H. R. S. Reasons: Continued excitement.

Oct. 30. Tied in chair with one sheet. Time applied, 7.30; time removed, 8.30. Ordered by L. C. B. Reasons: Violent, restless and agitated. Camisole applied the same day at 11 A.M. Time removed, 8.15 P.M. Ordered by L. C. B. Reasons: Violent and restless and agitated.

Oct. 31. Camisole. Time applied 10 A.M.; time removed, 6.30 P.M. Ordered by L. C. B. Reasons: Violent, restless and agitated.

Nov. 1. Camisole. Time applied, 8.30; time removed, 4.30. Ordered by H. R. S.

Nov. 2. Camisole. Time applied, 8; time removed, 7 P.M. Ordered by H. R. S.

Nov. 3. Camisole. Time applied, 10.15; time removed, 5. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 4. Camisole. Time applied, 12; time removed, 11.15 P.M. Ordered by L. C. B.

1911

Nov. 5. Camisole. Time applied, 10.30; time removed, 11.30 P.M. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 6. Camisole. Time applied, 8.15; time removed, 12.45. Ordered by L. C. B.

From the 1st to the 6th, inclusive, the reasons for restraint were that the motor restlessness was extreme and the patient's physical condition was at low ebb, especially because of the patient's refusal to take nourishment and being very violent at the time.

Nov. 7. Camisole. Time applied, 10; time removed, 10.35. Ordered by H. R. S.

Nov. 8. Camisole. Time applied, 10; time removed, 10.30. Applied again same day at 3 and removed at 5.30. Ordered by H. R. S.

Nov. 9. Camisole. Time applied, 3; time removed, 6.45. Ordered by L. C. B.

From the 7th to the 16th, inclusive, restraint was applied during feedings, as she struggled much less against it than if held on bed by nurses.

Nov. 15. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 9.40; time removed, 3.20. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 17. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 9.50; time removed, 3.10. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 18. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 2.05; time removed, 3.25. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 19. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 2; time removed, 3.15. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 20. Fastened to chair by sheet. Time applied, 4.10; time removed, 6.40. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 21. Fastened to chair by sheet. Time applied, 3.10; time removed, 5.25. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 22. Fastened to chair by sheet. Time applied, 11; time removed, 12.10. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 23. Fastened to chair by sheet. Time applied, 10; time removed, 12.15. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 24. Camisole. Time applied, 10; time removed, 10.30. Applied again same day at 3 and removed at 3.30. Ordered by H. R. S.

Nov. 26. Fastened to chair by sheet. Time applied, 2.15; time removed, 6. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 27. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 2.15; time removed, 6. Ordered by L. C. B.

Nov. 29. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 11.10; time removed, 12.20. Ordered by L. C. B.

1911

Nov. 30. Fastened in chair by sheet. Time applied, 11.10; time removed, 12.20. Ordered by L. C. B.

From the 16th to the end of the month the period of restraint in the chair indicated those hours when it was necessary that the patient should secure much-needed rest. Motor restlessness marked, and at times patient attacked her nurse. Resists violently and attacks nurses (two) to point of exhaustion. Calms down and goes to sleep when camisole applied.

Dec. 1. Restrained in chair by sheet. Time applied, 2; time removed, 4.40. Ordered by L. C. B.

Dec. 3. Restrained in chair by sheet. Time applied, 11.10; time removed, 3,15. Applied again same day at 4.40 and removed at 6.25. Ordered by L. C. B.

Dec. 4. Restrained to chair by sheet. Time applied, 10; time removed, 3. Ordered by L. C. B.

Dec. 10. Camisole. Time applied, 4.50; time removed, 5.20. Ordered by L. C. B.

Dec. 13. Camisole. Time applied, 4; time removed, 7.10. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 18. Camisole. Time applied, 2; time removed, 12. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 19. Camisole. Time applied, 12; time removed, 9.10. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 20. Camisole. Time applied, 1.30; time removed, 5.45. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 21. Camisole. Time applied, 12.15; time removed, 5.30. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 22. Restrained to bed by sheet. Time applied, 3.45; time removed, 12. Applied again the same day at 4 and removed at 7.30. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 23. Camisole. Time applied, 12; time removed, 7.15. Applied again the same day at 2.45 and removed at 4.45. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 24. Restrained to chair by sheet. Time applied, 2.45; time removed, 4.40. Ordered by H. R. S.

Dec. 26. Camisole. Time applied, 2.45; time removed, 3.45. Ordered by H. R. S.

The reason for restraint in December as per above as shown on restraint book was "To prevent exhaustion and injury from extreme excitement and violence."

1912

Jan. 2. Camisole. Time applied, 5; time removed, 6.20. Ordered by H. R. S.

1912

Jan. 3. Camisole. Time applied, 7; time removed, 11.30. Ordered by H. R. S.

Jan. 4. Camisole. Time applied, 7.55; time removed, 7. Ordered by H. R. S.

Jan. 7. Camisole. Time applied, no mention; time removed, no mention. Ordered by H. R. S.

Jan. 8. Camisole. Time applied, no mention; time removed, no mention. Ordered by H. R. S.

Jan. 10. Camisole Time applied, 12; time removed, 6. Ordered by H. R. S.

Jan. 11. Camisole. Time applied, 6.30; time removed, 6. Ordered by H. R.S.

Jan. 13. Restrained to chair. Time applied or removed, not mentioned. Ordered by H. R. S. Reason for restraint: "Extreme excitement and violent."

Feb.1, 2, 3, 4. Restrained to chair by sheet. Ordered by H. R. S.

Feb. 5, 6, 10. Camisole. Ordered by H. W. W. No reason for restraint applied during the above seven days. No record of any restraint on Mrs. C. after February 10, 1912.

On May 28, 1913, Dr. Wood, a former associate of Dr. Stedman's at his private sanitarium in Brookline, called on me and told me much about Dr. Stedman's hospital, — the number of patients paying $75 or more a week who had to share one bathtub, and other conditions which I hesitate to go into at this time. He told me that he could not stand the conditions and the way in which the patients were treated, but that Dr. Stedman told him that if he left he would never be able to succeed, — that no one who had left him up to that time had succeeded, — and advised him to stay. He said that Stedman cited as a fact that "Briggs" had just been turned down by the Board of Insanity because he had opposed Stedman in some way." In spite of what Dr. Stedman said, Dr. Wood left and he said that although he knew what they were doing to me, it was nothing to what they were doing to him.

Dr. Herbert B. Howard, some years after the Governor failed to reappoint him on the State Board of In-

sanity, became a Trustee of the Gardner State Hospital, in spite of the fact that, on December 12, 1913, the "Boston American" quotes him as saying:

> Every hospital ought to be under the management of a Board of Trustees. No physician should serve on a hospital trustee board. I will tell you why. When the hospital trustees include a doctor the opinions and decisions of the Board are too apt to be colored with this physician's ideas, whereas the trustee who conducts the most serviceable management should obtain his information from the working staff of the institution.